

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## Society for Psychical Research

VOLUME XXIII  
(CONTAINING PARTS LVIII-LIX)  
1909

*The responsibility for both the facts and the reasonings in papers  
published in the Proceedings rests entirely with their authors*

PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY BY  
ROBERT MACLEHOSE & COMPANY LIMITED  
UNIVERSITY PRESS, GLASGOW  
1909

*Agents for the sale of publications:*

LONDON: FRANCIS EDWARDS, 83 HIGH STREET, MARYLEBONE, W.  
GLASGOW: JAMES MACLEHOSE & SONS, 61 ST. VINCENT STREET  
AMERICA: THE W. B. CLARKE CO., 26-28 TREMONT STREET, BOSTON, MASS.

*All rights reserved*



## CONTENTS.

### PART LVIII.

JUNE, 1909.

	PAGE
General Meeting, - - - - -	1
I. Report on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control. By PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES.	
Part I., - - - - -	2
Part II., - - - - -	30
II. Note on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control in England in 1906-7. By MRS. H. SIDGWICK and J. G. PIDDINGTON, - - -	122
III. Report on some Trance Communications received chiefly through Mrs. Piper. By SIR OLIVER LODGE.	
Table of Contents, - - - - -	127
Introduction, - - - - -	128
Chapter I. Explanatory and Historical, - - - - -	130
" II. The Gurney Control, - - - - -	140
" III. The Isaac Thompson Case, - - - - -	162
" IV. The Myers Control, - - - - -	198
" V. Messages obtained through Miss Rawson, - - -	219
" VI. Messages from the Myers and Hodgson Controls of Mrs. Piper, Autumn, 1906, - - -	226
" VII. The Myers and Hodgson Controls of Mrs. Piper, Spring, 1907, - - - - -	248
" VIII. The Joseph Marble Series, - - - - -	255
" IX. Supplementary Remarks, - - - - -	280
IV. Psychological Research and Survival after Bodily Death. By PROFESSOR A. C. PIGOU, - - - - -	286

### PART LIX.

NOVEMBER, 1909.

General Meeting, - - - - -	305
Introductory Note to the "Report on Sittings with Eusapia Palladino," - - - - -	306

106330

	PAGE
Report on a Series of Sittings with Eusapia Palladino. By the Hon. EVERARD FEILDING, W. W. BAGGALLY, and HEReward CARRINGTON.	
Table of Contents, - - - - -	309
I. Introduction.	
Preliminary, - - - - -	310
Historical, - - - - -	311
Object of the Present Investigation, - - - - -	318
The Investigating Committee - - - - -	319
II. General Account of the Sittings.	
The Séance Room, - - - - -	321
Conduct of the Séances, - - - - -	323
The Control, - - - - -	325
The Phenomena, - - - - -	328
Conclusions, - - - - -	340
III. Detailed Report.	
Measurements, - - - - -	345
Séance I., - - - - -	346
" II., - - - - -	358
" III., - - - - -	375
" IV., - - - - -	399
" V., - - - - -	418
" VI., - - - - -	440
" VII., - - - - -	463
" VIII., - - - - -	484
" IX., - - - - -	505
The Bell Incident, - - - - -	525
Séance X., - - - - -	527
" XI., - - - - -	536
IV. Individual Conclusions of the Investigators.	
Final Note by Hereward Carrington, - - - - -	555
" W. W. Baggally, - - - - -	556
" the Hon. Everard Feilding, - - - - -	566
SUPPLEMENT.	
M. Courtier's Report on the Experiments with Eusapia Palladino at the Paris <i>Institut Général Psychologique</i> . By Count PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO, - - - - -	570
Index to Vol. XXIII., - - - - -	590

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Society for Psychical Research.

PART LVIII.

JUNE, 1909.

---

## PROCEEDINGS OF GENERAL MEETING.

THE 133rd General Meeting of the Society was held in the Hall at 20 Hanover Square, London, W., on Thursday, January 28th, 1909, at 5 p.m.; the PRESIDENT, MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, in the chair.

PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES'S "Preliminary Report on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control," forming Part I. of the paper printed below, was read by Mr. J. G. Piddington.

## I.

## REPORT ON MRS. PIPER'S HODGSON-CONTROL.

PART I.<sup>1</sup>

BY PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES.

RICHARD HODGSON died suddenly upon December 20th, 1905. On December 28th a message purporting to come from him was delivered in a trance of Mrs. Piper's, and she has hardly held a sitting since then without some manifestation of what professed to be Hodgson's spirit taking place. Hodgson had often during his lifetime laughingly said that if he ever passed over and Mrs. Piper was still officiating here below, he would control her better than she had ever yet been controlled in her trances, because he was so thoroughly familiar with the difficulties and conditions on this side. Indeed he was; so that this would seem *prima facie* a particularly happy conjunction of spirit with medium by which to test the question of spirit return.

I have collated 69 of the American sittings (the latest being that of January 1st, 1908) in which the professed R. H. has appeared (his communications forming possibly a sixth of the total bulk of the records), and a few remarks as to my own relation to the phenomenon would seem a good introduction to what follows. I have no space for twice-told tales, so I will assume that my readers are acquainted, to some degree at any rate, with previously printed accounts of Mrs. Piper's

<sup>1</sup>This report was prepared to be read at the General Meeting of the Society, on January 28th, 1909. To make a single document by distributing its material through the larger report would cost much labor, so the two parts are printed separately, but readers will understand that they should be read in conjunction.

mediumship.<sup>1</sup> I had myself had no sitting with Mrs. Piper and had hardly seen her for some nine years, but for most of that time I had been kept informed of what was going on by reading the typed records, furnished me by my friend Hodgson, of all the trances of which report was taken, and for which the sitters had not asked secrecy to be observed. The "Control" most frequently in evidence in these years has been the personage calling himself "Rector." Dr. Hodgson was disposed to admit the claim to reality of Rector and of the whole Emperor-Band of which he is a member, while I have rather favoured the idea of their all being dream-creations of Mrs. Piper, probably having no existence except when she is in trance, but consolidated by repetition into personalities consistent enough to play their several rôles. Such at least is the dramatic impression which my acquaintance with the sittings has left on my mind. I can see no contradiction between Rector's being on the one hand an improvised creature of this sort, and his being on the other hand the extraordinarily impressive personality which he unquestionably is. He has marvellous discernment of the inner states of the sitters whom he addresses, and speaks straight to their troubles as if he knew them all in advance. He addresses you as if he were the most devoted of your friends. He appears like an aged and, when he speaks instead of writing, like a somewhat hollow-voiced clergyman, a little weary of his experience of the world, endlessly patient and sympathetic, and desiring to put all his tenderness and wisdom at your service while you are there. Critical and fastidious sitters have recognized his wisdom, and confess their debt to him as a moral adviser. With all due respect to Mrs. Piper, I feel very sure that her own waking capacity for being a spiritual adviser, if it were compared with Rector's, would fall greatly behind.

As I conceive the matter, it is on this mass of secondary and automatic personality of which of late years Rector has been the centre, and which forms the steady background of

<sup>1</sup>Chief among these are Hodgson's reports in Vols. VIII. and XIII. of the S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Mrs. Sidgwick's discussion in Vol. XV., Hyslop's long account in Vol. XVI., and his briefer one in his book *Science and a Future Life*.

Mrs. Piper's trances, that the supernormal knowledge which she unquestionably displays is flashed. Flashed, grafted, inserted—use what word you will—the trance-automatism is at any rate the intermediating condition, the supernormal knowledge comes as if from beyond, and the automatism uses its own forms in delivering it to the sitter. The most habitual form is to say that it comes from the spirit of a departed friend. The earliest messages from “Hodgson” have been communicated by “Rector,” but he soon spoke in his own name, and the only question which I shall consider in this paper is this: *Are there any unmistakable indications in the messages in question that something that we may call the “spirit” of Hodgson was probably really there?* We need not refine yet upon what the word “spirit” means and on what spirits are and can do. We can leave the meaning of the word provisionally very indeterminate,—the vague popular notion of what a spirit is is enough to begin with.

Sources other than R. H.'s surviving spirit for the veridical communications from the Hodgson-control may be enumerated as follows:

- (1) Lucky chance-hits.
- (2) Common gossip.
- (3) Indications unwarily furnished by the sitters.
- (4) Information received from R. H., during his lifetime, by the waking Mrs. P. and stored up, either supraliminally or subliminally, in her memory.
- (5) Information received from the living R. H., or others, at sittings, and kept in Mrs. Piper's trance-memory, but out of reach of her waking consciousness.
- (6) “Telepathy,” *i.e.* the tapping of the sitter's mind, or that of some distant living person, in an inexplicable way.
- (7) Access to some cosmic reservoir, where the memory of all mundane facts is stored and grouped around personal centres of association.

Let us call the first five of these explanations “natural,” and the last two “supernatural” or “mystical.” It is obvious that no mystical explanation ought to be invoked so long as any natural one remains at all plausible. Only after the first five explanations have been made to appear improbable, is it time

for the telepathy-theory and the cosmic-reservoir theory to be compared with the theory of R. H.'s surviving spirit.

The total amount of truthful information communicated by the R. H. control to the various sitters is copious. He reminds them, for the most part, of events—usually unimportant ones—which they and the living R. H. had experienced together. Taking any one of these events singly, it is never possible in principle to exclude explanations number 1 and 4. About number 3, a complete record of the sitting ought generally to decide. Number 2 is often excluded either by the trivial or by the intimate nature of the case. Number 5 would be easily settled if the records of the sittings of the living Hodgson with Mrs. Piper were complete and accessible. They are supposed, for the past ten or twelve years at least, to exist in complete form. But parts of them are in Hodgson's private cipher, and they are now so voluminous that it would be rash to say of any recent message from Hodgson, so long as the matter of it might conceivably have been talked of at any previous trance of Mrs. Piper's, that no record of such talk exists. It might exist without having yet been found.

Add, to these several chances that any communication of fact by the Hodgson-control may have had a natural source, the further consideration that Mrs. Piper had known H. well for many years, and one sees that her subliminal powers of personation would have had an unusually large amount of material to draw upon in case they wished to get up a make-believe spirit of Hodgson. So far, then, from his particular case being an unusually good one by which to test the claim that Mrs. Piper is possessed during her trances by the spirits of our departed friends, it would seem to be a particularly poor one for that purpose. I have come to the conclusion that it is an exceptionally poor one. Hodgson's familiarity when in the flesh with the difficulties at this end of the line has not made him show any more expertness as a spirit than other communicators have shown; and for his successes there are far more naturalistic explanations available than is the case with the other spirits who have professed to control Mrs. Piper.

So much for generalities, and so much for my own personal equation, for which my various hearers will make their sundry kinds of allowance. But before taking up the messages in

detail, a word more about the fourth of the naturalistic explanations which I have instanced (conversations, that is, between Mrs. Piper and Hodgson when alive) is in order. Abstractly, it seems very plausible to suppose that R. H. (who systematically imposed on himself the law of never mentioning the content of any trance in her waking presence) might have methodically adopted a plan of entertaining her on his visits by reciting all the little happenings of his days, and that it is this chronicle of small beer, stored in her memory, that now comes out for service in simulating his spirit-identity.

In the concrete, however, this is not a highly probable hypothesis. Every one who knew Hodgson agrees that he was little given to anecdotal small change, unless the incident were comic or otherwise of an impressive order, and that his *souvenirs* of fact were usually of a broad and synthetic type. He had had a "splendid time" at such a place, with a "glorious" landscape, swim, or hill-climb, but no further detail. Gifted with great powers of reserve by nature, he was professionally schooled to secretiveness; and a decidedly incommunicative habit in the way of personal gossip had become a second nature with him,—especially towards Mrs. Piper. For many years past he had seen her three times weekly (except during the months of her summer vacation) and had had to transcribe the record afterwards. The work was time-consuming, and he found it excessively fatiguing. He had economized energy upon it by adopting for many years past a purely business tone with the medium, entering, starting the trance, and leaving when it was over, with as few unnecessary words as possible. Great *brusquerie* was among the excellent R. H.'s potentialities, and for a while the amount of it displayed towards Mrs. P. led to a state of feeling on her part which a *New York Herald* reporter once took advantage of to exploit publicly. R. H. was remonstrated with, and was more considerate afterwards. It may well be that Mrs. Piper had heard one little incident or another, among those to be discussed in the following report, from his living lips, but that any large mass of these incidents are to be traced to this origin, I find incredible.

The spirit-Hodgson's first manifestation was, as I have said, eight days after his death. There was something dramatically

so like him in the utterances of those earliest days, gradually gathering "strength" as they did, that those who had cognizance of them were much impressed. I will begin by a short account of these earliest appearances, of which the first was at Miss Theodate Pope's sitting on Dec. 28th, 1905. At this sitting Rector had been writing, when the hand dropped the pencil and worked convulsively several seconds in a very excited manner.

Miss P. What is the matter?

[The hand, shaking with apparently great excitement, wrote the letter H, . . . bearing down so hard on the paper that the point of the pencil was broken. It then wrote "Hodgson."]

Miss P. God bless you!

[The hand writes "I am"—followed by rapid scrawls, as if regulator of machine were out of order.]

Miss P. Is this my friend?

[Hand assents by knocking five times on paper-pad.]

(RECTOR.) Peace, friends, he is here, it was he, but he could not remain, he was so choked. He is doing all in his power to return . . . Better wait for a few moments until he breathes freer again.

Miss P. I will.

(R.) Presently he will be able to conduct all here.

Miss P. That is good news.

(R.) Listen. Everything is for the best. He holds in his hand a ring. . . . He is showing it to you. Cannot you see it, friend?

Miss P. I cannot see it. Have him tell me about it.

(R.) Do you understand what it means?

Miss P. I know he had a very attractive ring.

(R.) Margaret.

"All" was then written, with a "B" after it, and Miss P. asked "what is that?" "A," "B" and "L" followed, but no explanation. [The explanation will be given later.]

The above is the whole of the direct matter from Hodgson at this, the first of the sittings at which he has appeared.

(For the sequel to this ring-episode, see pp. 13-18.)

At Miss Pope's next sitting (five days later), after some talk about him from Rector, R. H. appeared for the second time, and in the character, familiar to him, of being a well-spring of poetical lore. Mrs. Piper's hand cramped most awkwardly, first dropped and then broke the pencil. A new one being given, the hand wrote as follows:

RICHARD HODGSON I AM WELL HAPPY GLAD I CAME GOD BLESS POPE

MISS POPE. Many thanks. [Then the hand wrote:—]

It lies not in her form or face  
 Tho these are passing fair,  
 Nor in the woman's tone of grace,  
 Nor in her falling hair ;  
 It lies not in those wondrous eyes  
 that swiftly light and shine,  
 Tho all the stars of all the skies  
 Than these are less divine.

I am only practicing.

MISS P. Who wrote it?

(RECTOR.) Richard only.

MISS P. When?

Now.

MISS P. Doesn't it exist on paper in our world?

No.

MISS P. Did you really make that up?

Yes.

MISS P. Well, you are clever.

If you ever find this in your world, never believe in this world!

MISS P. I shall look for it, you may be sure.

Good! Think I'm asleep? Not much! My head. I must leave you now.

(RECTOR.) It is impossible for us to hold him—that is all.

MISS P. Rector, did he dictate that poem to you? . . . Do you think he made it up?

(RECTOR.) I do positively know he did . . . Farewell!

At the second sitting after this (Jan. 8th, 1906), Miss Pope again being the sitter, R. H. appeared again, writing as follows:

I am Hodgson . . . I heard your call—I know you—you are Miss Pope. Piper instrument. I am happy exceedingly difficult to come very. I understand why Myers came seldom. I must leave. I cannot stay. I cannot remain to-day. . . .

(A tobacco-pouch that had belonged to Hodgson was presently given to the Medium as an "influence," when the writing went on:—)

I am in the witness-box, do you remember?—Do you remember my promise to shake you up?

MISS P. I once asked Geo. P[elham] to "shake me up."

No, I do not mean that.

MISS P. What do you mean?

I said that if I got over here first I would soon learn how to communicate.—I would not make a botch of it.

MISS P. I remember—indeed you did.

I am certainly R. H. I am sure. I have joined dear old G. Pelham, who did so much for me—more than all the rest put together.

[After a few words in Rector's name, a brush that had belonged to Hodgson was put into the medium's hand.]

Remember my theory about objects?

MISS P. What was it?

They carried their own light. I was right.

MISS P. Yes, I remember very well.

I see it now, I was right.

Did you receive my lines to Miss D. [Referring apparently to the verses at the previous sitting.]

MISS P. Good, that is most interesting.

Amen! Miss D—— [This name, correctly given, is that of the cousin of R. H., mentioned as “Q” in previous reports, a name well known to the trance-consciousness. —W. J.]

MISS P. Miss D——?

Yes. Ah, ah, ah, (which written words indicate laughter).

MISS P. What does that mean?—(referring to the “ah, ah”).

I am amused at you. Yet? found them?

MISS P. No, I haven't.

It will take the remainder of your earthly life, and then you'll fail.

MISS P. You are just the same as ever.

Not quite as full of energy as I wish, but give me time.

[Rector then comes in, and the sitting closes.]

On Jan. 16th and Jan. 17th, R. H. spoke again to Miss Pope, but without anything evidential in matter—or in manner either, unless the following be counted as dramatically like:—

I shall never assume control here. Emperor shall lead me. In his care I am safe. I was met by him. There will be no moaning at the bar when I pass out to sea—remember it?

[Miss Pope assents.]

On Feb. 5th, R. H. asks again:—

Got any news of my poem?

MISS P. No, I give that up.

I thought you would come to it. I made that up in a moment and composed to Miss D——.

[After some more non-evidential talk, R. H. mentions his living friend, Miss Bancroft, and says:—]

Give my love to her and tell her I hope to speak with her soon.

It seems as if the wondrous land  
 Within her vision lay:  
 I dimly sense the mystic strand  
 Behind the glorious gray.

To Margaret Bancroft. Give her this. She has light.  
 [Correct.—W. J.]

Miss P. Yes. Is this your own?

I just made it for her. . . . Tell her I shall never forget those hills, the water, our talks, and the delightful visit I had with her. [Correct.—W. J.]

Miss P. I think she is coming soon to speak with you here.

Good. I hope so. Will you tell her, give her my message, ask her if she knows anything about my watch being stopped. Do you? I must go out and get a little breath.

[Miss B. writes:—"I think the watch means *my* watch. We had a number of jokes about the frequent stopping of my watch."]

On Jan. 23rd, 1906, Mrs. Wm. James, and W. James, Jr., had a sitting at which R. H. used the medium's voice and gave a very life-like impression of his presence. The record runs as follows:<sup>1</sup>

Why, there's Billy! Is that Mrs. James and Billy? God bless you! Well, well, well, this is good! [Laughs.] I am in the witness-box. [Laughs.] I have found my way, I am here, have patience with me. All is well with me. Don't miss me. Where's William? Give him my love and tell him I shall certainly live to prove all I know. Do you hear me? see me? I am not strong, but have patience with me. I will tell you all. I think I can reach *you*.

<sup>1</sup>In this and in some of my future citations from the records, I have condensed the material by leaving out repetitions and digressions, so that what appears is often straighter and more coherent than what was originally given. I have, however, scrupulously endeavoured to omit nothing that could possibly have determined what was said or its veridicality.—W.J.

Something on my mind. I want Lodge to know everything I have seen Myers. I must rest.

[After an interval he comes in again:—]

Billy, where is Billy? What are you writing, Billy? Are you having any sports? Would you like to take a swim? [R. H.'s chief association with W. J., Jr., had been when fishing or swimming in Chocorua Lake.] Well, come on! Get a good deal of exercise, but don't overdo it! Perhaps I swam too much. [He undoubtedly had done so.]—I learned my lesson, but I'm just where I wanted to be.

Do you remember [Q]? [Q] helped me. Then I saw Mother, Rebecca, and Father. I want very much to converse with Annie. [His sister.] She perfectly understood my efforts and was everything to me. I want her to know that I am living, and I am going on to show what I know to the end of all time. Is Ellen well?—that's my sister. I want G. D. [his brother-in-law] to have my watch. [The Hodgson-family names used here are correct, but were known to the trance-consciousness.—W. J.]

Do you play ball?—tennis? Men will theorize—let them do so! I have found out the truth. I said that if I could get over there I would not make a botch of it. If ever R. H. lived in the body, he is talking now. . . . William [James] is too dogmatic. . . . I want George [Dorr] to extricate all those papers and set those marked "private" aside. This has been on my mind. George is to be trusted absolutely with all sincerity and faith. There are some private records which I should not wish to have handled. Let George [Dorr] and Piddington go through them and return them to the sitters. The cipher! I made that cipher, and no one living can read it. [Correct.] I shall explain it later. Let Harry [James] and George keep them till then. [They had been appointed administrators of his estate, a fact probably known to Mrs. Piper.] This is the best I have been able to do yet. I spoke with Miss Pope, but this is the best. Remember, every communication *must* have the human element. I understand better now why I had so little from Myers. [To W. J., Jr.] What discourages

you about your art? [W. J., Jr., was studying painting.]  
Oh what good times we had, fishing! Believe, Billy,  
wherever you go, whatever you do, there is a God.

So much for Hodgson's first appearances, which were characteristic enough in manner, however incomplete.

Within the space to which this preliminary report is limited one can hardly quote the records *verbatim*, for they are anything but concise. My best plan will be to cull a few of the best veridical communications, and discuss them simply, from the point of view of the alternatives of explanation.

I begin with what I shall call

#### THE RING INCIDENT.

On Hodgson's 50th birthday, a lady whom I will call Mrs. Lyman, an old friend of his, much interested in the Piper work, had given him a rather massive ring to wear. The source of this ring H. had kept to himself, and after his death Mrs. L. asked the administrator of his estate to return it to her. The ring could not be found.

At the sitting of Dec. 28th (R. H.'s first appearance as a spirit), it will be remembered that the control Rector had said to Miss Pope, the sitter, "He holds in his hand a ring—do you understand what it means?"

MISS P. I know he had a very attractive ring.

RECTOR (writing) Margaret. a ll B, L.

On Jan. 16th, Miss Pope being again the sitter, the R. H.-control suddenly wrote:

Give ring to Margaret back to Margaret. [Mrs. Lyman's name is not Margaret.]

MISS P. Who is Margaret?

I was with her in summer.

MISS P. All right, but the ring has not been found yet. Can you find out where it is?

The undertaker got it.

MISS P. Oh, all right.

I know. Help me.

MISS P. I shall look it up.

It was with me.

MISS P. Yes, I heard so.

It was, it was.

MISS P. I will attend to it.

Thank you.

On January 24th, Mrs. Lyman herself had her first sitting. As soon as Hodgson appeared he wrote:

The ring. You gave it me on my fiftieth birthday. When they asked I didn't want to say you gave it me, I didn't want to say that. . . . Two palm-leaves joining each other—Greek. [Here followed an illegible word. The palms truly described the ring, which Mrs. Piper probably had seen; but it bore no Greek inscription, nor was the symbol on it a Greek cross.] You gave it me—

MRS. L. Yes, Dick, where is it now?

They have got it. They took it off my finger after I was gone.

MRS. L. No, they didn't find it on your finger.

Pocket, it was in my pocket, I'll find it you shall have it.

On January 29th, Mrs. L. had another sitting. The Hodgson-control wrote:

I have been trying to make clear about that ring. It is on my mind all the time. I thought if I could get Margaret B. to get it for me, I would get it to you through her, then no one would understand. I could not tell Miss Pope about you.

MRS. L. Did you think Margaret B. gave it to you?

Oh dear no! not at all.

MRS. L. Then why did you speak of her?

I could trust her absolutely, and no one could understand. She would never betray it. You gave it to me on my 50th birthday. Palms and R. H. [Then a possible attempt to draw a symbol engraved on the ring.] No one living knows this but myself and yourself.

MRS. L. That is true, but what was the motto in the ring?

All will be clear to me in time. Do not ask me test questions now. . . . I wish the ring now to go back to yourself. I thought Margaret would understand and be glad to do it for me. I could not tell Miss Pope about you.

On March 5th R. H. again inquires of Mrs. Lyman about the ring. She then asks him: "Did you have it on that last day when you went to the boat-club?" [R. H. died while playing a game of hand-ball at the boat-club.]

I certainly had it on that day.

MRS. L. You told Miss P. the undertaker got it.

Thought he did and I am sure a man took it from my finger.

[After a few more words R. H. continues:]

I had that ring on my finger when I started for the club, I recall putting in my pocket. I did so because it hurt my finger when playing ball. I am not dreaming, I am clear. When I get here first I am a little stuffy, but I am as clear now as I ever was, I put it in my waistcoat pocket.

MRS. L. Why do you think a man stole it?

I saw it on a finger. . . . I put in my pocket, and the one who took care of my clothes is responsible for it. . . . What did they do with my waistcoat?

On May 16th, on being told that the ring is not yet found, the R. H. control writes:

I saw it taken by a man from my locker. He was in charge at the time and he has my ring. . . . I shall be able to

discover his name so you may be able to find it. I see where he goes and the house where he lives, plainly. . . . Five story brick house not far from the club and he is on the third story from the street, near the corner of the street, the room is in the rear of the building and I see his face clearly [a description of the man follows]. I see the ring on his finger clearly. The waistcoat was in his room when I entered the light a few moments ago. I am as sure of this as I am that you are Mrs. Lyman.

In point of fact the ring was found a couple of months later in the pocket of Hodgson's waistcoat, which had been too carelessly explored for it, and which had lain during all the interval in a room at the house of Mr. Dorr, with whom the Hodgson-control had all the time been having frequent communications.

The whole incident lends itself easily to a naturalistic interpretation. Mrs. Piper or her trance-consciousness may possibly have suspected the source of the ring. Mrs. Lyman's manner may have confirmed the suspicion. The manner in which the first misleading reference to "Margaret" was afterwards explained away may well have been the eunning of a "control" trying plausibly to cover his tracks and justify his professed identity. The description of the house and of the man to whom he ascribes its present possession sounds like vague groping, characteristic also of control-cunning. The description was but little like that of Mr. Dorr, whose house, moreover, is neither very near a corner nor very near a club.

On the other hand, if the hypothesis be seriously entertained that Hodgson's spirit was there in a confused state, using the permanent Piper automatic machinery to communicate through, the whole record is not only plausible but natural. It presents just that mixture of truth and groping which we ought to expect. Hodgson has the ring "on his mind" just as Mrs. Lyman has. Like her, he wishes its source not to be bruited abroad. He describes it accurately enough, truly tells of his taking it to the fatal boat-club, and of putting into his waistcoat-pocket there, of the waistcoat being taken from the locker, and vaguely, but not quite erroneously, indicates its present position.

Mrs. Lyman's own impression of the incident is as follows:

"No living person beside myself knew who had given him the ring, and I am quite sure that the living R. H. would have been as desirous as I to keep all mention of me out of the trance-record. Had he had entire control he would never have mentioned the ring until I had come to a sitting, but in his half-dreamy state something slipped out to Miss Pope, the sitter, aided telepathically perhaps by her knowledge that he had lately worn an unusual-looking ring which she knew was missing after his death. I am sure that Miss Pope thought the ring would be a good "test," so that although she was not the first to speak of it, it must certainly have been in her mind. It is characteristic of R. H. that even in his half-conscious state he is able to keep his own counsel so well. The word Margaret and the letters B and L which followed the mention of the ring at the very first sitting seem to refer to Miss Margaret Bancroft and myself. He knew that Miss Bancroft had "light," and he seems to feel that if he can only reach her she will understand what he wants. He was well aware of my own morbid dislike of having my affairs mentioned at the trance outside of my own sittings. You know that curious trait of suspicion in Hodgson's absolutely honest nature—trained in him professionally. When Miss Pope tells him the ring cannot be found, he at once thinks: "there was my body, and my clothes, etc., I believe the undertaker took it." Then I myself, Mrs. Lyman, come and again tell him the ring can't be found. His earthly memories presently become clear and he tells me exactly what he did with it before his death. But his suspicious side has been aroused—you know how anything once registered on the trance-machinery seems to make an impression and tends to recur—and again he thinks that some one took it. Nothing could be more characteristic of H. than his indignant remark about the man who had charge of his clothes being *responsible*. It all seems to me the kind of unpractical thing that a man would do in a dream. There are strong characteristics of R. H. in it, but it is R. H. dreaming and troubled. I am glad I haven't to make myself intelligible to a stranger to the persons involved; but knowing them as I do, I feel my own way straight through the maze, and the explanation is clear."

This incident of the ring seems to me a typical example of the ambiguity of possible interpretation that so constantly haunts us in the Piper-phenomenon. If you are willing

beforehand to allow that a half-awakened spirit may come and mix its imperfect memories with the habits of the trance-automatism, and you appereive the message sympathetically, what you get is entirely congenial with your hypothesis. But if you insist that nothing but knock-down evidence for the spirits shall be counted, then, since what comes is also compatible with natural causes, your hardness of heart remains unbroken, and you continue to explain things by automatic personation and accidental coincidence, with perhaps a dash of thought-transference thrown in. People will interpret this ring-episode harmoniously with their prepossessions. Taken by itself its evidential value is weak; but experience shows, I think, that a large number of incidents, hardly stronger than this one, will almost always produce a eumulative effect on the mind of a sitter whose affairs they implicate, and dispose him to the spiritistic view. It grows first possible, then plausible, then natural, and finally probable in a high degree.

The next incident I will cite is one which at a certain moment gave me a little thrill, as if I might be really talking with my old friend. (I have to make the personal confession that this reality-coefficient, as Professor Baldwin calls it, has generally been absent from my mind when dealing with the Piper-controls or reading reports of their communications.) I will call the episode "the nigger-talk ease."

#### THE NIGGER-TALK CASE.

On February 27th, 1906, at a sitting with Professor Hyslop, the following dialogue took place:

R. H. I wonder if you recall what I said I would do if I should return first?

HYSLOP. I do not remember exactly.

Remember that I told Myers that we would talk nigger-talk—Myers—talk nigger-talk?

HYSLOP. No, you must have told that to some one else.

Ah yes, James. I remember it was James, yes, Will James. He will understand.

Mr. Hyslop immediately wrote to me—I being in California—enclosing the record and soliciting corroboration. I had

to reply that the words awakened absolutely no echo in my memory. Three months later I returned to Cambridge, and began to study records of sittings held during my absence. I met this incident again, and again it failed to stir my memory. But the very next day, in a conversation with Messrs. Dorr and Piddington, while I was recalling certain discussions that I had formerly had with Hodgson about the amenability to suggestion of the Piper-controls, it suddenly flashed across me that these were probably what the words to Hyslop had meant. I had namely said to Hodgson, more than once, that a little tactful steering on his part would probably change the sacerdotal verbiage of the Imperator-group so completely that he would soon find them "talking like nigger-minstrels." For a moment I felt sure that this expression of mine, buried so deep in my own mind that it required a peculiar chain of associations to revive it, was what was dimly working in the memory of a surviving Hodgson, and trying to extricate itself. It was so incredible that R. H. would ever have repeated such a remark to either the waking Mrs. Piper or to her controls, that it seemed a good test of his survival. I regret to say, however, that the subsequent developments of the incident have deprived it in my eyes of all test-value. Not only did the Hodgson-control, when questioned by me subsequently, fail to recall anything like that discussion of the control's suggestibility which was the setting in which my memory had put the phrase, but Mr. Piddington has found in the Piper-records evidence that Hodgson had used the words "nigger-talk" in speaking to the Myers-control, so that this expression must be considered as part of the stock of Mrs. Piper's trance-vocabulary.<sup>1</sup> Such an incident shows how wary one must be in one's interpretations. A really expert critic of the Piper-trances ought to be familiar with the entire mass of material previous to any utterance under consideration. Hodgson was extraordinarily expert in this sense, and one of the weirdest feelings I have had, in dealing with the business lately, has been to find the wish so frequently surging up in

<sup>1</sup> "Feb. 4th, 1902. Dr. Hodgson (spontaneously to Myers-control) Do you remember about your laughing with me once and your saying that doubtless you would some time be coming back and talking nigger-talk?" A reference to the same incident is also made in the sitting of Feb. 13th, 1901.

me that he were alive beside me to give critical counsel as to how best to treat certain of the communications of his own professed spirit.

#### THE HULDAH-EPISODE.

During the voice-sitting of May 2nd, 1905, Mr. Piddington being present, the R. H. control said:

Pid, I want very much to give you my private letters concerning a Miss—a Miss—in Chicago [pseudonym]. I do not wish any one to read them.

J. G. P. How shall I know?

Look at my letters stamped from Chicago. I wouldn't have them get out for the world.

The name "Densmore" [pseudonym] was then written. Mr. Piddington asked whether the letters would be signed by the surname or the Christian name. The name "Huldah" was then given as that by which the letters would be signed.

On May 14th Piddington reported to the R. H. control that no such letters could be found, and asked for further information—"Can you tell me at what time this lady wrote letters to you? Was it lately?"

No, several years previously. I should be much distressed if they fell into other hands. No one living except the lady and myself knows of the correspondence.

J. G. P. If I cannot find those letters, should you feel any objection to my writing to the lady to ask if there has been such a correspondence?

Yes, I would rather you would do so.

Later (May 29th) Piddington reports unsuccessful search again, and Mr. Dorr, who also is present, asks whether "Huldah" is one of a family of Densmores known to him. "Is she a sister of Mary, Jenny, and Ella [pseudonyms]?"

Ella is the one. Huldah we used to call her.

[This was emphatically spoken. Then followed a statement (not caught in Mr. Dorr's notes) that the lady's full name was Ella Huldah Densmore.]

No one living could have known it. I hope I have destroyed them—I may have done so and forgotten it. There was a time when I greatly cared for her, and I did not wish it known in the ears of others. I think she can corroborate this. I am getting hazy. I must leave.

On June 5th, Mrs. William James and Mr. Dorr being present, D. asked: "Can you tell us anything more about Huldah Densmore? You said the other day that she was the same person as Ella? Were you clear in saying that?"

Did I say that? That was a mistake. She is a sister. Is one of the three sisters, but not Ella. [She *was* Ella.] I know what I am talking about. I saw Huldah in Chicago. I was very fond of her. I proposed marriage to her, but she refused me.

The statement about proposing marriage was not divulged to me by my wife, until I had already heard from the lady called Ella Densmore in this narrative, who was then in a foreign country, and to whom I had written to ascertain whether she and Hodgson had ever corresponded, or whether she or any one in her family was christened Huldah. Both Mr. Dorr and I knew her, but I was ignorant that she and Hodgson were acquainted. Great was my surprise when she wrote as follows:

Regarding the utterances of Mrs. Piper, I have no difficulty in telling you the circumstances on which she may have founded her communications. Years ago Mr. H. asked me to marry him, and some letters were exchanged between us which he may have kept. I do not remember how I signed the letters to him. I have sometimes used my middle name, Hannah, instead of Ella. [She knew of no "Huldah" in her family.]

In spite of the confusion that pervades Hodgson's veracious utterances here, it seems improbable that they should merely have been lucky flukes. Two naturalistic explanations offer themselves immediately.

(1) He might have made Mrs. Piper his confidant at the time; but no one who knows Hodgson will regard this explanation for a moment as credible.

(2) Nothing spreads as fast as rumors of this sort; so that if there had been a gossipy rumor, it might very well have spread to Mrs. Piper's ears, although it had skipped over Mr. Dorr's and mine. I accordingly inquired of a dozen of R. H.'s most intimate friends, saying: "Suppose I were to tell you that Hodgson had been in love not long ago, and had offered himself to a certain lady—would any particular person's name arise in your mind in consequence of such a suggestion?" Not a single one of these friends thought of the name of Miss Densmore, although three of them suggested other names very wide of the mark. Evidently no gossip had got into circulation, and R. H. had covered his tracks well. He was indeed the most singular mixture of expansiveness and reticence I have ever known; and the reticence had been increased professionally, as I may say, through his long training in having to guard the private affairs of sitters, and to watch himself with Mrs. Piper. I was Hodgson's earliest American friend, and until his death always imagined myself to enjoy an almost perfect intimacy with him. Since his death I have nevertheless found that whole departments of his life were unknown to me. In this "Huldah" matter in particular, not only was I unaware that he and she were acquainted, but if any one had described him to me as being in love with her, I should have scouted the story as inherently improbable, from the character of the two parties.

Nevertheless the story was true, barring the false name Huldah and a certain vacillation about the real Christian name. The sister of the so-called "Huldah" has told me, moreover, that besides herself, she thought that no living person knew from her sister's lips of R. H.'s state of mind. As Hodgson himself had apparently told no one, the incident seemed an excellent one to count in favor of spirit-return, unless, indeed, it should turn out that while it was happening, he had been led to consult the Piper-controls about it himself, and to use "Huldah's" name as a test of their telepathic or clairvoyant powers. But that even then he could have given them the real name seems unlikely, in view of his habitual methods. The records taken to England have not yet been looked over from this point of view, and no one knows just what they may contain, but fortunately one of the sittings with Mrs.

Piper after Hodgson's decease throws decisive light upon the matter. Hodgson *did* consult the Imperator group at the time of his disappointment, and the reasonable conclusion is that the revelation which so surprised Mr. Dorr and myself was thus a product of Mrs. Piper's trance-memory of previous conversations with the living Hodgson.

The sitting to which I allude was held on January 27th, 1906, by Prof. Newbold. In the course of it the Hodgson-control suddenly says:

Let me ask if you remember anything about a lady in [Chicago] to whom I referred.

W. R. N. Oh Dick, I begin to remember. About eight or nine years ago, was it, Dick?

Yes.

[*Note by W. R. N.*—Such a lady was frequently mentioned at sittings in 1895, and H. was told he would marry her. I was present when these statements were made, if my memory serves me.]

W. R. N. Tell me more, so *I* won't tell *you*!

And my position regarding her.

W. R. N. I wasn't sure it was in [Chicago].

Do you remember . . . . Densmore?

W. R. N. Was it *Jessie* Densmore?

Yes, Good.

[Mr. Dorr, who was present, here interjects:]

"Do you mean the name was *Jessie* Densmore, Hodgson?"

No, no, no, no. [Jessie was the first name of R. H.'s Australian cousin, "Q".—W. J.]

W. R. N. Dick, you told me years ago about a lady you were interested in, but I have forgotten her name and where she lived.

She lived in [Chicago].

W. R. N. Dick, it comes back to me as a cloud.

She was a Miss Densmore; I loved her dearly.

W. R. N. You used to tell me about her years ago.

Yes, and she afterwards married. Yes, I told you, and you are the only man I ever told. [Correct, apparently, save for the possibility of his having told Myers. See below.]

W. R. N. I'm not sure you told me her name.

Yes, I did.

W. R. N. The name is the least likely thing for me to remember . . . . What is the married name of Miss Densmore?

Heaven knows! It has gone from me and I shall soon go myself.

So much for Dr. Newbold's evidence. He has sent me a letter written to him by Hodgson in 1895, from which it would appear that the Piper controls had prophesied that both he and Newbold would ere long be made matrimonially happy, but that whereas the prophecy was being verified in N.'s case, it had been falsified in his own, he having that day received formal announcement of the marriage of Miss Densmore to another. The only other material which I shall quote is the following dialog, at a sitting of my own, October 24th, 1906. Inquiring about "Huldah," I ask:

W. J. Did you make any one your confidant?

No, though I may possibly have given a hint of it to Newbold.

W. J. Did you tell anybody on the other side of the water?

I may possibly have hinted it to Lodge.

W. J. Her sister tells me she thinks you may have told Myers when he was alive.

I think not: I may have hinted it to Myers.

W. J. She denies any knowledge of the name Huldah.

I used that name instead of the right christian name [he here gives the latter correctly] to avoid compromising—it was a very delicate matter, and caused me great disappointment. Have you communicated it to her?

W. J. Yes, and she corroborates. . . .

[R. H. displays no further curiosity,—a living person would probably have asked whether the lady had said nothing about him, etc.]

Do you remember a lady-doctor in New York? a member of our Society?

W. J. No, but what about her?

Her husband's name was Blair, . . . I think.

W. J. Do you mean Mrs. Dr. Blair Thaw?

Oh yes. Ask Mrs. Thaw if I did not at a dinner party mention something about the lady. I may have done so.

[Mrs. Thaw writes in comment upon this:—"Fifteen years ago, when R. H. was visiting us after his operation for appendicitis he told me that he had just proposed to a young lady and been refused. He gave no name."—Mrs. Thaw is the only living person beside Newbold to whom I can certainly find that he ever spoke of this episode, and the clue to Mrs. Thaw comes from the control! W. J.]

W. J. Do you remember the name of Huldah's present husband?

[To which R. H. replies by giving his country and title correctly, but fails to give his name.]

The entire incident shows the importance of completeness in the records. Without Professor Newbold's sitting we should have no present assurance that the trance-memory might have furnished the facts which seemed at the first blush to suggest so strongly the return of a "spirit" in a state of confused memory. *Compatible* with the return of such a spirit the facts indeed are. The possibility of the more naturalistic explanation doesn't make the supernatural one impossible; and if spirit-return were already made probable by other evidence, this might well be taken as a case of it too. But what I am sifting these records for is *independent* evidence of such return; and so long as the record in this instance lends itself so plausibly to a naturalistic explanation, I think we must refuse to interpret it in the spiritistic way.

A couple of smaller veridical incidents which have seemed to the sitters to make rather strongly for spirit-return are connected with R. H.'s financial history. I shall call them,—

#### THE PECUNIARY MESSAGES.

The American Branch had never fully paid its expenses; and although the Secretary's salary had always been very small, Hodgson had, after the first years, been reluctant to have any part of it charged to the mother-country. The result had occasionally been pecuniary embarrassment on his part. During his last visit to England, shortly after Myers's death, this embarrassment had been extreme; but an American friend, divining it in the nick of time, rescued him by an impulsive and wholly unexpected remittance. To this remittance he replied by a letter which contained some banter and, among other things, cited the story of a starving couple who were overheard by an atheist who was passing the house, to pray aloud to God for food. The atheist climbed the roof and dropped some bread down the chimney, and heard them thank God for the miracle. He then went to the door and revealed himself as its author. The old woman replied to him: "Well, the Lord sent it, even if the devil brought it."

At this friend's sitting of Jan. 30th, R. H. suddenly says:

Do you remember a story I told you and how you laughed, about the man and woman praying.

SITTER: Oh, and the devil was in it. Of course I do.

Yes, the devil, they told him it was the Lord who sent it if the devil brought it. . . . About the food that was given to them. . . . I want you to know who is speaking.

The sitter feels quite certain that no one but himself knew of the correspondence, and regards the incident as a good test of R. H.'s continued presence. Others will either favor this interpretation of it, or explain it by reading of the sitter's mind, or treat it as a chance coincidence, according to their several prepossessions. I myself feel morally certain that the waking Mrs. Piper was ignorant of the incident and

of the correspondence. Hodgson was as likely to have informed *me*, as any one, of the affair. He had given me at the time a vivid account of the trouble he had been in, but no hint of the quarter from which relief had come.

Of the other pecuniary message no written record exists, but the sitter has acquainted me with the incident, which ran as follows:

To assure Hodgson a salary, Mr. Dorr had acquainted a certain wealthy friend (who believed in the cause and in the value of the Secretary's work) with the situation of the Branch, and with R. H.'s reasons for not wishing to be indebted to the parent Society. This friend had agreed to pay into the Branch-treasury the amount of deficit in the yearly salary-account, provided the operation should remain anonymous, and Hodgson should ask no questions. Hodgson agreed to this. But upon the first sitting which this friend had after his death, the "spirit" of R. H. immediately referred to the matter and thanked the sitter warmly for the support given. The donor is of opinion, as I am also, that Hodgson may have suspected the source of the aid while receiving it, and that his "spirit" may therefore naturally have thanked the right person. That Mrs. Piper's waking consciousness should have been acquainted with any part of the transaction is incredible. The donor's name had been kept from me, who was Vice-President of the Society, and had yearly to know the accounts. I had known that the deficit in Hodgson's pay was made up by anonymous American believers in his work, but had supposed that there were several of them. I cannot well understand how Mrs. Piper should have got wind of any part of the financial situation, although her controls may have got wind of it in trance from those who were in the secret.

Few persons will ascribe the affair to chance-coincidence, but with both thought-transference and trance-memory as possible explanations, the incident cannot be deemed to furnish proof of Hodgson's personal survival.

In a later report I shall quote sittings at greater length and discuss briefly some of the control's peculiarities. The

conclusions I shall then draw will probably not be different from those which I now draw as follows:

(1) The case is an exceptionally bad one for testing spirit-return, owing to the unusual scope it gives to naturalistic explanations.

(2) The phenomena it presents furnish no knock-down proof of the return of Hodgson's spirit.

(3) They are well compatible, however, with such return, provided we assume that the Piper-organism not only transmits with great difficulty the influences it receives from beyond the curtain, but mixes its own automatic tendencies most disturbingly therewith. Hodgson himself used to compare the conditions of spirit-communication to those of two distant persons on this earth who should carry on their social intercourse by employing each of them a dead-drunk messenger.

(4) Although this Hodgson-case, taken by itself, yields thus only a negative, or at the best a baffling conclusion, we have no scientific right to take it by itself, as I have done. It belongs with the whole residual mass of Piper-phenomena, and they belong with the whole mass of cognate phenomena elsewhere found. False personation is a ubiquitous feature in this total mass. It certainly exists in the Piper-case; and the great question there is as to its limits. If, when lavish allowance has been made for this strange tendency in our subliminal life, there should still appear a balance of probability (which in this case can only mean a balance of simplicity) in the view that certain parts of the Piper-communications really emanate from personal centres of memory and will, connected with lives that have passed away; if, I say, this balance of probability should appear decisively anywhere in the mass, then the rest of the mass will have to be interpreted as at least possibly similarly caused. I admire greatly Hodgson's own discussion of the Piper-case in Volume XIII. of our *Proceedings*, especially in sections 5 and 6, where, taking the whole mass of communication into careful account, he decides for this spiritist interpretation. I know of no more masterly handling anywhere of so unwieldy a mass of material; and in the light of his general conclusions there, I am quite ready to admit that my own denials in this present paper may be the result of the narrowness of

my material, and that possibly R. H.'s spirit has been speaking all the time, only my ears have been deaf. It is true that I still believe the "Imperator-band" to be fictitious entities, while Hodgson ended by accepting them as real; but as to the general probability of there being real communicators somewhere in the mass I cannot be deaf to Hodgson's able discussion, or fail to feel the authority which his enormous experience gave to his opinion in this particular field.

(5) I therefore repeat that if ever our growing familiarity with these phenomena should tend more and more to corroborate the hypothesis that "spirits" play some part in their production, I shall be quite ready to undeafen my ears, and to revoke the negative conclusions of this limited report. The facts are evidently complicated in the extreme, and we have as yet hardly scratched the surface of them. But methodical exploration has at last seriously begun, and these earlier observations of ours will surely be interpreted one day in the light of future discoveries which it may well take a century to make. I consequently disbelieve in being too "rigorous" with our criticism of anything now in hand, or in our squeezing so evidently vague a material too hard in our technical forceps, at the present stage. What we need is more and more observations. Quantity will probably have to supplement quality in the material. When we have the facts in sufficient number, we may be sure that they will cast plenty of explanatory backward light. We can therefore well afford to play a waiting game.

PART II.<sup>1</sup>

“Believe me, I am not rubbish.”—THE HODGSON-CONTROL.

RICHARD HODGSON had always seemed and felt so robust that the possibility of his death had been thought of by no one, and no provision against it had been made. He had worked the American Branch of our Society practically alone, for many years, and although Prof. Hyslop and I were vice-presidents, we had no minute acquaintance with details at the office, where Miss Lucy Edmunds, the assistant secretary, was now left in charge alone.

What was to be done about the Branch? what was to be done with its mass of records? what with Hodgson's private property?—these were so many problems requiring immediate solution. Last, not least, there was the problem of Mrs. Piper's future.

The question of R. H.'s property was easily answered by the legal appointment of Messrs. Dorr and H. James, Jr., to be administrators of his personal estate, he having left no will. The great mass of Members and Associates of the Branch being inert and indifferent, the handling of the other questions fell to a small group of more acutely interested persons, of whom Dr. Hyslop and I were the only ones with official authority.

Absent in California for about five months, I found on my return that certain differences of opinions had been developing at home.

Prof. Hyslop, who had expended so much labor already on the Piper material, wished, if possible, to secure the records for the new American Society which he was founding. Others, whose sittings had been of a peculiarly intimate nature, claimed that the records of those sittings were their private

<sup>1</sup>Part I. of this report was written to be read at the S.P.R. meeting in London, January 28th, 1909. I must assume in what follows that my readers are already acquainted with the contents of Part I.

property. In some quarters an objection was felt to such a mass of American material going to England. One person protested rather vehemently against the prominent part played by a certain other person in the deliberations. There being no one officially empowered to succeed Hodgson in taking charge of Mrs. Piper's sittings, differences of opinion regarding her future relations to the S.P.R. had arisen.

There was, in short, a state of strain which I have to mention here, for the trance-utterances of that period refer to it, and its peculiarities must be taken account of in estimating their significance.

In the end, however, since we all had fair minds and good-will, and were united in our common love for Hodgson, everything got settled harmoniously. Mr. Piddington was sent for to represent the English Society; it was decided to extinguish the American Branch, and to carry the Piper-reports to England, practically complete, while Hyslop's Society should take possession of the other records; workable arrangements were found for Mrs. Piper; the situation, in short, smoothed itself out, leaving nothing but a new system of friendships among persons who before Hodgson's death had for the most part been unacquainted with one another.

The records of the Piper trance show that during all this period the "controls" had cognizance of the main factors of perplexity. There were, however, so many sources of leakage at this epoch that no part of this cognizance can be counted as evidence of supernormal knowledge. Whether in or out of trance, the Medium may well have come into possession of what was essential in the facts, and the gaps could be filled by her imagination, either waking or somnambulistic. The result, however, was that those who held sittings at this time had a lively feeling that the control-personality they talked with, whether Rector or Hodgson, was an intelligence which understood the whole situation. It talked appropriately with Dorr about certain records not being made public; with Henry James, Jr., about the disposition of R. H.'s books and other property; with Piddington and Dorr about Hyslop's desires and how best to meet them; with Hyslop about his responsibilities and about mediums in whom he and Hodgson had recently been interested; with Dorr, James, Piddington, and

Mrs. Lyman about whom to induce to manage the sittings; with more than one of us about a certain person who was unduly interfering, etc., etc.; the total outcome being that each sitter felt that his or her problems were discriminatingly perceived by the mind that animated the sleeping medium's organism.

More than this—most of us felt during the sittings that we were in some way, more or less remote, conversing with a real Rector or a real Hodgson. And this leads me to make a general remark about the difference between reading the record of a Piper-sitting and playing an active part in the conversation recorded.

One who takes part in a good sitting has usually a far livelier sense, both of the reality and of the importance of the communication, than one who merely reads the record. Active relations with a thing are required to bring the reality of it home to us, and in a trance-talk the sitter actively co-operates. When you find your questions answered and your allusions understood; when allusions are made that you think you understand, and your thoughts are met by anticipation, denial, or corroboration; when you have approved, applauded, or exchanged banter, or thankfully listened to advice that you believe in; it is difficult not to take away an impression of having encountered something sincere in the way of a social phenomenon. The whole talk gets warmed with your own warmth, and takes on the reality of your own part in it; its confusions and defects you charge to the imperfect conditions, while you credit the successes to the genuineness of the communicating spirit. Most of us also, when sitters, react more, prick our ears more, to the successful parts of the communication. These consequently loom more in our memory, and give the key to our dramatic interpretation of the phenomenon. But a sitting that thus seemed important at the time may greatly shrink in value on a cold re-reading; and if read by a non-participant, it may seem thin and almost insignificant.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A striking example of this was furnished me lately by a manuscript which a friend sent me. She had been one of Mrs. Piper's most assiduous clients. Her conversations with a certain spirit-control had been copious, fluent and veridical, and to herself so comforting and elevating, that she had epitomized

Somewhat similar fluctuations are noticed in the reality-feeling which the records may awaken at different times in one and the same reader. When I first undertook to collate this series of sittings and make the present report, I supposed that my verdict would be determined by pure logic. Certain minute incidents, I thought, ought to make for spirit-return or against it in a "crucial" way. But watching my mind work as it goes over the data, convinces me that exact logic plays only a preparatory part in shaping our conclusions here; and that the decisive vote, if there be one, has to be cast by what I may call one's general sense of dramatic probability, which sense ebbs and flows from one hypothesis to another—it does so in the present writer at least—in a rather illogical manner. If one sticks to the detail, one may draw an anti-spiritist conclusion; if one thinks more of what the whole mass may signify, one may well incline to spiritist interpretations.

This was the shape in which I myself left the matter in my recent preliminary report. I said that spirit-return was not proved by the Hodgson-control material, taken by itself, but that this adverse conclusion might possibly be reversed if the limited material were read in the light of the total mass of cognate phenomena. To say this is to say that the proof still baffles one. It still baffles me, I have to confess; but whether my subjective insufficiency or the objective insufficiency (as yet) of our evidence be most to blame for this, must be decided by others.

The common-sense rule of presumption in scientific logic is never to assume an unknown agent where there is a known one, and never to choose a rarer cause for a phenomenon when a commoner one will account for it. The usual is always more

them in this manuscript which, she thought, ought to be published. Strictly evidential matter was ruled out from it as too minute or private, and what remained was ethical and human matter only. Never having known the communicator, and reading passively and critically, I felt bound to dissuade from publication. I could not believe that readers would find in the communications a twentieth part of the importance which their receiver had found in them. The vital heat was absent, and what remained was ashes. I may well have been wrong in this opinion, but the incident brought vividly home to my own mind the contrast between the inside view of the sitter, and the outside one of the mere critic.

probable, and exceptional principles should be invoked only when the use of ordinary ones is impossible. Fraud is a form of human agency both known and common, though much less common than cynics suppose; "personation" is unquestionably common in the whole realm of our subconscious operations; "telepathy" seems fairly established as a fact, though its frequency is still questionable; accidental coincidences occur, however rarely; but "spirits" of any grade, although they are indeed matters of tradition, seem to have shown themselves (so far as concrete evidence for them goes) nowhere except in the specific phenomena under investigation. Our rule of presumption should lead us then to deny spirits and to explain the Piper-phenomena by a mixture of fraud, subconscious personation, lucky accident, and telepathy, whenever such an explanation remains possible. Taking these Hodgson-records in detail, and subjecting their incidents to a piecemeal criticism, such an explanation does seem practically possible everywhere; so, as long as we confine ourselves to the mere logic of presumption, the conclusion against the spirits holds good.

But the logic of presumption, safe in the majority of cases, is bound to leave us in the lurch whenever a real exception confronts us; and there is always a bare possibility that any case before us may be such an exception. In the case at present before us the exceptional possibility is that of "spirits" really having a finger in the pie. The records are fully compatible with this explanation, however explicable they may be without it. Spirits may co-operate with all the other factors, they may indeed find that harnessing the other factors in their service is the only way open to them for communicating their wishes. The lower factors may, in fact, be to a spirit's wishes what the physical laws of a machine are to its maker's and user's aims. A spectator, confining his attention to a machine's parts and their workings, and finding everything there explicable by mechanical push and pull, may be tempted to deny the presence of any higher actuation. Yet the particular pushes and pulls which the form of that machine embodies, would not be there at all without a higher *meaning which the machine expresses*, and which it works out as a human purpose. To understand the parts of the machine fully, we must find the human purpose which uses all this push and pull as its means

of realization. Just so the personation, fishing, guessing, using lucky hits, etc., in Mrs. Piper, may be, as it were, the mechanical means by which "spirits" succeed in making her living organism express their thought, however imperfectly.

As soon, therefore, as we drop our routine rule of presumption, and ask straight for truth and nothing but truth, we find that *the whole question is as to whether the exceptional case confronts us.* This is a question of probabilities and improbabilities. Now in every human being who in cases like this makes a decision instead of suspending judgment, the sense of probability depends on the forms of dramatic imagination of which his mind is capable. The explanation has *in any event* to be dramatic. Fraud, personation, telepathy, spirits, elementals, are all of them dramatic hypotheses. If your imagination is incapable of conceiving the spirit-hypothesis at all, you will just proclaim it "impossible" (as my colleague Münsterberg does, *Psychology and Life*, p. 130), and thus confess yourself incompetent to discuss the alternative seriously.

I myself can perfectly well imagine spirit-agency, and I find my mind vacillating about it curiously. When I take the phenomena piecemeal, the notion that Mrs. Piper's subliminal self should keep her sitters apart as expertly as it does, remembering its past dealings with each of them so well, not mixing their communications more, and all the while humbugging them so profusely, is quite compatible with what we know of the dream-life of hypnotized subjects. Their consciousness, narrowed to one suggested kind of operation, shows remarkable skill in that operation. If we suppose Mrs. Piper's dream-life once for all to have had the notion suggested to it that it must personate spirits to sitters, the fair degree of virtuosity it shows need not, I think, surprise us. Nor need the exceptional memory shown surprise us, for memory seems extraordinarily strong in the subconscious life. But I find that when I ascend from the details to the whole meaning of the phenomenon, and especially when I connect the Piper-case with all the other cases I know of automatic writing and mediumship, and with the whole record of spirit-possession in human history, the notion that such an immense current of experience, complex in so many ways, should spell out absolutely nothing but the words "intentional humbug" appears very unlikely. The notion that so many men and

women, in all other respects honest enough, should have this preposterous monkeying self annexed to their personality seems to me so weird that the spirit-theory immediately takes on a more probable appearance. The spirits, if spirits there be, must indeed work under incredible complications and falsifications, but at least if they are present, some honesty is left in a whole department of the universe which otherwise is run by pure deception. The more I realize the quantitative massiveness of the phenomenon and its complexity, the more incredible it seems to me that in a world all of whose vaster features we are in the habit of considering to be *sincere* at least, however brutal, this feature should be wholly constituted of insincerity.

If I yield to a feeling of the dramatic improbability of this, I find myself interpreting the details of the sittings differently. I am able, while still holding to all the lower principles of interpretation, to imagine the process as more complex, and to share the feeling with which Hodgson came at last to regard it after his many years of familiarity, the feeling which Prof. Hyslop shares, and which most of those who have good sittings are promptly inspired with. I can imagine the spirit of R. H. talking to me through inconceivable barriers of obstruction, and forcing recalcitrant or only partly consilient processes in the Medium to express his thoughts, however dimly.

This is as candid an account of my own personal equation as I can give. I exhibited it in my treatment of special incidents in the preliminary report, and the reader will make allowance for it in what is to follow. In the end he must draw his conclusions for himself; I can only arrange the material.

The best way perhaps to do this will be to begin with certain general characteristics, Hodgson's mannerisms, for example.

Hodgson was distinguished during life by great animal spirits. He was fond of argument, chaff, and repartee, a good deal of a gesticulator, and a great laugher. He had, moreover, an excessive appetite for poetry. I call it excessive, for it was anything but fastidious,—he seemed to need sonorous rhyme and metre for his daily food, even if the quality and sentiment were

commonplace. All these traits were manifested from the outset in his appearances as a "control"—some examples are given in my preliminary report. Chaff and slang from a spirit have an undignified sound for the reader, but to the interlocutors of the R. H.-control they seem invariably to have been elements of verisimilitude. Thus T. P. writes, *à propos* of a bantering passage in the record of Jan. 16, 1906: "T. P. and R. H. were such good chums that he was saucy to her, and teasing her most of the time. R. H.'s tone towards T. P. in all his communications is *absolutely characteristic*, and as he was in life." Similarly, Dr. Bayley appends this note to a number of ultra-vivacious remarks from R. H.: "Such expressions and phrases were quaintly characteristic of R. H. in the body, and as they appear, often rapidly and spontaneously, they give the almost irresistible impression that it is really the Hodgson personality, presiding with its own characteristics. To fully appreciate this, of course, one would have had to have known him as intimately as I did."<sup>1</sup>

For these rollicking observations the control chose his sitters well in accordance with his habits during life. This, however, did not exclude very serious talk with the same persons—quite the reverse sometimes, as when one sitter of this class notes: "Then came words of kindness which were too intimate and personal to be recorded, but which left me so deeply moved that shortly afterwards, at the sitting's close, I fainted dead away—it had seemed as though he had in all reality been there and speaking to me."

The extracts given in the earlier report or to be given soon will show what I mean by Hodgson's rollicking manner. The later communications show more of it than the earlier ones; and it quickly manifested the tendency, characteristic in the medium's utterances, to become stereotyped. Whatever they may have been at the outset, they soon fall into what may be called the trance-memory's "stock," and are then repeated automatically. Hodgson quickly acquired a uniform mode of announcing himself: "Well, well, well! I am Hodgson. Delighted to see you. How is everything? First rate? I'm in the witness-box at last," etc., with almost no variety. This habitual use of stock-remarks by Mrs. Piper may tempt one

<sup>1</sup> Sitting of April 3rd, 1906.

to be unjust to the total significance of her mediumship. If the supernormal element in it, whatever it is, be essentially discontinuous and flash-like, an utterance that to-day belongs to the regular trance-stock may have *got into* that stock at a former moment of supernormal receptivity. Supernormal receptivity of some kind is certainly involved in the total phenomenon, but I believe that information that originally came thus quickly ceases to be supernormal. The control G. P., at the outset of his appearance, gave supernormal information copiously, but within a few years he has degenerated into a shadow of his former self, dashing in and quickly out again, with an almost fixed form of greeting. Whatever he may have been at first, he seems to me at last to have "passed on," after leaving that amount of impression on the trance-organism's habits.

I will now cull from the records a number of extracts relative to particular sitters, which show the control's familiarity with their affairs, calling the first of these extracts

#### THE OLDFARM SERIES.

Oldfarm is the name of Mr. George B. Dorr's place at Bar Harbor, Maine, where R. H. had often been a summer guest. Mrs. Piper at the time of these sittings had never been at Bar Harbor; and although she had had many interviews, as well with Mr. Dorr as with Mr. Dorr's mother before the latter's death, it is unlikely that many of the small veridical details in what follows had been communicated to her at those interviews. At Mr. Dorr's sitting of June 5th, 1906, he asks the R. H.-control for his reminiscences of Oldfarm: "Do you remember your visits to us there?"

Certainly I do. One night we stayed out too long and your mother got very nervous, do you remember? Minna was there. . . . We stayed out *much* too long. I felt it was a great breach of etiquette but we couldn't help it! I fear as guests we were bad [laughs].

[R. H.'s sitting out with "Minna" and others "much too long" and "their being bad as guests" is excellent. In old days they used often to sit up hopelessly late into the night, when the nights were pleasant, out on

the piazza, talking in the dark; and my mother's half-real and half-humorous exasperation over it, expressed in her own vivid way, and R. H.'s boyish delight in doing it and at the scoldings they all used to get for it next day, would naturally be one of the first things he would recall, associated as those evenings were with people whom he cared for.—D.]

And do you remember the discussion I had with Jack, when he got impatient? You were much amused!

[His recollection of his discussion with Jack, who used, together with M., to be at our house with him a great deal in the old days, is characteristic. I do not myself remember the special occasion to which he refers, but the incident, including my own amusement at the heat they used to get into in their talk, falls in most naturally with all my own recollections of that time.—D.]

And I remember your mother's calling me out one Sunday morning to see the servants go to church on a buckboard.

[I cannot now recall my mother taking R. H. out to see the servants off on any special day, but he was with us many Sundays, and I have no doubt that the memory of this is absolutely accurate, nor is it anything of which Mrs. Piper might know,—it is not the sort of thing that any one would have spoken to her of, or mentioned at the trance. The *buckboard* is quite correct. It was a big buckboard that carried six people and was the only wagon which we had big enough to take all the people up, but its use is not sufficiently universal at Bar Harbor to injure the evidential value of his recollection of it. Again, the people used to go off from the kitchen, which is at an end of the house and cannot be seen from the living rooms or piazzas, so that his statement that my mother called him out to see them off, while a small point, seems to me of value; and the event itself, with the arrangements that had to be made to make it possible, was quite enough of a circumstance in our family life to make recollection of it natural.—D.]

I can see the open fireplace in the living room.

[The room is one in which the fireplace, broad and arching, is the central feature and would be first thought of in thinking of the room.—D.]

G. B. D. Do you remember where you used to sleep?

Out in the little house just out across the yard, where we used to go and smoke.

[His recollection also of the little house is good. The only mistake in reference to it is in speaking of it as "across the yard," it being in fact across the lawn and garden, upon a hillside opposite the house. We always kept some rooms in it for our guests, over-flowing into it when the house was full, and R. H. liked it better than the house itself in the greater freedom that it gave him. We used to close the house itself early in the evening, and R. H. was very apt then to go up to the cottage with some other man or men and sit up and smoke and talk,—often until quite late.—D.]

I remember the bathing and the boats and a walk through the woods.

[The bathing was one of the incidents at Oldfarm which R. H. would have best remembered. We used to take long walks over the mountains and go down for a plunge when we returned from them. There were often three or four men or more going in together when the house was full, and it was something in which R. H. delighted especially, so that his recollection of this would be apt to be one of his most vivid ones.—D.]

G. B. D. Do you remember whether you used to bathe off the beach, or off the rocks?

We used to bathe off the *rocks*; I'm sure of that. *I can see the whole place.*

[I asked the question as to whether we went in off the rocks or the beach so as to see if he really had a clear remembrance of it, and I asked it in such a way that my companion at the sitting thought R. H.'s answer "off the rocks" was probably wrong. My bath-house was not on the beach, but on a point running far out

into the sea, very bold and rocky, and we used to spring off the rocks into deep water, climbing out by a perpendicular ladder fastened to the ledge.—D.]

I can see the little piazza that opened out from your mother's room and the whole beautiful outlook from it, over the water.

[That that piazza and its view should be one of R. H.'s strongest recollections of the place seems to me most natural, while at the same time the piazza itself, which is not a conspicuous object in the house from without, and which was only familiar to my mother's more intimate friends, is not a thing which would occur naturally to any one not familiar with our life down there.—D.]

Mr. Dorr then asks R. H. if he remembers a walk he once took with a young friend from New York, where R. H. outwalked the other man and was very triumphant about it afterward, and whether he could recall the man's name. He also asks him if he remembers the name of the man who lived in the farm house, where R. H. used generally to sleep when staying at Oldfarm. Both of these names would have been quite familiar to R. H. in life. R. H. cannot give them and makes no attempt to do so.

R. H. Names are the hardest things to remember; it's extraordinary but it's true. The scenes of my whole life are laid open to me but names go from one's memory like a dream. I remember walking through the woods there and sitting down and lighting my pipe and coming back late to lunch.

On June 20th, 1906, at a sitting of Miss Bancroft's, at which Mr. Dorr was present, the R. H. control suddenly writes:

Do you remember anything about Celery-root? about  
Celle root?

Miss B. (to G. B. D.)—Do *you* remember anything about it?

G. B. D. No.

Or was it at your place, George. [Difficulty in reading this sentence. When read successfully, G. B. D. says "yes".]

Your mother used to have it, and I was surprised to see it there as I thought it the best of it. As I thought it the best part of it. The best part of it. No one would ever think of this thing I know.

Miss B. You mean you think you got this at Mr. Dorr's?

Think! I know. I think so, yes. I think George's mother used to have it and I never got it anywhere but there.

G. B. D. at first cannot recall what is meant, then remembers and says "Good". He appends the following note:

[We used to have a bunch or two of raw celery, when we grew our own, placed on the table as a *hors d'œuvre*, and served whole, with the upper portion of the root left on it in the French fashion. This part of the root is very good eating, but it is not usually served in America; and though I have no clear remembrance now of special talk about this with R. H., I remember quite well his talking at our table late one fall about these autumn vegetables and think that what is spoken of is this.—D.]

On July 2nd, 1906, Mr. Dorr had a spoken sitting alone, taking the short-hand record himself, and asked again for Oldfarm recollections:

G. B. D. Can you give me any names connected with Bar Harbor, or of the mountains there which you used to climb, or of the people to whose houses you used to go with me, or any others that you can recall?

No, I can't recall any names now . . . I will think it over and try.

G. B. D. Can you recall four sisters whom we used to walk with, and be much with, a number of years ago?

I remember Minna and Gemma. [Names known to the medium in former trances, but pertinent as a reply.]

G. B. D. I will give you the name of the sisters, and see if that recalls anything to you. It was the Minturns.

Oh! the Minturns! [repeated eagerly and emphatically].  
There was Gertrude and Robert, a brother named Robert—  
and Mary. They lived in New York. I remember them  
well. [Correct, save that Mary should have been May.]

G. B. D. There was another sister, who used to walk oftenest with  
us—can you recall her name?

[R. H. makes one or two ineffectual attempts, giving wrong  
names.]

G. B. D. Now, Hodgson, can't you tell me something about the lady  
you were interested in, whose letters you asked Piddington  
to find?

This was Huldah Densmore.

G. B. D. But there is no Huldah in the family, that I know, nor can  
we learn of any. We have asked her sister, and she  
has never heard the name of Huldah.

Wait a moment. Let me think. It is most difficult to get  
earthly memories. They go from one, but I find that  
they come back to me as I think of things. She married  
a — [name of nationality given correctly]. If you will  
write to her, you will find I am right. Write to her!

G. B. D. Did you want to marry her?

Yes, I did. And I remember what a disappointment it was  
to me.

G. B. D. Was she out of sympathy with your work?

She wanted me to give it up—it was a subject she did not  
care to have to do with. [Correct as to the lady's  
animus.—W.J.]

G. B. D. Was it at our house you met her?

I met her there, at Bar Harbor. Your mother ought to  
remember it well. She introduced us to each other.  
[Correct.—D.]

G. B. D. But my mother is on your side.

Oh yes, I had forgotten. It has troubled me over here,  
thinking I might have left her letters among my papers.  
So I spoke to Piddington about it.

G. B. D. I think you must have destroyed them. We didn't find any.

I think I must have destroyed them—I hope I did.

[This "Huldah" episode is treated in a separate section of Part I. of this report, see above, pp. 20-26.—W. J.]

I recall the pansies your mother used to place over the table. I remember that well—delightful to see them! I can see them now.

[My mother used to have pansies spread loosely over the table-cloth, when she had people to dine or sup with us at Bar Harbor, where we had a large bed of them planted near the house so that we could get them freely for this purpose. The custom is not common enough to let H.'s statement pass for a happy guess, nor do I think it likely he would have spoken of it to Mrs. Piper, either awake or in trance. It came out quite suddenly also, and with a positiveness which made me feel that it was a true recollection, something seen at the moment in a mental picture.—D.]

G. B. D., endeavoring to extract Bar Harbor names from R. H., again tries to get that of the man who occupied the farmhouse at which R. H. used generally to sleep when at Oldfarm. He was not able to give that, but gave the name of the gardener, Miller. "It is possible," Mr. Dorr writes, "that Mrs. Piper may have heard of Miller's name as that of the manager of my plant-nurseries at Bar Harbor. I remember I once meant to send her some plants from the nurseries for her garden, and think it probable they went. It is also possible that the name may have come up at the trance in my own past sittings."

I remember a beautiful road, a bicycle-road you made, going through the woods.

[A dozen years ago I made a bicycle-road on my own back-land, which ran through the woods beneath a mountain over which we often used to walk. It was a pleasant and familiar feature in our summer life there, and it would naturally be one of the pictures that would come

back to R. H. in thinking of the place,—like the view from my mother's balcony of which he spoke at the former sitting. But it is not a thing of which either he or I would have spoken to Mrs. Piper, whether in trance or awake.—D.]

G. B. D. then tries again to get the name of the man who occupied the farmhouse, describing him to R. H. without mentioning his name.

Oh yes, I remember him well—I remember going off with him once fishing—going down the shore in a boat. . . . I remember one evening, and it impressed me so vividly because your mother did not like it, and I felt we had done wrong and hurt her—M. and I were smoking together and we talked too late, and she felt it was time to retire—

[This would be remarkably good if the incident should prove not to have come up already in R. H.'s own sittings after M. died. She used to smoke cigarettes occasionally, and was the only person of the feminine sex whom I now recall as having done so at our house. Unless in possibly referring to this incident to her 'spirit' at trances, after M. died, Hodgson would have been most unlikely to speak of it to others,—certainly not to Mrs. Piper, either in trance or awake.—D.]

G. B. D. Do you remember where you went with John Rich when you went fishing with him—Oh I forgot! I did not mean to give you his name!

John Rich, John, that is his name! But I am sorry you gave it to me too—it might have come to me. We got a boat and went over to an island. Coming back we had some difficulty in getting our fish in. We had poor luck in catching them, and then we lost them. Ask him, he will remember it, I think.

[R. H.'s recollection of going off with Rich seems to be good, as I think it over. That he should go off with Rich only and neither alone nor with me or other guests, is exactly what happened,—and yet not what might have been expected to happen. His going to an island is descriptive also.—D.]

Do you remember what you used to put over your back that had a cup in it? And there was a little brook where we used to stop and drink. And then I used to stop and light my pipe—the whole scene is as vivid to me! If I could only express it to you!

[I used to carry a little canvas bag slung over my shoulder and a cup in it, when we went on long tramps. This may be what R. H. refers to, though I think that he was rather apt to carry a folding leather cup of his own in his pocket. The whole recollection is rather vague in my memory, going back a number of years. The picture is a good one of just what used to happen when we were off on our tramps together, though of course what he describes would be always apt to happen on walks through woods and over mountains. The picture of the little brook we used to stop and drink at is good—I can see it now.—D.]

After some talk about the Tavern Club, about Australia, and about the state of things in the other world—some of which will be noticed later, R. H. goes on as follows:

Do you remember one summer there was a gentleman at your house who had a violin. I had some interesting talks with him about these things, and I liked to hear him play his violin. A little gentleman—I remember him very well.

[This describes a man named von G., who was an excellent violinist and who also talked interestingly on psychical research matters, in which he professed to have some faculty. As R. H. himself was also fond of the violin, it seems natural that some memory of von G. should stand out now. That Mrs. Piper should have any knowledge of this gentleman seems most improbable.—D.]

My earthly memories come only in fragments. I remember quite well this little gentleman and how interested I was in talking with him about psychics, and in his instrument as well. I remember a man Royce visiting you.

[Prof. Royce says that he has been at Oldfarm along with Hodgson, but adds that that might be a natural association in Mrs. Piper's mind, since he thinks that the only time he ever saw her was at the Dorrs' in Boston.—W. J.]

This is, I think, the whole of the matter relative to Oldfarm which the R. H.-Control has given. The number of items mentioned is not great, and some inability to answer questions appears. But there are almost no mistakes of fact, and it is hardly possible that all the veridical points should have been known to Mrs. Piper normally. Some of them indeed were likely *a priori*; others may have been chance-hits; but for the mass, it seems to me that either reading of Mr. Dorr's mind, or spirit-return, is the least improbable explanation.

The fewness of the items may seem strange to some critics. But if we assume a spirit to be actually there, trying to reach us, and if at the same time we imagine that his situation with regard to the transaction is similar to our own, the surprise vanishes. I have been struck over and over again, both when at sittings myself and when reading the records, at the paralyzing effect on one's ready wit and conversational flow, which the strangeness of the conditions brings with it. Constraint and numbness take the place of genial expansiveness. We "don't know what to say," and it may also be so "on the other side." Few persons, I fancy, if suddenly challenged to prove their identity through the telephone, would quickly produce a large number of facts appropriate to the purpose. They would be more perplexed, and waste more time than they imagine.

I next pass to what I will call

#### THE OWL'S HEAD SERIES.

Owl's Head was the name of the summer place of Miss Bancroft, overlooking Rockland Harbor, in Maine, where Mrs. Piper had never been. R. H. had very greatly enjoyed visits which he had made there on two successive summers. Miss Bancroft had been a sitter of Mrs. Piper's and was a convert to spiritism, with some degree of "psychic" susceptibility

herself. At her first sitting after Hodgson's death, Feb. 19th, 1906, Mr. Dorr also being present, the following dialog took place:<sup>1</sup>

I am Hodgson! Speak! Well, well, well, I am delighted to see you. How are you?

Miss B. I am all right. How are you?

First rate.

Miss B. I can scarcely speak to you.

But you *must* speak to me.

Miss B. Will you give me some definite message?

Surely I will. I have called and called to you. Do you remember what I said to you about coming here if I got a chance?

Miss B. Yes, I do.

I wish you to pay attention to me. [The sitter and Mr. Dorr were together trying to decipher the script.] Do you remember how I used to talk about this subject, evenings? You know what you said about my writing—I think I am getting on first-rate.

[Everything accurate so far! Miss B. can herself write automatically, and since R. H.'s departure, has thought that he might have been influencing her subconsciousness in that and other ways. The words "I have called," etc., she interprets in this sense. Rector, however, already knew of her automatic writing.—W. J.]

Do you remember what a good time we had at Head? I am so glad I went. . . . Do you remember a little talk we had about the lights and satellites? Do you remember how interested you were? Do you remember what I used to say about returning if I got over here first?

<sup>1</sup>Here, as in all the rest of the records reprinted, I omit repetitions and remarks not connected with the recollections. Nothing is omitted, however, which in my eyes might affect the interpretation of what is printed.—W. J.

MISS B. Yes, I remember all that.

[Accurate again. The "Head" must mean Owl's Head, where during two successive summers Hodgson had visited the sitter, and been supremely happy. The "lights" refer to the lights of Rockland, across the bay, of which he greatly admired the effect, and at night on the piazza he had often spoken about the planets and stars, and the question of their habitation.—M. B.]

Well, here I am, now fire away, now fire.

MISS B. Can you tell me the names of some who were with you there last summer?

Remember Miss Wilkinson?

MISS B. No.

You ask me about whom? Not understand. How are the children? [The house had been full of school children, of whom R. H. was fond.—M. B.]

MISS B. They are well.

Good! Do you remember the day I walked across to the Mountain?

MISS B. No, I don't remember.

Ask Putnam if he and I—My watch stopped.

[For this reference to a watch stopping, compare pp. 11 and 116 of this report. I suspect some confused memory of a real incident to be at the bottom of it.—W. J.]

MISS B. Can you not recall something you did at the Head?

That is just what I am trying to do. Don't you remember how I had to laugh at you, laugh on that boat, about that boat?

This last word, being wrongly deciphered as "hat," Miss B. asks:—

MISS B. Whose hat blew off?

My hat, do you not remember the day it blew off? Yes, you are not following me very clearly.

Miss B. I am trying to recall about that hat.

Do you remember fishing? Yes.

Miss B. Yes, I remember fishing.

Capital! Remember about my hat? went into the water.

Miss B. Yes, I think I do.

I should say you did. Oh my! but I am not so stupid as some I know. I have not forgotten anything. Get my Poem?

Miss B. Yes, and I want to thank you for it.

Don't bother about that. I want you to know I am really here and recognize you, and the first-rate time I had at Owl's — Thank you very much. How is Bayley? Certainly first-rate time I had at Owl's. Thank you very much. Owl's. Remember the jokes I told you? Jsp. Thank you. Remember what I said about dressing them [or "him?"]? Remember? Oh I do well. . . .

Miss B. How am I getting along?

Capital! You are doing well, all you need is experience. I would like to take a swim! I would like to take a swim. Plunge.

[Much incoherence hereabouts. The names Bayley and Jessup (Jsp) are correct. Hodgson used to bathe with them off the rocks, and Miss B. recalls jokes between them about dressing there. H. and they went deep-sea fishing almost daily. One day Dr. B. and R. H. went fishing in a gasolene launch, and on their return had much riotous laughter about some happenings in the boat. Miss B. can remember nothing definite about a hat, but is inclined to interpret the allusion as referring to this incident. The "poem" she conceives to be the verses "It seems as if the wondrous land," etc., written at Miss Pope's sitting of Feb. 5th. See Part I. of this report, p. 11.—W. J.]

On the following day Miss B. had a second sitting, and R. H. asked "How is Nellie?" [Nellie is a member of Miss B.'s

household, presumably unknown to Mrs. Piper, about whom R. H. always used during his lifetime to inquire.]

On the night of Hodgson's death, Miss B., whom I described above as having "psychic" aptitudes, had received a strong impression of his presence. She now asks:

MISS B. Yesterday you said you had "called and called" me. When did you ever call me?

Just after I passed out I returned to you and saw you resting . . . and came and called to you telling you I was leaving. . . .

MISS B. Did I not answer?

Yes, after a while.

MISS B. What did I do?

You arose and seemed nervous. I felt I was disturbing you. I then left.

MISS B. Do you not recall another time when I was sure you were there and I did something? . . . What did I do at one o'clock, Christmas morning?

I saw you, I heard you speak to me once, yes. I heard you speak to some one, and it looked like a lady. You took something in your hand, and I saw you and heard you talking.

MISS B. Yes, that is true.

I heard you say something about some one being ill, lying in the room. [Nellie was ill in my room.—M. B.]

MISS B. Yes, that is true. I also said something else.

You said it was myself.

MISS B. Yes, I said that. Anything else?

I remember seeing the light, and heard you talking to a lady. [Correct.—M. B.]

MISS B. The lady did something after I talked to her.

You refer to the message, she sat down and wrote a message for me. [I do not understand what is meant

by this, unless it be a confused reference to Miss Pope's reception of a message to me in the sitting of Feb. 5th. —M. B.] [See Part I., p. 11.—W. J.]<sup>1</sup>

There was nothing more of interest from Hodgson at this sitting. Dr. Bayley, to whom reference was made in connexion with Owl's Head, at Miss Bancroft's first sitting, had two sittings in April, in which the hearty and jocose mannerisms of R. H. were vividly reproduced; but there was a good deal of confusion, owing to Dr. Bayley's lack of familiarity with the handwriting; and the evidential material, so far as the Hodgson-control (whom we are alone concerned with) went, was comparatively small. One passage was thus:

R. H. Get that book I sent you?

DR. B. I received the book right, after your death.

[Hodgson had addressed some books and some cards to be sent to friends as Christmas presents. They were mailed after his death on December 20th. It should be added that Miss Bancroft had at her sitting of Feb. informed Rector that such a book had come to her, and Rector associated her and Doctor Bayley as friends.]

Have you seen Billy? [My friend Prof. Newbold.—B.]

DR. B. No, have you any word for him?

<sup>1</sup>A *propos* to Miss Bancroft's "psychic" susceptibility, at a sitting on October 17th, 1906, which Mrs. M. had with Mrs. Piper, the following words were exchanged:

Mrs. M. Any other messages, Dick?

R. H. Not for him [the person last spoken of], but tell Margaret it was I who produced that light she saw the other night.

The sitter immediately wrote to Miss Margaret Bancroft, with whom she had recently become acquainted, to ask (not telling her of the message) whether she had had any special experiences of late. Miss B. answered: "I had a very curious experience on the morning of the 14th. At four o'clock I was awakened from a sound sleep, and could feel distinctly the presence of three people in the room. I sat up and was so attentive that I hardly breathed. About nine feet from the floor there appeared at intervals curious lights, much like search-lights, but softer, and there seemed to be a distinct outline of a figure. . . . This lasted probably from fifteen to twenty minutes . . . when I went into a sound sleep."

Ask him if he remembers the day we went to the seashore and we sat on the beach, and I told him how I hoped to come over here any time, only I wanted to finish my work. And ask him if he remembers what I told him about my getting married.

DR. B. I don't know anything about it. That's a good test.  
[Proves to have been correct.—W. J.]

Also ask him if he remembers what I said about the children of my old friend Pilly.

[W. R. N. remembers R. H. telling him of a certain "Pilly," but forgets about the children.]

No one living could know this but Billy. . . .

I ask if you recall the fishing process.

DR. B. Why, Dick, it will be very sad fishing without you.

[R. H. and I had done much deep-sea fishing together, but my supposition that this was meant may have deflected him from some explanation of the "fishing" process of the controls at the sittings.—B.]

I wonder if you remember Miss Nellie.

DR. B. Perfectly.

Give her my kindest regards. . . . Got your feet wet!

DR. B. Tell me more about that, Dick.

Do you remember how I put my pipe in the water? Do you remember my putting my coat on the seat, and my pipe got into the water? Remember ducking?

DR. B. Ducking?

I said plunge.

DR. B. Plunge?

Yes! Let's take a plunge.

DR. B. Yes indeed!

ALL. . . .

DR. B. Who was along with us, Dick?

Jess—. . . I got it in my head. [Dr. Jessup is correct.—B.]

Do you remember the Head? Oh I think it was the best summer I ever had. Best, best, best. . . . Do you remember laugh about Mitchell? Laugh? [This *might* refer to a very distinct incident involving a friend named MacDaniel.—B.] Idiosyncracies . . . [What immediately followed was illegible.]

On the next day, April 4th, Dr. B. says to Hodgson:

DR. B. Give me your password if you can to-day.

Password? I had no less than forty. One was shoeing.  
Yes, yes, do you remember?

DR. B. Of course I don't remember about your passwords; but you wrote Mrs. Bayley a charade of your own making, and if you can give the answer to that it will be a splendid test.

Shoo fly, shoo fly? [It runs in my head that these words were answers to charades propounded last summer, but I can get no confirmation and may be mistaken.—B.]

DR. B. I have the letter with the charade here. (Puts it into the medium's hand.)

Doctor, this is *peacemaker*, *peacemaker*. I gave this word in my letter. Shoo fly.

[Miss Bancroft writes: "I have a dim recollection about 'peacemaker'. I feel very sure about 'shoo fly'."] ]

DR. B. I will look it up. [There were two charades in the letter handed to the medium, but the words given answer neither of them.—B.]

Do you remember anything about that awful cigar and my joke about it? [Mrs. Bayley remembers a cigar so huge that neither R. H. nor I would smoke it. He finally broke it up and smoked it in his pipe. This may have been the joke referred to.—B.]

Doc, [This was not R. H.'s usual way of addressing me.—B.] that is peacemaker! And to Mrs. B. I felt I said shoo fly. If you knew the difficulties I am having, you would smile out loud. . . . Can you play ball?

DR. B. Well, H., neither of us were very active ball-players in the country.

Listen, do you remember our late hours?

DR. B. Indeed I do. [R. H. and I used to sit out on the porch smoking to untimely hours.—B.]

Got your sleep made up yet?

DR. B. Not quite.

Next followed some rather unintelligible as well as illegible references to skinning fish and baling a boat. Then :

Do you remember how we tried to make many words out of one? [Compare Piddington's Report, *Proceedings*, Vol. XXII., p. 65.—W. J.]

DR. B. Yes.

And the fun we had?

DR. B. Yes. [R. H. had enjoyed doing this with some of the ladies at Owl's Head.—B.]

Do you remember reading in the evening?

DR. B. Well enough.

Remember the joke I told you about Blats [Blavatsky] . . . and her tricks? [Correct, but matter of common knowledge.—W. J.]

DR. B. Now, Dick, do you remember some of the words of the song which we all sang so much, and which you brought there last summer?

Song? awful! song?

DR. B. It begins "Come, I will sing you."

Oh yes!—gone out of my head like a shot!

DR. B. Yes, Dick.

Listen, let me tell you something. Do you remember a little song I sang to the children which went like this: "Little Popsey Wopsey . . . Chickey Bidy Chum . . . all . . . I am tired.

DR. B. Dick, that was splendid, I remember it well. [Known also to Mrs. Piper.—W. J.]

Do you remember my palming tricks?

DR. B. Yes. [Known also to Mrs. Piper.—W. J.]

And how you all seemed to enjoy them? . . . I am getting clearer since I have met you here. It helps in recalling many things I had almost forgotten. Listen, do you remember my recitation of a Hindoo?

DR. B. No, I don't remember that.

Which reads like this: "I think till I'm weary of thinking—

DR. B. Yes, I know that well. [Known also to Mrs. Piper.—W. J.]

Do you remember my letter to Will, in which I told him of the delight of the place? [Possibly a misreading for "depth of the piece"].

DR. B. Who is Will?

Will James. Or perhaps I didn't read it to you after all.

DR. B. No, I didn't hear that letter. [I recall no letter either about the "place," or about the "piece," but my memory is so bad that that proves nothing. I have heard the "piece," however, and heard it from Hodgson.—W. J.]

. . . Ask Margaret Bancroft if she remembers telling me about you and Mrs. Bayley giving her a watch. I am glad I found her after I came over. I think she is perfectly sincere and a light. [Miss Bancroft writes: "I felt badly about accepting the watch, and consulted Mr. Hodgson about it. He said a number of things about my sensitiveness, and after that I felt all right about the watch. I don't think I told anybody of this interview with Dr. Hodgson. As regards my 'sincerity,' the last

talk I had with him was on that very subject. . . . He said he would certainly convince Dr. Bayley of my sincerity." The reader knows already that Miss Bancroft is a "light."]

On June 20th, 1906, Miss Bancroft had her third sitting. Some days previous to this, Mrs. M., an old friend of Hodgson, had taken to her sitting a cross which remained among his effects, and asked the R. H. control for directions concerning its disposition. The control had ordered it to be sent to Miss Bancroft; and when he appeared to Miss Bancroft at the sitting a few days later almost his first word was:

Get my cross?

MISS B. Yes, thank you very much. . . .

A Mascot I send to you.

MISS B. Yes, I know you sent it to me.

I shall be with you when you are in the cottage.

MISS B. Do you know that I have bought the place?

Of course I do. I understand pretty well what you are about. [Miss B. had been enabled to buy the land at Owl's Head since her sittings in the previous February.]

. . . There is more help coming to you to enlarge the house.  
. . . You remember you thought it necessary to have more room.

MISS B. Yes, I remember very well.

Did you see me in your dream with my trousers rolled up at the bottom?

MISS B. I am not sure that I did.

I spoke to you and you replied.

MISS B. I have seen you several times in dreams.

Remember my knock?

MISS B. When did you knock?

You were sleeping.

MISS B. I remember twice when I thought some one knocked my arm.

But I woke you, I certainly did. [Correct.]

MISS B. Can't you do me a favor by knocking now? . . .

Not while I keep on speaking. You wish me to knock your arm now, eh? I cannot do so and keep on speaking. Do you remember the evening I told you about my sister Ellen's boy?

MISS B. I do not recall it.

Yes, Ellen's boy and his passing over.

Do you remember—Enid? What I told you about her? And her poems? A scholarship and her poems?

MISS B. I remember all that. [He had told me a great deal about this niece Enid.—M.B. Mrs. Piper denies knowledge of her existence.—W. J.]

Listen. I am in the witness box! I am trying to help you to recognize me. . . .

Do you remember anything about celery root? . . . [See above, p. 41.]

Margaret do you remember the walk through the woods?

MISS B. Yes, I remember it.

Do you remember "Let us sing of—sing you  
Let us sing of a"

MISS B. Yes, I understand.

No you do not. No song.

MISS B. Yes I do. Try and give it to me.

I am but you do not understand. You do not understand *at all*. Let us sing the old song.

MISS B. You mean the song "Come let us sing"?

Yes.

MISS B. Tell me what it is.

I am telling you. 'Come let us sing the—what would you sing—sing—sing

[He taught us a song last summer "Come I will sing you" and the response was "What will you sing me?" "I will sing you one oh," etc. My idea is that he wanted to have me give him the next line and probably he would have been able to give me the text and perhaps the whole song or part of it, but I did not understand what he wanted to do.—M. B.]

Miss Bancroft had two more sittings, on Dec. 2nd and 3rd, 1907. On Dec. 2nd Hodgson seemed to be cognizant of certain changes in the Owl's Head place, that there was a new wall-paper of yellow colour, a new bath-house, a new pier and platform, etc., none of which facts Mrs. Piper was in a way to have known.

He also showed veridical knowledge of a very private affair between two other people, that had come under Miss Bancroft's observation. There was, however, some confusion in this sitting, and R. H. was not "strong." The results were better on Dec. 3rd, but the evidential parts do not lend themselves well to quotation, with one exception, as follows:

Miss B. Don't you remember something that happened that you helped us in?

I remember that one evening —

Miss B. What happened that evening?

We got a little fire and I helped. Yes.

Miss B. Yes, that is true.

Put it out — the fire — — I remember it well.

Miss B. What did you tell us to get before the fire occurred?

Before the fire?

Miss B. You told us to get something for the house.

I said you ought to get a — in case of fire — pail, yes.

[Here the hand drew three long horizontal lines, which might have meant shelves, and beneath them the outline of a vessel with a cover.]

MISS B. What are they for?

Water pails water pails — yes, fire buckets — fire  
Yes, I did.

[He told us in Maine, when we were experimenting with Mrs. Austin by automatic writing, to get fire buckets and put them up on the shelves, which we did long before the fire occurred. He warned us of this fire many times, but no one seemed to pay much attention to it but myself.—M. B.]

MISS B. What did you tell us to put on them?

Go on you will find that I am not asleep.

MISS B. I never thought you were asleep.

So much for the Owl's Head record, which, as the reader sees, follows a not incoherent thread of associated facts.

Few of the items were false, but on the other hand it must be remembered that a mind familiar with Hodgson's tastes and habits might have deduced some of them (swimming and fishing, for example) *a priori* by combining the two abstract ideas "Hodgson" and "seaside." Leakages impossible now to follow might also account for the medium's knowledge of such items as the names Nellie, Jessup, etc., for her connecting Dr. Bayley with "Billy," etc. For the "fire-buckets," "watch," "sincerity," and other items, it would seem necessary to invoke either lucky chance or telepathy, unless one be willing to admit spirit-return. I should say that I have condensed the record considerably, leaving out some matter irrelevant to Owl's Head memories, some repetitions and all the talk that grew out of slowness in deciphering the script.

Dr. Bayley himself wrote me after his sittings: "They are pretty good, and have about convinced me (as evidence added to previous experience) that my much loved friend is still about. I had had either four or six sittings, some of them in conjunction with Miss Bancroft, before R. H.'s death. I do not think that Mrs. Piper normally knew me by name, or knew that I was from Philadelphia or that I knew Newbold. I realize that the average reader of these records

loses much in the way of little tricks of expression and personality, subtleties impossible to give an account of in language. As I look over the sittings and realize my own blunders in them, I cannot always decide who was the more stupid, the communicator, or myself."

PROFESSOR NEWBOLD'S SITTINGS.

The message given to Dr. Bayley for "Billy" (*i.e.* Prof. Wm. R. Newbold) makes it natural to cite next the experience of this other intimate friend of R. H. Prof. Newbold had two written sittings, on June 27th and July 3rd, 1906, respectively, Mr. Dorr being present both times. On June 27th, after a few words with Rector, Hodgson appears, and the dialog continues as follows:

R. H. Well, well, of all things! Are you really here! I am Hodgson.

W. R. N. Hallo, Dick!

Hello, Billy, God bless you.

W. R. N. And you, too, though you do not need to have me say it.

I wonder if you remember the last talk we had together—

W. R. N. I do remember it, Dick.

I can recall very [well all I said to you that glorious day when we were watching the waves. [Our last talk was on a splendid afternoon of July, 1905, at Nantasket Beech.—N.]

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, I remember it well.

I told you of many, many predictions which had been made for me. I told you I hoped to realize them but I would not consent to give up my work.

W. R. N. First rate, Dick, you told me just that.

I would give up almost anything else but my work——my work——and my pipe.

W. R. N. Dick, that sounds like you.

Don't you remember?

W. R. N. Do you remember something *I* told *you* on the boat going to Nantasket?

Yes of course. Long ago you wrote me of your happiness and I wrote back and asked you if you were trying to make me discontented.

W. R. N. I don't remember, but I have your letters and will look it up.

[This allusion to my "happiness" is very characteristic. He often spoke to me of it.—N.]

Look over your letters and you will find my memory better than yours.

W. R. N. Like as not! Like as not!

I have hoped to boss things on this side. [R. H. had often told me of his belief that if he could "pass over" and communicate, many of the difficulties of the spiritualistic theory would disappear. I can mentally see him now shaking his pipe at me threateningly and saying: "If I get over before you, Billy, I'll make things hot for you."—N.]

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, so you did.

Therefore if I seem bossy pardon me — Bossy — Pardon.

W. R. N. Go ahead, Dick, be as bossy as you will. I have nothing to say to you until you get through.

*Good.* That's what I wish. I remember telling you how you must not write more about your happiness.

W. R. N. Did you tell me this on the trip or in the letter?

In the letter.

W. R. N. First-rate! I have piles of letters. I will go through them.

If you do you will find it *all*. [I cannot find it in the letters.—N.] Oh, I am so delighted to see you of all persons.

W. R. N. Well, you were a dear friend of mine.

I had the greatest affection for you.

W. R. N. Do you remember what a friend you were to me, years ago?

Yes, I do, and how I helped you through some difficulties?

W. R. N. I should say you did, Dick!

But I do not care to remind you of anything I did! —  
only as a test — only as a test.

W. R. N. Yes, that's right, we *wish* a test.

I remember how delighted I was with your experiences.

W. R. N. You were!

You told me much about them which I recall most clearly—  
recall.

W. R. N. Right! [What follows refers to the trip to Nantasket and  
was probably preceded by some reference to it on my  
part which the record omits.—N.]

You and I had smoked — [Correct.] until I got a dip —

W. R. N. Right!

— and we walked along the shore —

W. R. N. Right, Dick!

and waited until the boat returned. [We had to wait  
perhaps twenty or thirty minutes.—N.]

W. R. N. Dick, what did we do while waiting?

We took a dip and went to hear some music.

W. R. N. No, *we* did not; *you* took a dip.

I say *I* took a dip and you sat and watched me.

W. R. N. After that what did we do?

We went and got some — let me think! —

W. R. N. I can't read that, Dick.

A drink — drink. I asked you to have cigar. Cigar  
— and something else.

W. R. N. That is true about the cigar. Go on.

At the moment I do not think what it was.

W. R. N. All right, it is not worth the trouble.

Do you remember anything about sausages I cooked?

W. R. N. Indeed I do! Many a one you cooked for breakfast.

Yes, and how you laughed about them.

W. R. N. I said they were the best I ever tasted, Dick.

Yes, I remember.

[A passage is omitted here in which veridical reference is made to a private subject of which we had talked.—N.]

I do not catch all you say, Billy, — too bad. Speak slowly, old chap, and I shall understand. I asked you about your [word undecipherable] and you said you thought you were not half worthy of all you had received.

W. R. N. Well, I thought it; I don't remember saying it to you.

You did say it once in my room.

W. R. N. I can believe it, Dick; I have thought it a thousand times.

[A remark was next ascribed to me which exactly expressed what I had thought, though I am forced to omit it.—N.]

I gave you a long explanation of the whole *modus operandi* and you were a very good listener. Do you remember the day?

W. R. N. I do not remember the details. I remember in a general way talking about it. [I recalled the details clearly as soon as I had thought it over. The "long explanation" was made in H.'s room in June, 1904.—N.]

All right. Good, listen. And you and I met in New York and I advised you what to do?

W. R. N. Was it in New York or Boston? In Boston, wasn't it?

You and I went to the theatre.

W. R. N. Certainly we did.

And then to my club.

W. R. N. Right, yes, that is right, Dick.

And to my rooms where I cooked sausages and made tea.

W. R. N. Yes, you gave me the first good tea I ever tasted!

[Statements are here omitted relating to a person deceased.

True on the whole, but not evidentially significant.—N.]

Do you remember that clergyman —

W. R. N. Try the last word again.

Who was a medium in Philadelphia?

W. R. N. I do, I think I do —. A clergyman who was an  
Episcopalian.

Yes. Went into trance. Yes.

W. R. N. Yes, I know what you are thinking of, but he was not a  
clergyman.

[Word — name perhaps — written several times but  
undecipherable. Some years later I *had* met a clergy-  
man who was mediumistic, but did not go into trance.  
Hodgson knew of his case, but had never met him.  
The two cases seem to be confused.—N.]

And his wife was afraid of him.

W. R. N. No, I don't remember that, Dick.

You have them mixed up in your mind.

W. R. N. Very likely.

I saw a young man who went into trance.

W. R. N. That's right, yes.

And do you remember my opinion of him?

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, I remember your opinion of him. Tell me  
what it was!

I thought he was hysterical and induced his trances through  
hysteria. I remember telling you about [name given,  
but omitted here], and by the way, Billy, do you recall  
his ideas on this subject?

W. R. N. Yes, I do. His ideas?

Yes, all about it. The devil?

W. R. N. He thought it was the devil?

Yes. The devil has nothing to do with it. I laughed when you told me about it.

W. R. N. Now, Dick, have you any more to say?

Do you remember the story I told you about the girl who said her prayers?

W. R. N. No, I do not remember. Perhaps I might if you told me.

Yes. And when she got through she said she was sure she thought the devil was prompting her prayer. [I remember no such anecdote.—N.]

W. R. N. No, Dick; but I want you to tell me, if you possibly can, something I told you on the boat going down to Nantasket, just before we got there.

About your home-life?

W. R. N. No, it was about my work, Dick.

Oh yes, I recall you said you would like to give it up.

W. R. N. No, Dick, I did not say that. [I had just resigned my eight years of Deanship and was very glad of the relief. If R. H.'s remark referred to that fact, it was apposite.—N.]

Not for anything! [Seemingly meant to suit my answer.—N.]

Do you remember our talk about hypnotism?

W. R. N. Yes, we talked about hypnotism.

And hypnotising students. You said your mind was on your work and how much you liked it.

W. R. N. Yes, I said that. There was a lot more I said, but never mind it. Let it go.

I will give it all eventually—eventually. Yes. I am in the witness-box.

W. R. N. Poor Dick!

Poor Dick! Not much! Poor Dick! Not much! Fire away! I recall your psychological teaching very clearly.

[R. H. next goes "out" to rest, but returns after a brief interval of Rector.]

Hello, Billy! All right? All right now? You told me you were working on some interesting work which you enjoyed better than anything you had done in years. You said you would not give it up for anything!

W. R. N. Right, Dick. Now before we got on the boat, to go out to Nantasket, what did we do?

I believe we went to the hotel and got some bite [word not clear] to eat.

W. R. N. No! No!

Drink [word not clear] No! Do let me think what I gave you. I asked if you would get weighed.

W. R. N. I believe you did. I am not sure now. Don't bother about it any more. It is not worth the trouble.

I did! You said I — and joked about your weight. Don't you recall?

W. R. N. I don't remember, but I often have joked about my weight and I dare say I did with you then.

I remember drinking — Yes, and I said I did not take beer. Yes, you asked me, I remember well. I remember the water well. You smoked cigar, and I also — pipe — [I smoked a cigarette, but not a cigar.—N.]

W. R. N. No, let us drop the trip to Nantasket, Dick. I think you have told me all you remember about the trip to Nantasket that you can.

I have it surely right as it was the last time I saw you! I remember it as it was the last time I saw you.

W. R. N. That's right, Dick, it was the very last time I saw you.

Do you remember the stand near the boat where we went in and got a "Life" — [I don't recall this.—Some illegibility followed.—N.]

W. R. N. Where we went to get a what, Dick? Write that once more! [Word undecipherable.]

You do not get it very clearly, Billy.

W. R. N. No, it's long since I have had experience in the writing. I understand. Therefore I am doing my best to make it clear.

[The communicator now professes to report a conversation which I had with a definitely named person who died some years ago—N.]

He told me he did not approve or believe in your having — anything to do with this subject. [True.—N.] He thought it was the devil and you had better keep out of it.

W. R. N. Right.

He said he would try to reach you if such were possible.

[I saw the person here referred to not long before his death. He made no reference of any kind to the future life. Such a promise as is here ascribed to him is quite incongruous with all I ever knew of him—I do not believe the thought would have occurred to him.—N.]

He did tell me so and before he left his body he felt a little different. But he wants to see you very much — very much indeed and tell you how he understands your life now.

W. R. N. Can you tell me from him what he said before he passed out of the body?

Yes. He said you said "Come to me if you are alive."

W. R. N. No, Dick, you've got that wrong!

Wait a minute. Listen, Billy. You said "I wish you to be with me."

W. R. N. No, Dick, that's wrong; you had better try to get it another time when the light is clearer.

Listen, Billy, you said when you get to the — the other side you will know — know. [Incorrect.—N.]

W. R. N. Did I say that to him, Dick?

He told me you said so. He said so, and he thought he was not going to live here. I have talked with him about it often and he thought he would not live.

[W. R. N. now repeats that so long as the "light" is not clear R. H. had better not stay.]

Yes. Yes, I will return when the light is clear and tell you clearly.

W. R. N. Now, Dick, many of my relatives have passed to your side and if you see them you can give me their names.

Good. I will find all I can and report to you. I will report to you.

W. R. N. Names are good tests.

Exactly, I remember. Look up those letters. I am going now. I am holding on to a figment! Goodbye! God bless you! R. H.

The Hodgson part of the sitting of July 3rd was as follows:

(R. H.) I am Hodgson.

W. R. N. Hallo, Dick!

I am glad to meet you, Billy, old chap! How are you?  
First-rate?

W. R. N. Yes I am, Dick!

Capital. Good. So am I. I come to assure you of my continued existence. Do you remember what I said to you the last time I left you after our experiment with that young man? I said hysteria was the cause of his trances.

W. R. N. Exactly, yes.

He could not kadoodle me.

W. R. N. That is a new word to me.

I made that up—ask Judah.

[Mr. Judah writes of his sitting of March 27th or 28th: "I tried to get R. H. to repeat a word which he had used in one of our long conversations. It was 'kadoodle'—I think he must have coined it for the occasion. He could not or at least did not give it."—As this attempt was during a trance, the reference to Mr. Judah in Newbold's sitting has no evidential bearing.—W. J.]

Tell me about your wife—is she well?

W. R. N. Yes, better than for these many years.

Capital! Glad to hear it. Remember me to her.

W. R. N. All right, Dick, I will.

Give me something of my own. . . . I shall be clearer in a minute. Billy, do you remember how depressed you were at one time, and how I used to advise you?

W. R. N. Indeed I do.

And did it not result in good?

W. R. N. Indeed it did, Dick. You did advise me just as you say, and it did result in good.

I have memories, many memories—let me remind you of a few of them as I recall them now.

W. R. N. All right, Dick. Go ahead.

Do you remember the man with whom you and I experimented in Philadelphia?

Do you remember the name he gave me as being my sister's?

W. R. N. No, Dick, I don't remember, but go on and give me all you can about him.

Do you remember when I asked him about hypnotism, he said he was not a good subject, and you and I had a good laugh over it after he left.

W. R. N. I don't remember that either, Dick. Do you remember who was with us when we experimented with him?

You, myself,—yes, and Dr. Hyslop. [Hyslop was not there.—W. R. N.] Do you remember a young student in whom you and I were intensely interested. We hypnotized him several times, but with little result. [Possibly refers to a medical student whom I hypnotized in 1899 with very interesting results. I wrote to H. and arranged experiments (apparent clairvoyance). But H. never saw him.—N.]

W. R. N. Bless my soul! I think it must be \*\*\*\*. I will get your letters. I may find something about it in them.

You certainly will. Have you looked up my last reference?

W. R. N. I can't; I'm in Boston and my letters are in Philadelphia.

Oh, of course, I understand. Help me if I seem stupid.

W. R. N. No, you are not stupid, I am.

I wish to remind you of things of which you are not thinking, so far as possible.

W. R. N. Yes, that's good.

Do you remember the case of a clergyman—?

W. R. N. Yes, certainly. I remember a clergyman who lived in Philadelphia and thought he had supernormal experiences, and I told you about them.

Why didn't you say so before? Yes. I just told you about the case of hysteria—and you were interested in telepathy. [The young clergyman had professed to have telepathic powers—he cheated.—N.]

W. R. N. Is this the case you were talking about at the last sitting?

Of course he was. You asked me what experiments we tried with him.

W. R. N. That is right.

I said telepathic experiments, and some were pretty poor.

W. R. N. Right.

Do you remember, Billy . . . ? [A veridical reference here which W. R. N. prefers to omit.]

W. R. N. Yes, Dick.

I am delighted to recall your telling me you were happy and contented and how pleased you were with your classes—.

W. R. N. Right, Dick.

And how readily your work was being accepted. You were so happy about it all. It gave me great delight.

W. R. N. Thank you.

You certainly did. You also told me of your advancement in a material way.

W. R. N. Yes, I told you that, that is right.

Which pleased me greatly.

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, it did!

You were my counterpart—counterpart in expressions of delight. You and I were very pleased and I told you I would not give up my work even for a wife.

[I don't recall this remark, but it sounds characteristic.—N].

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, you are very clear and easy to understand.

I am glad to hear it. I am trying my level best to give you facts.

W. R. N. Very good.

I said my pipe and my work would not be given up even for a wife. Oh how you have helped me, Billy. Yes, in clearing my mind wonderfully.

[I omit here a few sentences from R. H. in which he credits me with a remark I have often made to him, seldom to others.—Important veridically.—N.]

W. R. N. Dick, I have told you that twenty times.

You have certainly, but Billy, I used to say it was the most important thing in the world I believed.

[Refers next to psychical research and in particular to the Piper case.]

You said you could not understand why so many mistakes were made, and I talked you blind, trying to explain my ideas of it.

W. R. N. Dick, this sounds like your own self. Just the way you used to talk to me.

Well if I am not Hodgson, he never lived.

W. R. N. But you are so clear.

Of course I am, I am drawing on all the forces possible for strength to tell you these things.

You laughed about the ungrammatical expressions and said, why in the world do they use bad grammar?

W. R. N. Yes, Dick, I said that.

I went into a long explanation and attributed it to the registering of the machine. You were rather amused but were inclined to leave it to my better understanding.

W. R. N. You mean, I think, that you understood the subject better than I and I took your explanation? You mean that therefore I was inclined to accept your explanation?

I think I do. I find now difficulties such as a blind man would experience in trying to find his hat. And I am not wholly conscious of my own utterances because they come out automatically, impressed upon the machine.

W. R. N. Perfectly clear.

Yes, I am standing beside you.

W. R. N. Can you see me, Dick?

Yes, but I feel your presence better. I impress my thoughts on the machine which registers them at

random, and which are at times doubtless difficult to understand. I understand so much better the *modus operandi* than I did when I was in your world. Do you remember you said you could faintly understand—faintly understand the desire on the part of a friend after coming to this side to communicate with his friend on the earthly side. But why he would choose such methods were the most perplexing things to you.

W. R. N. No, Dick, you are thinking of some one else. I never told you that.

Yes you did in the case of the man I am talking of, who pretended to give manifestations, and you were right in your judgment.

W. R. N. Yes! I think I did say it in that case.<sup>1</sup>

While in other cases you were open and clear to my explanations—and agreed with me, especially regarding G. P.

W. R. N. Right! First-rate! That is all very characteristic.

You were a good listener always, Billy, always. [R. H.'s talks and mine *had* been rather one-sided!—N.] Do you remember a trip we had into the mountains years ago? I am trying to recall. We took a bit of clothing and spent several days together.

W. R. N. No, Dick, I never did that with you, you are thinking of somebody else.

<sup>1</sup>When the "choice of such methods" was first mentioned, I supposed it referred to the notion that mediums ought to be persons of distinguished character or abilities. I therefore disavowed it, for I have never seen any reason for the assumption. When it was referred to the "men who pretended to give manifestations," I doubtfully acknowledged it, supposing it referred to the so-called "physical phenomena," especially those of Stainton Moses. The objections upon which I used to lay most stress in my talks with H. were (1) the astonishing ignorance often displayed with reference to subjects which the supposed communicators must have been acquainted with; (2) the whole Emperor group, its historical and philosophical teachings, its supposed identity with the similar group in the Stainton Moses case and its connection with the seed-pearls, perfumes and other physical phenomena which Moses professed to produce. To these objections H. could never give an answer; they are not here mentioned.—N.

Wait a moment. Let me ask you if you and I did not pass a few days together one summer.

W. R. N. No, Dick, only in Boston.

Sure? All right, let me narrate what is in my mind.

W. R. N. Right! Go on.

I remember we were together one summer and we went to the woods or —— and lay under some trees and had a smoke and discussed several problems. Where was it, Billy?

W. R. N. Not with me, I think, Dick, unless it was somewhere in Boston.

I think it may have been in Boston.

W. R. N. Go on to something else, Dick. I don't remember that.

I remember when you were with me I got very much interested in some letters you wrote me after your return home——your saying some things puzzled you very much. [A first-rate veridical statement from R. H. has had to be omitted here. The matter referred to had, however, been mentioned at sittings in 1895.—N.]

W. R. N. By jingo! that is true, Dick. It was ten years ago.

Do you remember a woman named Wright? [Name not clearly written.]

W. R. N. No, not at this moment.

Did I not tell you about her the day we were at the shore?

W. R. N. Ah, Dick, I think you did, but I do not remember it well enough to make it a good test.

Do you remember my remark about the way in which the name was spelled?

W. R. N. No, I don't remember it, Dick.

Also about her giving me some very interesting things?

W. R. N. No, Dick, I do not remember it. Do you remember telling me that day that when you got on the other side you would make it hot for me?

I do indeed remember it well. I said I would shake you up—shake you up.

W. R. N. That is just the word you used Dick. [I am not now sure the word was “shake you up,” but it was some such colloquial expression.—N.]

Yes, I did. Oh—I said, won’t I shake you up when I get over there if I go before you do! And here I am, but I find my memory no worse than yours in spite of the fact that I have passed through the transition stage—state. You would be a pretty poor philosopher if you were to forget your subject as you seem to forget some of those little memories which I recall, Billy. Let me ask if you remember anything about a lady in [Chicago] to whom I referred.

W. R. N. Oh Dick, I begin to remember. About eight or nine years ago was it, Dick? [Here follows the “Huldah”-material already quoted in my Part I. of this report. See pp. 20-26.—W. J.]

Do you remember some trouble I had with Mrs. F. . . ?

W. R. N. I have some remembrance. [I recall this, but no details.—N.]

I told you about her. Yes, Mrs. — Mrs.! I told you about her, and you thought I did right at the time.

W. R. N. Dick, did you get any names of those relatives of mine on your side?

Oh yes, names on my side. Yes, I found lots of your uncles and aunts. Your wife’s also. Do not make me any worse than I am.—Do you remember my explanation about Proctor?

W. R. N. No.

Don’t you remember my old friend?

W. R. N. No.

The astronomer? . . . Do you remember my little talk about the satellites?

W. R. N. Yes, I do.

And about the inhabitants of Mars?

W. R. N. I do indeed, I remember very well. [This was in 1895.—N.]

Do you remember my own talk independent of sittings, and my talks on the subject of canals? [R. H.'s own interest in these things was known to the trance-controls, by conversations he had held with them at earlier sittings.—W. J.]

W. R. N. Yes, indeed, I remember.

This is what I am reminding you of. I heard you and William—William discussing me, and I stood not one inch behind you.

W. R. N. William who?

James.

W. R. N. What did William James say? [I recall this talk with W. J. last week.—N.]

He said he was baffled but he felt it was I talking—at one moment—then at another he did not know what to think.

[Perfectly true of my conversation with N. after his sitting with Mrs. P. a week previous.—W. J.]

W. R. N. Did you hear anything else?

Yes, he said I was very secretive and careful.

W. R. N. Did you hear him say that?

He did. He said I was, —— I am afraid I am.

W. R. N. I don't remember his saying so. [I remember it.—W. J.]

I tell you Billy he said so.

W. R. N. Did he say anything else?

He paid me a great compliment, [I recall this.—N.] I fear I did not deserve it. However, I am here to prove or disprove through life. Amen.

Remember my explanations of luminous ether? [A favorite subject of discussion with him, possibly known to Mrs. Piper.—N.]

Good bye. God bless you and your good wife. Remember me to her. Adieu.—R. H.

Some persons seem to make much better “sitters” than others, and Prof. Newbold is evidently one of the best. The two sittings of his from which I have quoted are more flowing and contain less waste matter, perhaps, than any others. If the R. H. who appeared therein be only a figment of Mrs. Piper’s play-acting subconscious self (compare R. H.’s words “I am holding on to a figment” on page 69 above), we must credit that self with a real genius for accumulating the appropriate in the way of items, and not getting out of the right personal key. Not many items were certainly wrong in these sittings, and the great majority were certainly right. If two of the omitted communications could have been printed, they would have greatly increased the veridical effect. Professor Newbold gives me his own resultant impression in the following words: “The evidence for H.’s identity, as for that of other communicators, seems to me very strong indeed. It is not absolutely conclusive; but the only alternative theory, the telepathic, seems to me to explain the facts not as well as the spiritistic. I find it, however, absolutely impossible to accept the necessary corollaries of the spiritistic theory, especially those connected with the Imperator group, and am therefore compelled to suspend judgment.”<sup>1</sup>

After Dr. Newbold’s, it would seem natural to cite Dr. Hyslop’s sittings, which were six in number during the period which this report covers. But he has himself given an account of them, with inferences,<sup>2</sup> so I refrain. It may suffice to say

<sup>1</sup>Compare Newbold’s previous account of his experience of the Piper-phenomena, in the S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Vol. XIV., pp. 6-49.

<sup>2</sup>In the *Journal of the American Society for Psychological Research*, 519 West 149th Street, New York, Vol. I., Nos. II., III., and IV.

that Hyslop had already been converted, largely by previous experiences with Mrs. Piper, to the spiritist theory<sup>1</sup> of such phenomena, and that he held it in a form similar to that to which Hodgson had been led, supposing namely that at the time of communicating, the communicating spirits are themselves in a dreamy or somnambulant state, and not in full possession of their faculties.<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Hyslop's sittings in the present series, although they seem to me to contain no coercive evidence for a surviving Hodgson, as contrasted with the field of alternatives—I doubt if Hyslop would make any such claim for them—yet lend themselves easily to the notion that Hodgson, in a somewhat amnesic and confused state, was there. They pursued a train of ideas most natural for such as Hodgson to have followed, and they confirmed Dr. Hyslop in the theory which he had already reached as the line of least resistance in these matters:—Hodgson was probably communicating as best he might under the available conditions. He led the conversation back to his and Hyslop's earlier experiences, recalled the differences of opinion they had had over the proofs of Hyslop's report on Mrs. Piper in 1901; alluded to a meeting which they were to have had in New York if Hodgson had not "passed over," and to what Hyslop wished to discuss there; reminded Hyslop of some experiments on mediums which they had made together in earlier days, and of messages purporting to be from R. H. which Hyslop was receiving through another medium at present; discussed other mediumistic persons, and especially the aptitudes of a certain young "light" in whom Hyslop was interested; sent a veridical message to Dr. Newbold; recalled a certain "cheese" of which he and Hyslop had partaken on a unique occasion together; gave advice regarding Hyslop's practical perplexities in the crisis of S.P.R. affairs; expressed his sympathy in the most appropriate fashion; etc., etc.—most of this in an exceedingly scanty way, to be sure, but with such naturalness of tone, and following such

<sup>1</sup> See his Report on Mrs. Piper in Vol. XVI. of the S.P.R. *Proceedings*.

<sup>2</sup> Compare with this Mrs. Sidgwick's well-argued theory that they are not trying to communicate at all, but that the medium in trances is able telepathically to tap their minds in spots, just as she taps the minds of the sitters. (*Proceedings S.P.R.*, Vol. XV., pp. 16-38.)

characteristic lines of association with the sitter, that the latter's view was, as I said, only confirmed.

A reader of the records, not having Dr. Hyslop's Mental *Appereptionsmasse* to interpret them by, might fail to find them convincing. My own feelings towards these sittings is what it is towards all the others. The interpretation of them will depend on that of the whole larger mass of material with which they belong.

#### W. J.'S SITTING.

The evidence is so much the same sort of thing throughout, and makes such insipid reading, that I hesitate to print more of it in full. But I know that many critics insist on having the largest possible amount of *verbatim* material on which to base their conclusions, so I select as a specimen of the R. H. control's utterances when he was less "strong," one of two voice-sittings which I had with him myself (May 21st, 1906). The reader, I fear, will find it long and tedious, but he can skip.

(R. H. enters, saying :)

Well, well, well, well! Well, well, well, that is — here  
I am. Good morning, good morning, Alice.

MRS. W. J. Good morning, Mr. Hodgson.

I am right here. Well, well, well! I am delighted!

W. J. Hurrah! R. H.! Give us your hand!

Hurrah, William! God bless you. How are you?

W. J. First rate.

Well, I am delighted to see you. Well, have you solved those problems yet?

W. J. Which problems do you refer to?

Did you get my messages?

W. J. I got some messages about your going to convert me.

Did you hear about that argument that I had? You asked me what I had been doing all those years, and

what it amounted to? [R. H. had already sent me, through other sitters, messages about my little faith.—W. J.]

W. J. Yes.

Well, it has amounted to this,—that I have learned by experience that there is more truth than error in what I have been studying.

W. J. Good!

I am so delighted to see you to-day that words fail me.

W. J. Well, Hodgson, take your time and don't be nervous.

No. Well, I think I could ask the same of you! Well, now, tell me,—I am very much interested in what is going on in the society, and Myers and I are also interested in the society over here. You understand that we have to have a medium on this side while you have a medium on your side, and through the two we communicate with you.

W. J. And your medium is who?

We have a medium on this side. It is a lady. I don't think she is known to you.

W. J. You don't mean Rector?

No, not at all. It is —— do you remember a medium whom we called Prudens?

W. J. Yes.

Prudens is a great help. Through Prudens we accomplish a great deal. Speak to me, William. Ask me anything. What I want to know first of all is about the society. I am sorry that it could not go on.

W. J. There was nobody to take your place.

If it can't go on then it must be ——

W. J. Be dissolved. That is what we have concluded. There is nobody competent to take your place. Hyslop is going to,—well, perhaps you can find out for yourself what he is going to do.

I know what he is going to do, and we are all trying to help Hyslop, and trying to make him more conservative, and keener in understanding the necessity of being secretive.

W. J. You must help all you can. He is splendid on the interpreting side, discussing the sittings, and so forth.

I know he is, but what a time I had with him in writing that big report. It was awful, perfectly awful. I shall never forget it. [Hodgson had tried to get Hyslop's report in *S.P.R. Proceedings*, Vol. XVI, made shorter, a fact possibly known to the medium.—W. J.]

There is one thing that troubles me. Harry [James] asked me about a letter which he had received [at a previous sitting, from a certain C. B., asking whether R. H. had tried to appear to her since his death]. I have not got that cleared up in my mind yet. It was regarding some one to whom I have returned since I passed over.

(A letter from a certain H——t asking a similar question, was here offered as an "influence;" and held on the medium's forehead.)

I did not return to C. B. Did you get her message?

W. J. I have not got her message. Harry may have it.

I also gave a message to Mrs. C. Did you get that?

W. J. Either George Dorr or Harry must have got that. You see I have not seen everything yet, having been in California.

Oh, yes, I forgot. William, can't you see, don't you understand, and don't you remember how I used to walk up and down before that open fireplace trying to convince you of my experiments?

W. J. Certainly, certainly.

And you would stand with your hands in your trousers pockets. You got very impatient with me sometimes, and you would wonder if I was correct. I think you are very skeptical.

W. J. Since you have been returning I am much more near to feeling as you felt than ever before.

Good! Well, that is capital.

W. J. Your "personality" is beginning to make me feel as you felt.

If you can give up to it, William, and feel the influence of it and the reality of it, it will take away the sting of death.

W. J. But, R. H., listen a moment. We are trying to get evidential material as to your identity, and anything that you can recollect in the way of facts is more important than anything else. For instance, do you recollect a Churchill case, Mr. Churchill, who came on from New York or from the West with some materials, and you and I had some discussions? I have just had that worked up in the laboratory. Can you remember anything of that?

Oh, yes. I had Osler in my mind also and I was preparing some answers for that. [Piddington on May 2nd had told the controls that some MS. notes of a reply to Osler had been found among Hodgson's papers.—W. J.] I think perhaps you have heard about that, have you?

W. J. Yes, I have heard about that.

Well, Sanger, or Zangler? the clergyman, do you remember him?

W. J. No, I don't remember. [Impossible to identify.—W. J.]

Don't you remember a young man whom I was going to see? I think I told you about it, William,—quite sure I did,—who was a clergyman, and who was afraid of his condition, going into the trances. Don't you remember that at all? Ask Alice. Perhaps she remembers.

MRS. J. No, I don't remember that account of the clergyman. I think perhaps Hyslop may remember it. I remember something about dream-cases and what we called death-bed experiences. [Possibly the case mentioned to Newbold, see above, p. 71.]

W. J. Yes, this clergyman had had some of those, had he?

He had had some experiences in dreams. And then there was a case in Washington that I was anxious to look up. Do you remember my speaking anything about that?

W. J. No, I am not so sure of that. Do you remember a —— case, a Gower case?

Oh yes, you recall that to my mind. And do you remember the description of the man whose finger,—there was something peculiar about his finger?

W. J. Yes, I do remember that. I remember that incident.

[I seemed to, at the moment, but the memory has failed to become distinct.—W. J.]

Well, have you found anything more about that?

W. J. No, I have not. If you could recall what kind of a case the Gower case was, it would be interesting. [For this case, concerning which R. H. had been in correspondence, see Miss Johnson's report in S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 94.]

Wasn't that a case of hysteria?

W. J. No, not hysteria. He corresponded with you and wanted you to come and see the phenomena. Do you remember?

I do remember a physical-manifestation case, and I remember an aural case,—the voices came. And I think the Gower case was physical manifestation, if I remember. [No voices.—W. J.]

W. J. That is correct. Can you remember what the physical manifestations were?

Well, I hope I will not get these mixed up in my mind, because I have several that are passing through my thoughts. There was one where they had the table manifestations, and they had also some experiments in knocking about the room after retiring. Do you remember those? [The table had moved without contact, but I fail to remember any "knocking."—W. J.]

Mrs. J. Yes.

I think I had those correct in my mind, and then I think—do you remember the case where the hands appeared, as though they were in phosphorescent light?

W. J. I don't remember that case.

I have those two now just on my mind at the moment. I think they will come to you clearly presently. Now tell me a little bit more about the Society. That will help me keep my thoughts clear. I think, William—are you standing?

W. J. Yes, I am standing.

Well, can't you sit?

W. J. Yes.

Well, sit. Let's have a nice talk.

W. J. The society is going to disband. Hyslop and Piddington and George Dorr and I have agreed to that, and we have written a circular, which we have signed, to the members, and I don't think there will be any objection. The American work will have to go on apart from the English work in some way.

Well, then about Hyslop's society. I think he will succeed in that. I feel very much encouraged in regard to that.

W. J. I certainly hope he will succeed.

I want to ask you if you have met at all Miss Gaule?

W. J. Maggie Gaule? I have not met her. [A medium known to R. H. during life, probably also known by name to Mrs. P.—W. J.]

I am very much disappointed in some respects. I have tried to reach her. [In 1908, Hyslop got messages from R. H. through Miss Gaule.—W. J.] I have reached another light and I did succeed in getting a communication through.

W. J. What was your communication?

I did not believe in her when I was in the body. I thought she was insincere, but I believe her now and know that

she has genuine light, and I gave a message recently to a Mrs. M. in the body. I referred to my books and my papers and several other things. Her name is Soule. [R. H. acted as Mrs. Soule's control, and something like incipient cross-correspondences were obtained.—W. J.]

W. J. Soule?

A. M. R. [the stenographer] I know her.

And now, as I go through my rooms [which were still full of R. H.'s effects] I have talked over the matters there very well. Now let me see—tell me more about the Gower case. Are you going to look that up?

W. J. I stopped at ——— on my way from California, and I saw all the witnesses, and I think it is a good case.

I am inclined to think he is honest and I will investigate and if possible I will give some manifestations there that you will know that it comes from me. I will do everything I can because I am so anxious, and if I cannot prove—wait a moment—will you spell this after me? [Very dramatic change—as if some sudden influence had come upon him.]

W. J. Yes.

It is Zeivorn [spelt out].

[W. J. pronounces each letter after it is spoken by R. H.]

Now put those letters, repeat those backwards, and I have left that word written and I think you will find it among my papers. It is original and nobody saw it, nobody would understand it. [Not found there.—W. J.]

W. J. That is a password?

Yes.

W. J. Now, Hodgson, do you remember any sealed test that you left with Myers or me or anybody?

I left one with Lodge.

W. J. Did you leave one with me?

Yes, I left one with you. [I myself supposed so, but have found none.—W. J.]

W. J. Can you recall anything about that? It is very hard to remember those things.

It is sealed, if I remember rightly. Now wait a moment. That is one you will find in the office—in my rooms, rather—and I think I left it in a book.

W. J. This one that you just spelt out?

Yes.

W. J. Did you make that word up?

I spelt the word, made the word up and spelt it out because I knew no one living could guess at it or hit it.

W. J. It does not mean anything in particular?

Nothing at all.

W. J. Just a password?

Yes. And the one I gave to *you*, I shall have to think that over, William.

W. J. Think that over, Hodgson. Think it over carefully. Take your time and see if you can get it, because it is very important.

I shall do so, and I want to do it in a way to exclude if possible the theory of clairvoyance. Now I want to ask you a question, may I, while it is on my mind? Have you ever asked Harry if he asked Dr. Bayley about that charade? [Reference to a former sitting with H. J., Jr.]

W. J. Yes, there is an answer from Dr. Bayley, about a charade containing the word "peacemaker." [Dr. Bayley recalls no such charade.—W. J.]

Yes.

W. J. And that is all right.

The answer?

W. J. Yes. [I print the record as it stands—it seems incoherent on my part.—W. J.]

Well, about the cheese? Please answer me.

W. J. The cheese is all right. That is a very — [The “cheese” recalled to me another charade.—W. J.]

No, no,—I want to know if he gave it to Bayley.

W. J. Yes, that was sent to Bayley by Harry, I think, but whether *you* gave it to Bayley originally, I am not sure. [R. H. did so give it, Dr. Bayley informs me, but Mrs. Piper says she also had heard this charade from R. H.—W. J.]

Well, I wish you would find that out. You see these things are all going through my mind, as though there was a panorama of things going through my vision.

W. J. Hodgson, what are you doing, apart from Mrs. Piper?

Why, I am working with the society, William, trying to reach other lights, trying to communicate, trying to get into touch with you all.

W. J. Why can't you tell me more about the other life?

That is a part of my work. I intend to give you a better idea of this life than has ever been given.

W. J. I hope so.

It is not a vague fantasy but a reality.

MRS. J. Hodgson, do you live as we do, as men do?

What does she say?

W. J. Do you live as men do?

MRS. J. Do you wear clothing and live in houses?

Oh yes, houses, but not clothing. No, that is absurd. [Query: the clothing? or the statement made about it? —W. J.] Just wait a moment. I am going to get out.

W. J. You will come back again?

Yes

RECTOR. He has got to go out and get his breath.

(When R. H. comes back he recommences talking about his passwords:)

Philanthropist—That is one of the words, but—wait a moment—that is Lodge's. Now I remember that very well. The other one which I have spelled—you wait a moment—there is something troubling me regarding the—do you remember another case? I want to recall it to your mind. Do you remember a case about a young girl, a young woman that I told you about?

W. J. Yes.

I have seen her since I came over. Yes, I think Hyslop brought her here to me.

W. J. Yes.

Well, that is the nearest approach to a case of hysteria of anything I know. Do you remember my telling you about it, William?

W. J. Well, I do remember a case. I don't fully identify it.

It was about a year before I passed out.

W. J. I do remember a young woman. Have you been influencing her?

No, I tried to reach her two or three times, one or two messages, but they did not come from me.

W. J. I don't know whether it is the same case. The one I meant had been in an asylum.

That is the one. I tried to get the message through but I found it was a failure. [Evidently not the person I was thinking of.—W. J.]

[The letter from H——t (see above, p. 82) was here again put into Mrs. Piper's hand.]

I tell you one person, William, who has light, and that is B.

W. J. Have you been able to get near Mrs. B.?

Yes, I gave her a communication since I passed out. You ask her if she received anything like this: "I have seen the Doctor and I put my hands palms to your face facing you." You ask her if she got anything of that kind. [Mrs. B. informs me that she has had no direct impression from Hodgson since his death, but numerous messages from him through mediums on the Pacific Coast.—W. J.]

W. J. How did you get this message to her?

Appeared to her and thought she saw me. She put her hand up. She had just retired.

W. J. What time of day was it?

Just retired.

W. J. Gone to bed? Do you remember, Hodgson, any one by the name of H——t?

A medium?

W. J. No, not a medium, a friend.

You mean lived in Providence? [The letter was from a Mr. H——t in England.—W. J.]

W. J. No, I don't think he lived in Providence.

Oh yes, I remember Mr. H——t who used to live in Providence and from whom I received a great many letters. [Unknown, as yet, to W. J.]

W. J. Have you tried to have any communication with him?

No, I don't think I have. I think I shall try, though. I have had some communications, you know, here. I have met several people. But independently I have gone to very few.

[The conversation then goes on about the lost ring (compare Part I. of this report, pp. 13-18), and about the "cheese"-charade. Then I, thinking of a certain pitfall which the children and I had dug for Hodgson, asked:]

W. J. Do you recall any incidents about your playing with the children up in the Adirondacks at the Putnam camp?

Do you remember,—what is that name, Elizabeth Putnam? She came in and I was sitting in a chair before the fire, reading, and she came in and put her hands, crept up behind me, put her hands over my eyes, and said “who is it?” And do you remember what my answer was?

W. J. Let me see if *you* remember it as I do.

I said, “Well, it feels like Elizabeth Putnam, but it sounds like——

W. J. I know who you mean. [R. H. quite startled me here because what he said reminded me of an incident which I well remembered. One day at breakfast little Martha Putnam (as I recall the fact) had climbed on Hodgson's back, sitting on his shoulders, and clasped her hands over his eyes, saying “Who am I?” To which R. H., laughing, had responded: “It sounds like Martha, but it feels like Henry Bowditch”—the said H. B. weighing nearly 200 lbs. I find that no one but myself, of those who probably were present, remembers this incident.—  
W. J.]

Do you realize how difficult that is?

W. J. It is, evidently; yet you were just on the point of saying it. Is it a man or a woman?

A man.

W. J. Have you any message for that man now?

Dr.—not Putnam—Dr. Bowditch!

W. J. That is it, Bowditch.

“Sounds like Dr. Bowditch.”

W. J. It was not Elizabeth Putnam, but it was Charlie Putnam's daughter.

Charlie Putnam, yes. Now do you remember that?

W. J. But what is the name of Charles Putnam's daughter?

Of whom? Annie? Oh, she is the youngest. She is the young lady. And there was a Mary—Mamie. [False names.—W. J.]

W. J. But you *must* remember Charles Putnam's daughter's name!

I have got it now in my mind. I could not think of it at first. Well it has gone from me at the moment. Never mind. That is less important than the thing itself.

W. J. Do you remember another thing? We played a rather peculiar game. Possibly you may recall it. Had great fun.

I remember playing leap-frog with the boys. Do you remember that?

W. J. Yes, that was frequent.

Yes, that is a very—and then do you remember how I played bear.

W. J. Yes, bear is first-rate. I was not there, but I heard them talking about your playing bear. I remember one morning you and I had a very—

Well, what you remember I might not remember at all.

W. J. Of course not. You played so often with them that you may have forgotten.

Besides all that, I am trying to avoid things that are in your mind if possible, to remind you of other incidents. Well, let me see—what were we playing—we were playing—you remember at all playing marbles with the children?

W. J. No.

That is another game I played with them. [False.] Oh, such fun, such days as those were. You say you and I were playing with them particularly?

W. J. Yes, perhaps that will come to you.

That may come to me at some other time. But all those things you ask me about the children,—well, that is

the first thing I can remember. That is all right so far as it goes. Now let me see what other thing I can tell you that no one living knows but myself. Do you remember a place where we used to go, where I used to go and smoke? I used to go with Billy [my son.—W. J.] a great deal, and it was high up.

W. J. Doubtful.

Yes, do you remember that at all? By the way, how is Billy?

W. J. Billy is first-rate.

He has gone away, hasn't he? [Correct, but not evidential.]

W. J. Yes.

I think he is now on the right track and hope he will keep so. Give my deepest love to him and tell him how much I think of him and also the rest.

W. J. Yes.

[Some non-evidential matter here is omitted.]

Excuse me, it seems to me you are peculiarly dull concerning my affairs at my rooms. I suppose Harry knows more about them than you do.

W. J. Do you think it would help you to have the "light" taken to your room there in your old surroundings? Do you think you could get more influences and feel nearer?

Perhaps I could. I left everything so suddenly, I had so little time to make my plans and my arrangements. I suppose you understand that?

W. J. Yes, indeed. Would it be advisable to take the "light" to your rooms?

Well, I should rather come here and mention my individual things from time to time and then take her there later, . . . because there are many things which I wish

to locate and point out and dispose of from time to time and things I would like to mention. I wish you would repeat to me those letters, to see if you have got them correct.

W. J. Zeivorn.

That is right. It is written in cipher, the one word, and written by itself, on a large sheet of paper, carefully folded and placed in one of my books, and it is in a book of poems I think, and I think it was Longfellow's, and the book has a scroll up and down the back, and the binding is green in color, and I don't think any one living knows that but myself. [Not found.—W. J.]

W. J. Yes, are there any particular things that you would like to have sent to Australia?

I have talked that over pretty carefully with Piddington and I think those arrangements are already made.

W. J. Yes, that is right.

I wanted to recall,—Alice, perhaps you can help me to recall,—what was that balcony where we used to go and smoke?

Mrs. J. Why, yes, it was up-stairs, the upper story of the piazza. [If Chocorua were meant, Mrs. Piper had seen this "balcony."—W. J.]

That is all right. That is perfectly clear. She always did have a clear head. . . . Now I want,—William, I want one thing. I want you to get hold of the spiritual side of this thing and not only the physical side. I want you to feel intuitively and instinctively the spiritual truth, and when you do that you will be happy, and you will find that I was not idling and was not spending my time on nonsense; and as I thought over all, as it came to me after I entered this life, I thought "What folly! If I could only get hold of him!"

W. J. I wish that what you say could grow more continuous. That would convince me. You are very much like your old self, but you are curiously fragmentary.

Yes, but you must not expect too much from me, that I could talk over the lines and talk as coherently as in the body. You must not expect too much, but take things little by little as they come and make the best of it, and then you must put the pieces together and make a whole out of it. Before I lose my breath, is there any other question you want to ask me? What do you think of that bust, William? I don't quite approve of it. I think it is all nonsense. [On March 12th Mr. Dorr had told the R. H. control that Mr. Biela Pratt had begun to model a bust of him for the Tavern Club.]

W. J. I do not know anything about it. I have not seen it. But it is a natural thing for the Tavern Club to want of you, they were so fond of you, all of them.

I want to know, William, what is that you are writing about me?

W. J. I am not writing anything about you at present.

Aren't you going to?

W. J. Perhaps so.

Can I help you out any?

W. J. Yes, I want you to help me out very much. I am going to write about these communications of yours. I want to study them out very carefully, everything that you say to any sitter.

Well, that is splendid. You could not have said anything to please me more than that.

W. J. I am glad you approve of my taking it in hand.

Yes, I do. Of all persons you are the one.

W. J. I'll try to glorify you as much as I can!

Oh, I don't care about that. I would like to have the truth known, and I would like to have you work up these statements as proof that I am not annihilated.

W. J. Precisely so. Well, R. H., you think over that "nigger minstrel" talk. [Compare Part I., p. 18.] If you get the whole conversation in which that nigger-minstrel talk was mentioned by me, it would be very good proof that it is you talking to me. [He failed to get it.—W. J.]

Well, I shall do it. I want you to understand one thing, that in the act of communicating it is like trying to give a conversation over the telephone, that the things that you want to say the most slip from you, but when you have ceased to talk they all come back to you. You can understand that.

W. J. I understand that they come back.

But I shall give that out to some one here, you may be sure, and I hope to see you—this is only the beginning, and I shall be clearer from time to time, but the excitement of seeing you and all has been very beautiful to me.

W. J. If you can manage to get a little more hold of the conditions on the other side, it will be very good.

Yes, that I shall do. You must remember I have not been over here an endless number of days? but I wish they would all try as hard as I have tried to give proof of their identity so soon after coming over.

W. J. I wish you would more and more get Rector to let you take his place. You do all the talking and let Rector have a rest. And it would be much better, I think, for you to take control of the light, and for me particularly.

Yes, that is a very good suggestion, very good.

W. J. Because I want to write this up, and the time taken by Rector is so much lost from you.

But he repeats for me very cleverly, and he understands the management of the light. I want to speak with Alice a moment, and then I shall have to leave you, I suppose.

MRS. J. Mr. Hodgson, I am so glad to know that you can come at all.

Well, you were always a great help to me, you always did see me, but poor William was blind. But we shall wholly straighten him out and put him on the right track. . . . I am sorry to be off so soon, but I know there are difficulties in remaining too long. They often told me too frequent communication was not good for any one. I understand what that means now better than ever. I am going to look up one or two cases and put you on the track of them, William, when I can communicate here,—at the same time repeat the messages elsewhere.

W. J. That is first-rate.

I think that is one of the best things I can do. Now I am going to skedaddle. Good bye, William. God bless you. Give my love to the boys.

As I review this somewhat diluted sitting, the only evidential point in it seems to me to be the anecdote about the Putnam child (see above p. 91). The incident was very distinct in my own memory, but seems to survive in no one else's. I was hoping for another answer altogether, about a certain "pitfall," namely, and this one was a surprise. Either tapping my subconscious memory, or a surviving R. H., would be possible explanations of it, unless it were more reasonable to assume that some one had told the anecdote to Mrs. Piper at the time, and that her memory was now reproducing it. Obviously the reader's solution will depend on his sense of "dramatic probability," and that will differ with the line of his previous experiences. For myself, considering the possibilities of leakage, impossible to trace, in the whole case, I cannot be positively sure that Mrs. Piper's knowledge of this anecdote was super-normal at all. The rest of the sitting, although quite compatible with the spiritual explanation, seems to me to have but little evidential force.

The same is true of the second sitting which I had a fortnight later. Much of it went over the same matters, with no better results. I vainly tried to make Hodgson remember

a certain article he had written for *Mind* in 1885, and to give the name of Thomas Brown, whom he had praised there. Neither could he remember anything about the American Society for Psychical Research, as he found it on arriving in this country. He rightly mentioned his brown dress-suit and his broad-toed boots when questioned about his costume at that time, but these facts were known to Mrs. Piper. He named a "Grenier" whom my son should have met at Paris, but whom we could not identify. He insisted much on my having said of a certain lady "God bless the roof that covers her." I trust I may have said this of many ladies, but R. H. could lead me to no identification.

The only queer thing that happened at this sitting was the following incident. A lady had sent me a pair of gloves as an "influence" to elicit, if possible, a message from her husband, who had recently committed suicide. I put the gloves into Mrs. Piper's hand, naturally without a word of information about the case, when "Hodgson," who had been speaking, said, with a rather startling change of his voice into a serious and confidential tone, that he had just seen the father (known to us both in life) of a young man who a few years before had made away with himself. "I never knew it till I came over here. I think they kept it very quiet, but it is true, and it hastened the father's coming." The apparent suggestion of a suicide, even though it were another one, by the gloves, and the instantaneous change of tone in the communicator, forcibly suggested to me the notion that the gloves were shedding an influence of the kind called "psychometric." The facts given by R. H. about the suicide were veridical; but, with the possibilities of leakage in the case, they cannot count in any way as evidential.

After middling or poor sittings like these of my own, it seems hardly worth while to quote a *bad* one, to show the full range of the phenomenon. Were I to do so, an appropriate one for the purpose would be that of Miss Anne Putnam. There is no doubt that certain persons are good "sitters" naturally, while others seem to impede the telepathic flow. On certain days, also, communication may be less free. Hodgson had sent repeated messages to the Putnams to come

and talk with him, and he had been so extremely intimate a member of their family group, that the best results might have been expected. Miss Putnam's sitting, but for one item (see below, p. 114), was nevertheless extremely poor; and Dr. James Putnam's was hardly to be called good, although he was introduced to Mrs. Piper by name. The sitter's difficulty in reading the written record may perhaps account for R. H.'s lack of fluency in this latter case. There was one apparently supernormal item which unfortunately I must omit.

I will end my specimens by some extracts from two sittings of Miss M. Bergman [pseudonym]. Miss Bergman had been in previous years an excellent sitter, and was known by name to Mrs. Piper. She dwelt in another state, and her social connections were not in Massachusetts. At her first visit, December 31st, 1907, the communications were in writing and she had much difficulty in deciphering them. At the second sitting, January 1st, 1908, the voice was used and things ran much more smoothly.

At the first sitting R. H. quickly appeared, spoke of having seen two brothers of the sitter in the spirit-world (names known to trance-personalities, and non-evidential), made a wrong statement about Christmas at the cemetery, and then, being asked to recall his meetings with Miss Bergman on earth, said:

I will. Do you remember one evening when I came to the hotel where you were staying and I sat and told you of my experiences till it got very late and I asked you if you would not [illegible] I told you so very many jokes, you and Miss Pope were convulsed with laughter over it. [Correct, Hotel Bellevue, Boston, March 1905.—M. B.]

After a while, Hodgson reappears, saying:

Do you remember my telling you about my German friends?

MISS B. No.

Perhaps Miss Pope remembers.

[I found later that Miss Pope well remembered Dr. Hodgson's telling about his "German friends" and that it was

that which "convulsed us with laughter" the evening he had stayed so late when calling at our hotel. At this point I had become so discouraged by the great difficulty of reading the writing and the confusion in making things clear that I felt very indifferent and inert in mind.—M. B.]

Bosh.

MISS B. What do you mean by that?

You understand well.

MISS B. Bosh?

Yes, I say bosh. *B O S H B O S H*

MISS B. What do you mean by that?

Oh I say it is *all bosh*.

MISS B. What is bosh?

Why the way you understand. It is simply awful.

MISS B. That sounds like you, Dr. Hodgson.

I could shake you.

MISS B. How can I do better?

Put all your wits to it, you have plenty of them.

MISS B. I will do my best. Go on.

*Do.* Do you remember I used to chaff you.

MISS B. Indeed I do.

Well I am still chaffing you a bit just for recognition.

MISS B. It helps.

Amen. Now you are waking up a bit.

MISS B. I am.

Capital. So am I. Don't you remember I told you I would show you how to manage if I ever came over before you did.

Miss B. Indeed I do. [Sitter had often heard Dr. Hodgson say this.]<sup>1</sup>

Well now I am trying to show you. I used to scold you right and left and I shall have to keep it up, I think, unless you do better.

Miss B. I deserve it.

If you do not who does?

Miss B. You are your old self.

Oh I am the [two words not deciphered] I was. You'll find it out before I finish.

Miss B. Have you a message for Theo [Miss Theodate Pope]?

Yes indeed give her my love and tell her I am not going to forsake her. I do not think she has been keeping straight to the mark.

Miss B. What do you mean by that?

I think she has been getting a little mixed up in her thoughts and ideas of us over here. I am the same old sixpence and I wish she were the same. I want to see her very much.

[“Theo” had had no sitting for a long time, her interest being lessened by the circumstance that records of several sittings had not been kept systematically, as before Dr. Hodgson's death. At this point the hand wrote comments relating to circumstances which had arisen in Theo's life since Dr. Hodgson's death. These comments were singularly appropriate.—M. B.]

At the second sitting, when R. H. appeared, the voice began speaking very rapidly and heartily.

Well, well, well, this is Miss Bergman; hullo! I felt as though I could shake you yesterday.

<sup>1</sup>The bracketed comments in the third person are by Miss Bergman herself.

MISS B. Well, I was pretty stupid. I think we can do better to-day. Please repeat some of the messages you wrote and left sealed to be opened after your death.

One message I gave to Will. If I remember correctly it was "there is no death."

MISS B. Who is Will?

Will James.

MISS B. Are you sure you are now giving this quotation correctly as you wrote it?

Of course I am. [There followed an outburst spoken so rapidly that the sitter could not get it down, declaring that the speaker had not lost his memory any more than had the sitter, etc.]

MISS B. Did you leave other messages?

Yes, another. "Out of life"—how did I quote it—"Out of life, into life eternal." . . . I know positively what I wrote. I have promised Piddington to repeat through Mrs. Verrall all the messages that I give through this light. Every message given at this light must be repeated through Mrs. Verrall before any one opens any of my sealed messages. Mrs. Verrall is the clearest light except this which I have found. Moreover she has a beautiful character and is *perfectly honest*. That is saying a great deal. [The reader will notice that Mrs. Piper had been in England and returned, at the date of the sittings with Miss Bergman.—W. J.] Do you remember my description of luminiferous ether, and of my conception of what this life was like? I have found it was not an erroneous imagination.

[The above words were spoken with great animation and interest. The sitter, although remembering Dr. Hodgson's description of "luminiferous ether," felt that she was not qualified to enter into a conversation of this character and began to say something else. The voice interrupted her:]

It is never the way to get the best results by peppering with questions. Intelligences come with minds filled and questions often put everything out of their thought. I

am now going to give you a test. Mention it to no one, not even to Theo. Write down, seal and give to Alice or to William.

[Directions here followed regarding such a test. After these directions the voice spontaneously took up another subject.]

Your school was—[correct name given], was it not? [Already known to controls, but probably not to Mrs. Piper when awake.] You are changing, your brother tells me, and he is very pleased. He thinks you are going to broaden out and do a better work. He is very glad. Do not undertake too much. Make use of assistance in the work.

MISS B. Where were your lodgings in Boston?

Well, now, that has brought back to my mind Boston—. Certainly—there were some doctors in my building—George Street—no—not George—Charles Street—I—I believe. Now let me see, Charles Street. Up three flights, I think I was on the top. [Correct, but known to Mrs. Piper.—W. J.]

MISS B. Do you know when I was at your lodgings?

You were there? Didn't we have tea together? [False.]

MISS B. No.

Did you come and read papers?

MISS B. No.

Did you go there after I passed out?

MISS B. Yes. I went to get some articles belonging to you, and did them up in rubber cloth.

Capital, that is good. Lodge and Piddington consider it good when I can't remember what did not happen! What was the name of that girl who used to work in my office?

MISS B. I do not remember.

Edmund—Edwards—I am thinking of her going to my rooms to read papers. [Her name was Edmunds, known to the medium.—W. J.]

Now I want to ask you if you remember Australia, remember my riding horseback? Remember my telling you of riding through the park in the early morning with the dew on the grass and how beautiful it was.

MISS B. Yes, yes, I remember that very well. That is fine.

I *am* Richard Hodgson. I *am* *he*. I am telling you what I *remember*. I told you, too, about my preaching. I believed I was in the wrong and I stopped. It hurt some of my people to have me.

MISS B. Tell me about your riding.

I remember telling you about my dismounting and sitting and drinking in the beauty of the morning.

MISS B. Tell me any experiences that befell you while riding.

Oh, I told you about the experience with the fiery horse. You remember he dismounted me. It was the first experience I had in seeing stars. I lost consciousness. I experienced passing into this life. I remember my being unconscious and recovering consciousness. I remember telling you this at the hotel.

[Sitter's mind was filled here with recollections of how Dr. Hodgson had once told her all this when talking with her at the Parker House in Boston, in 1904. He had related just this experience and had said that when he recovered consciousness after being unconscious for some time, it seemed to him he had been in a spiritual universe. He also told her at that time of his having given testimony in Methodist meeting as a lad in his teens, and afterwards giving it up because he became skeptical in matters of faith. This, he said, had troubled some of his kinsfolk. —M. B.]

MISS B. What did you use to order for luncheon when you lunched with us at the hotel?

Oh, I have forgotten all about eating—m—m—I was very fond of protose.

[The sitter did not have "protose" in mind, but remembers Dr. Hodgson sometimes asking the waiter for one of the

prepared breakfast foods, but does not recall its name.  
—M. B.]

When I found the light it looked like a tremendous window, open window. The canopy—do you remember how they used to talk about the canopy? It is an ethereal veil. If your spiritual eyes were open you could see through this veil and see me here talking to you perfectly.

[The sitter did not care to talk about this, although she remembered perfectly Dr. Hodgson's telling her "how they talked about the canopy," so she asked a question referring to the intimate personal affairs of one of her friends. The replies showed a strange knowledge of the circumstances known only to the sitter and her friend, and were entirely *à propos*. The voice then went on speaking, and burst out with what follows, in a tone of mingled indignation and amusement:]

Will thinks I ought to walk into the room bodily and shake hands with him. I heard him say "Hodgson isn't so much of a power on the other side." What does he think a man in the ethereal body is going to do with a man in the physical body? [Seems to show some supernatural knowledge of the state of my mind.—W. J.]

MISS B. To whom did you speak first from that world?

Theodate, yes, Theodate, she was the one to whom I first spoke. [Correct.]

[The sitter now asked to talk with another spirit, and reply was made that R. H. would continue talking until he came. R. H. did this by again referring to the accident in the park. He spoke of being seated when he first told us of the incident, and of getting up and walking around the room as he talked. He said it chanced that this incident had been told to few people, and again dwelt upon having seen stars after falling, having been unconscious, having had visions while unconscious, as if the spirit had left the body and passed into another world. All of this corresponded exactly with fact. Dr. Hodgson had commenced the story seated, and had risen and walked about as he talked.—M. B.]

The accurate knowledge thus displayed of R. H.'s conversations at the hotels in Boston where the ladies stayed, seems to me one of the most evidential items in the whole series. It is improbable that such unimportant conversations should have been reported by the living R. H. to Mrs. Piper, either awake or when in trance with other sitters; and to my mind the only plausible explanation is supernormal. Either it spells 'spirit-return,' or telepathic reading of the sitter's mind by the medium in trance.

I now pass to R. H.'s

#### AUSTRALIAN RECOLLECTIONS.

R. H. has sent many messages, both of affection and for test purposes, to his sister Annie in Australia. Mrs. M., Mr. Piddington, my wife, myself, Mr. Dorr, Miss Pope, Miss Hillard, all received such messages, which were duly transmitted to the sister, on whose replies what follows is based. Some of these messages were too general to serve as good tests (*e.g.* "Do you remember my reading Fenimore Cooper?"); some had been spoken of at previous trances (*e.g.* "Cousin Fred Hyde," "Q," "fly-the-garter," etc. Compare report of Hodgson's own sittings in S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Vol. VIII., pp. 60-67); some awoke no corresponding memory in Miss Hodgson. There are too many of them to quote in full, so I will go rapidly over the more significant ones, taking them in their time-order.

*Melbourne; Latrobe Street; bush in yard with red berries.* [Correct, as to town, street, and bush, berries not recalled by Miss H. Had R. H. ever mentioned Latrobe Street and bush to Mrs. Piper?—of course she knew of Melbourne.]

*Charley Roberts (or Robertson) at the University.* [Not recalled. There was a Roberts at R. H.'s school.]

*Little shed where boys used to play.* [Correct.]

*Sister Rebecca.* [Known in previous trances.]

*Plums in back-yard.* [False?]

*R. H., ten years old, sat with knees crossed at chnreh, and his mother made him sit straight. Sat on his hat to keep other boys from getting it. A man named Hurley made him stop.* [Probably untrue.]

*Sister Annie caught him reading in bed and put out the light.* [Not remembered.]

*Riding horseback.* [Correct.]

*Holidays spent at the Hydcs'.* [Correct.]

*Kendall.* [Name not remembered.]

*Great plates of peas raised in our garden.* [Not particularly recalled.]

*Played fly-the-garter with Tom* [his brother], *Jack Munroe*, and *Roberts.* [No reply from Miss Hodgson about Jack Munroe—the rest true.]

*Father's mines and losses.* [Correct.]

*Description of paternal house.* [Wrong.]

*Sister used to teach him.* [False.]

*Father nervous over children's noise. Mother used to say "Let them enjoy themselves."* [Not remembered.]

*Sister helped him to escape punishments.* [Possibly, when very young.]

*Read Fenimore Cooper.* [Possibly true.]

*Sunday-school poem about stars.* [R. H. wrote juvenile poems—one about "stars" not remembered.]

The account to Miss Bergman of R. H. being thrown from his horse we have already seen (above, p. 104). Miss Annie Hodgson writes of the whole collection of messages sent to her: "To my mind there is nothing striking in any of the statements." She propounded in turn three test-questions of her own to which no answer was forthcoming; and R. H., questioned by a sitter, couldn't remember the name of his schoolmaster in Melbourne. In interpreting responsibly these Australian messages, tapping the mind of the sitters and normal acquaintance with the facts on Mrs. Piper's part<sup>1</sup> must probably

<sup>1</sup>I wrote to Mrs. Piper for the names of H.'s Australian relatives. Here is her answer, which I take to be sincere:

"Boston, Jan. 11, 1909. Dear Mr. James,—In replying to your letter of this morning I will say I am very sorry I cannot help you in finding Dr. Hodgson's relatives in Australia, as I do not know any of them or anything about them, except that he had one sister whose Christian name was Annie, and this was unknown to me until some time after Dr. Hodgson's death. Mrs. [Lyman] might be able to tell you, as it was she who told me. She had some photographs of Dr. H. which I admired, and she said she would give me one later, but those she had she was going to send to his sister Annie in Australia. I was struck by the familiarity with which she used the name and concluded that she must have known her. Dr. Hodgson never talked with me about his relatives or anybody else's; on the contrary he most carefully avoided all such subjects when talking with me. I haven't the slightest idea who 'Q.' was, I have never heard the name so far as I am aware.

"I am sure my daughters do not know any more than I do about Dr. Hodgson's family.—I am very sincerely yours,

L. E. PIPER."

be excluded as explanations. If a naturalistic interpretation were insisted on, fictitious construction of incidents probable in any boyhood, and accidental coincidence of a certain number of these with fact, would have to be chiefly relied upon. Against fictitious construction is the fact that almost none of the names that had figured in Hodgson's own sittings in 1887 and 1888 (S.P.R. *Proceedings*, Vol. VIII., pp. 60-67) were used for reproduction. "Enid," "Ellen," "Eric," were added rightly; and the three names of "Q." (Hodgson had apparently given only the first one to Phinuit—see *loc. cit.*, p. 60) slipped out in full, as it were inadvertently, on May 29th, 1906, Hodgson insisting at the same time that her identity must never be revealed to the outside world. The possibility that Hodgson had given "Q.'s" entire name to later controls than Phinuit cannot, however, be eliminated.

On the whole this series baffles me as much as the rest. It may be spirit-return! it may be something else! Leaks of various sorts are so probable that no sharp conclusion can be drawn.

I think that by this time the reader has enough documentary material to gain an adequate impression of the case. Additional citations of sittings would introduce no new factors of solution. The entire lot of reports, read *verbatim*, would, it is true, give a greater relative impression of hesitation, repetition, and boggling generally; and the "rigorously scientific" mind would of course rejoice to find its own explanatory category, "Bosh," greatly confirmed thereby. But the more serious critic of the records will hold his judgment in suspense; or, if he inclines to the spiritistic solution, it will be because an acquaintance with the phenomenon on a much larger scale has altered the balance of presumptions in his mind, and because spirit-return has come to seem no unpermissible thing to his sense of the natural dramatic probabilities.

Before indulging in some final reflections of my own on Nature's possibilities, I will cite a few additional evidential points. I will print them in no order, numbering them as they occur.

(1) First of all, several instances of knowledge that was veridical and seemed unquestionably supernormal. These were

confidential remarks, some of which naturally won't bear quotation. One of them, plausible after the fact, could hardly have been thought of by any one before it. Another would, I think, hardly have been constructed by Mrs. Piper. A third was to the effect that R. H. thought now differently about a certain lady—she was less “selfish” than he had called her in a certain private conversation of which he reminded the sitter.

(2) Again, there was intense solicitude shown about keeping the records of a certain former sitter from publicity. It sounded very natural and Hodgsonian, but the trance-Mrs. Piper might also have deemed it necessary.

(3) The following incident belongs to my wife's and Miss Putnam's sitting of June 12th, 1906:—Mrs. J. said: “Do you remember what happened in our library one night when you were arguing with Margie [Mrs. J.'s sister]?”—“I had hardly said ‘remember,’” she notes, “in asking this question, when the medium's arm was stretched out and the fist shaken threateningly,” then these words came:

R. H. Yes, I did this in her face. I couldn't help it. She was so impossible to move. It was wrong of me, but I couldn't help it.

[I myself well remember this fist-shaking incident, and how we others laughed over it after Hodgson had taken his leave. What had made him so angry was my sister-in-law's defence of some slate-writing she had seen in California.—W. J.]<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Prima facie*, the following incident also sounds evidential:

R. H. Ask Margie if she remembers chaffing me about sitting up late to entertain people.

This happened, as I well remember, at Chocorna, but at this distance of time it is impossible to be sure whether it was not on the occasion when Hodgson and Mrs. Piper were there as visitors together. The evidence is therefore “leaky.”

Another case of leaky evidence is the following, which *prima facie* seems striking enough:

In Hodgson's rooms a quantity of MS. was found, in a cipher probably invented by himself. In the sitting of Jan. 23rd, this cipher was spontaneously mentioned by the control:

R. H. Is this the Piper-case? the Piper phenomenon? . . . There are some private records which I should not wish to have handled. Let George and Piddington go through them and return them. The

(4) At a written sitting at which I was present (July 29th, 1907) the following came:

You seem to think I have lost my equilibrium. Nothing of the sort.

W. J. You've lost your handwriting, gone from bad to worse.

I never had any to lose.

Mrs. M. It was a perfectly beautiful handwriting [ironical].

Ahem! Ahem! William, do you remember my writing you a long letter once when you were ill? You had to get Margaret [my daughter—W. J.] to help you read it and you wrote me it was detestable writing and you hoped I would try and write plainer to a friend who was ill, next time. How I laughed over that, but I was really sorry to make you wade through it. Ask Margaret if she remembers it. [Perfectly—it was in London.—M. M. J.]

(5) Another item which seems to mean either telepathy or survival of R. H., came out at a sitting of Miss Pope's on Feb. 7th, 1906.

I am not going to make a botch of anything if I can help it. Not I. Do you remember my telling you what I would do if I got over here first.

Miss P. You said several things about it.

I said if I couldn't do better than some of them I was mistaken. I said some of them were awful. Remember? And if I based my opinion on what they tried to give I should expect to be said to be in the trick. *Remember?*

Miss P. Of course I remember.

---

cipher—let Harry and George take care of them. That was my cipher and no one living can read it. I shall explain it later. [He never has explained it, though it was spoken of later several times.]

I think it probable here that a question about the cipher from the sitter, preceding the control's reference to it, has been accidentally omitted from the record. If so, there is nothing remarkable in the incident. The record was not stenographic, and neither my wife nor the son who took the notes is now confident that the question was not asked.

Do you remember a story I told you about my old friend Sidgwick? Don't you remember how I imitated him?

Miss P. Yes, what word did you say about Sidgwick? [I had not deciphered the word "imitated."—T. P.]

If I believed in it they would say I was in the trick.

[Still not understanding, T. P. said:]

Miss P. What about Sidgwick?

I imitated him.

Miss P. What did you do?

I said s-s-s-should-be i-n th-e t-r-i-c-k.

Miss P. I remember perfectly, that's fine.

No one living could know this but yourself and Mary Bergman.

[It was most interesting to see the hand write these words to imitate stuttering, and then for the first time it flashed over me what he had some time ago told Mary and me about Sidgwick, imitating at the same time Sidgwick's stammer: "H-Hodgson, if you b-b-believe in it, you'll b-be said to be in the t-trick." I cannot quote the exact words, but this is very nearly right.

Sidgwick referred to Hodgson's belief that he was actually communicating, through Mrs. Piper, with spirits. He meant that people not only would not believe what Hodgson gave as evidence, but would think he was in collusion with Mrs. Piper.—T. P.]

(6) At a sitting of Miss Pope's and mine, Oct. 24th, 1906, R. H. said of Miss P.—"She goes on and puts on bays and piazzas, changes her piazzas, her house, makes it all over again." As this was literally true, and as no one in Boston could well have known about it, it seemed like mind-reading. [R. H.'s saying is possibly explained, however, by a previous sitting (April 16th) of Miss Pope's, in which another of Mrs. Piper's controls had already of his own accord made the same veridical remark, so that the fact had got, however inexplicably, into the trance-consciousness, and could be used by the controls indiscriminately.]

(7) On Jan. 30, 1906, Mrs. M. had a sitting. Mrs. M. said:

Do you remember our last talk together, at N., and how, in coming home we talked about the work?

(R. H.) Yes, yes.

MRS. M. And I said if we had a hundred thousand dollars—

Buying Billy!!

MRS. M. Yes, Dick, that was it—"buying Billy."

Buying only Billy?

MRS. M. Oh no—I wanted Schiller too. How well you remember!

Mrs. M., before R. H.'s death, had had dreams of extending the American Branch's operations by getting an endowment, and possibly inducing Prof. Newbold (Billy) and Dr. Schiller to co-operate in work. She naturally regards this veridical recall, by the control, of a private conversation she had had with Hodgson as very evidential of his survival.

(8) To the same sitter, on a later occasion (March 5th, 1906), the control showed veridical knowledge of R. H.'s *pipes*, of which two had been presents from herself. She asks him at this sitting about the disposal of some of his effects. He mentions books and photographs in a general way, then says:

I want Tom [his brother] to have my pipes, all except any that my friends wish.

MRS. M. Do you remember any special ones?

Yes, I—the one you— [The hand points to *me*, etc.—  
Mrs. M.]

MRS. M. Which?

Meerschaum. [I gave R. H. a meerschaum pipe some years ago.—M.]

MRS. M. You do remember! Give it to any one you would best like to.

. . . . I want Billy James to have it. Will you give it to him? Do you remember, etc.?

MRS. M. Do you remember any other special pipe?

You mean with a long stem? Certainly. What about it?

MRS. M. Can you recall anything special about it?

What? You mean the one you gave me long ago, some time ago, not the recent one?

MRS. M. The last one I gave you.

Last season, last season, yes.

MRS. M. A year or two ago, I think it was.

I recall it well. You gave me what I call a briar pipe. [A number of years ago I gave R. H. a briar-root pipe, with rather a long stem, bound round the bowl with silver, but this was not the one of which I was thinking.—M.]

MRS. M. The one I mean was an odd-looking pipe.

I know it well, a big large bowl.

MRS. M. Wasn't that the meerschaum?

Yes, Billy is to have it. The face one I want Tom to have. I want my brother Tom to have—face on it. The whole thing was a face. I mean the pipe bowl.

[I had seen such a pipe, the whole thing a face, at the Charles Street rooms a short time before. I never remember seeing Mr. Hodgson use it. The pipe of which I was thinking was a carved Swiss pipe which he evidently does not remember.—M.]

(9) Among my own friends in the Harvard faculty who had "passed over" the most intimate was F. J. Child. Hodgson during life had never met Professor Child. It looks to me like a supernormal reading of my own mental states (for I had often said that the best argument I knew for an immortal life was the existence of a man who deserved one as well as Child did) that a message to me about him should have been spontaneously produced by the R. H. control. I had assuredly never mentioned C. to Mrs. Piper, had never before

had a message from his spirit, and if I had expressed my feelings about him to the living R. H., that would make the matter only more evidential.

The message through R. H. came to Miss Robbins, June 6th, 1906.

There is a man named Child passed out suddenly, wants to send his love to William and his wife in the body.

MISS R. Child's wife?

Yes, in the body. He says . . . I hope L. will understand what I mean. I [*i.e.* R. H.] don't know who L. is. [L. is the initial of the Christian name of Professor Child's widow.—W. J.]

(10) Miss Putnam had been consulted about the disposition of certain matters left undone by Hodgson at the date of his death. At her sitting, much later, these words came out. I copy the record as it stands:

R. H. Did you get my Christmas present? [A calendar addressed by him to me before his death.—A. C. P.] I heard you in the body say you didn't want them sent. [Mr. Hodgson had left some Christmas cards addressed, but unenclosed. I had expressed unwillingness to mail them unenveloped.—A. C. P.]

(11) Mrs. M., on March 30th, placed a volume in manuscript in the medium's hands. R. H. immediately wrote:

Well, well. Isn't that the book I lent you?

MRS. M. Yes. You loaned it to me at C——.

I remember, but you have it still!

MRS. M. I returned it to you.

Yes, but isn't it the one I loaned you? And the poems I used to love so well, I recall. [The book contained poems copied or composed by Hodgson, and after having been returned to him ere he died, had been taken from among his effects and brought to the sitting by Mrs. M.]

These eleven incidents sound more like deliberate truth-telling, whoever the truth-teller be, than like lucky flukes. On the whole they make on me the impression of being supernatural. I confess that I should at this moment much like to know (although I have no means of knowing) just how all the documents I am exhibiting in this report will strike readers who are either novices in the field, or who consider the subject in general to be pure "rot" or "bosh." It seems to me not impossible that a bosh-philosopher here or there may get a dramatic impression of there being something genuine behind it all. Most of those who remain faithful to the "bosh"-interpretation would, however, find plenty of comfort if they had the entire mass of records given them to read. Not that I have left things out (I certainly have tried not to!) that would, if printed, discredit the detail of what I cite, but I have left out, by not citing the whole mass of records, so much mere mannerism, so much repetition, hesitation, irrelevance, unintelligibility, so much obvious groping and fishing and plausible covering up of false tracks, so much false pretension to power, and real obedience to suggestion, that the stream of veridicality that runs throughout the whole gets lost as it were in a marsh of feebleness, and the total dramatic effect on the mind may be little more than the word "humbug." The really significant items disappear in the total bulk. "Passwords," for example, and sealed messages are given in abundance, but can't be found. (I omit these here, as some of them may prove veridical later.) Preposterous Latin sentences are written, *e.g.* "Nebus merica este fecrum"—or what reads like that (April 4th, 1906). Poetry gushes out, but how can one be sure that Mrs. Piper never knew it? The weak talk of the Emperor-band about *time* is reproduced, as where R. H. pretends that he no longer knows what "seven minutes" mean (May 14th, 1906). Names asked for can't be given, etc., etc.<sup>1</sup> All this mass of diluting material, which can't be reproduced in abridgment, has its inevitable dramatic effect;

<sup>1</sup>For instance, on July 2nd, the sitter asks R. H. to name some of his cronies at the Tavern Club. Hodgson gives six names, only five of which belonged to the Tavern Club, and those five were known to the controls already. None of them, I believe, were those asked for, namely, "names of the men he used to play pool with or go swimming with at Nantasket." Yet, as the sitter (Mr. Dorr) writes, "He failed to realize his failure."

and if one tends to *hate* the whole phenomenon anyhow (as I confess that I myself sometimes do) one's judicial verdict inclines accordingly.

Nevertheless, I have to confess also that the more familiar I have become with the records, the less *relative significance* for my mind has all this diluting material tended to assume. The active cause of the communications is on any hypothesis a will of some kind, be it the will of R. H.'s spirit, of lower supernatural intelligences, or of Mrs. Piper's subliminal; and although some of the rubbish may be deliberately willed (certain hesitations, misspellings, etc., in the hope that the sitter may give a clue, or certain repetitions, in order to gain time) yet the major part of it is suggestive of something quite different—as if a will were there, but a will to say something which the machinery fails to bring through. Dramatically, most of this “bosh” is more suggestive to me of dreaminess and mind-wandering than it is of humbug. Why should a “will to deceive” prefer to give incorrect names so often, if it can give the true ones to which the incorrect ones so frequently approximate as to suggest that they are meant? True names impress the sitter vastly more. Why should it so multiply false “passwords” (“Zeivorn,” for example, above, p. 86) and stick to them? It looks to me more like aiming at something definite, and failing of the goal. Sometimes the control gives a message to a distant person quite suddenly, as if for some reason a resistance momentarily gave way and let pass a definite desire to give such a message. Thus on October 17th, “Give my love to Carl Putnam,” a name which neither Mrs. Piper nor the sitter knew, and which popped in quite irrelevantly to what preceded or followed. A definite will is also suggested when R. H. sends a message to James Putnam about his “watch stopping.” He sends it through several sitters and sticks to it in the face of final denial, as if the phrase covered, however erroneously, some distinct “intention to recall,” which ought not to be renounced.

That a “will to personate” is a factor in the Piper-phenomenon, I fully believe, and I believe with unshakeable firmness that this will is able to draw on supernormal sources of information. It can “tap,” possibly the sitter's memories, possibly those of distant human beings, possibly some cosmic reservoir in

which the memories of earth are stored, whether in the shape of "spirits" or not. If this were the only will concerned in the performance, the phenomenon would be humbug pure and simple, and the minds tapped telepathically in it would play an entirely passive rôle—that is, the telepathic data would be fished out by the personating will, not forced upon it by desires to communicate, acting externally to itself.

But it is possible to complicate the hypothesis. Extraneous "wills to communicate" may contribute to the results as well as a "will to personate," and the two kinds of will may be distinct in entity, though capable of helping each other out. The will to communicate, in our present instance, would be, on the *prima facie* view of it, the will of Hodgson's surviving spirit; and a natural way of representing the process would be to suppose the spirit to have found that by pressing, so to speak, against "the light," it can make fragmentary gleams and flashes of what it wishes to say mix with the rubbish of the trance-talk on this side. The two wills might thus strike up a sort of partnership and reinforce each other. It might even be that the "will to personate" would be comparatively inert unless it were aroused to activity by the other will. We might imagine the relation to be analogous to that of two physical bodies, from neither of which, when alone, mechanical, thermal, or electrical activity can proceed, but if the other body be present, and show a difference of "potential," action starts up and goes on apace.

Conceptions such as these seem to connect in schematic form the various elements in the case. Its essential factors are done justice to; and, by changing the relative amounts in which the rubbish-making and the truth-telling wills contribute to the resultant, we can draw up a table in which every type of manifestation, from silly planchet-writing up to Rector's best utterances, finds its proper place. Personally, I must say that, although I have to confess that no crucial proof of the presence of the "will to communicate" seems to me yielded by the Hodgson-control taken alone, and in the sittings to which I have had access, yet the total effect in the way of dramatic probability of the whole mass of similar phenomena on my mind, is to make me believe that a "will to communicate" *is* in some shape there. I cannot

demonstrate it, but practically I am inclined to "go in" for it, to bet on it and take the risks.

The question then presents itself: In what shape is it most reasonable to suppose that the will thus postulated is actually there? And here again there are various pneumatological possibilities, which must be considered first in abstract form. Thus the will to communicate may come either from permanent entities, or from an entity that arises for the occasion. R. H.'s spirit would be a permanent entity; and inferior parasitic spirits ('daimons,' elementals, or whatever their traditional names might be) would be permanent entities. An improvised entity might be a limited process of consciousness arising in the cosmic reservoir of earth's memories, when certain conditions favoring systematized activity in particular tracts thereof were fulfilled. The conditions in that case might be conceived after the analogy of what happens when two poles of different potential are created in a mass of matter, and cause a current of electricity, or what not, to pass through an intervening tract of space until then the seat of rest.

To consider the case of permanent entities first, there is no *a priori* reason why human spirits and other spiritual beings might not either co-operate at the same time in the same phenomenon, or alternately produce different manifestations. *Prima facie*, and as a matter of "dramatic" probability, other intelligences than our own appear on an enormous scale in the historic mass of material which Myers first brought together under the title of Automatism. The refusal of modern "enlightenment" to treat "possession" as a hypothesis to be spoken of as even possible, in spite of the massive human tradition based on concrete experience in its favor, has always seemed to me a curious example of the power of fashion in things scientific. That the demon-theory (not necessarily a devil-theory) will have its innings again is to my mind absolutely certain. One has to be "scientific" indeed, to be blind and ignorant enough to suspect no such possibility. But if the liability to have one's somnambulistic or automatic processes participated in and interfered with by spiritual entities of a different order ever turn out to be a probable fact, then not only what I have called the will to

communicate, but also the will to *personate* may fall outside of the medium's own dream-life. The humbugging may not be chargeable to her all alone, centres of consciousness lower than hers may take part in it, just as higher ones may occasion some of the more inexplicable items of the veridical current in the stream.

The plot of possibilities thus thickens; and it thickens still more when we ask how a will which is dormant or relatively dormant during the intervals may become consciously reanimated as a spirit-personality by the occurrence of the medium's trance. A certain theory of Fechner's helps my own imagination here, so I will state it briefly for my reader's benefit.

Fechner in his *Zend-Avesta*<sup>1</sup> and elsewhere assumes that mental and physical life run parallel, all memory-processes being, according to him, co-ordinated with material processes. If an act of yours is to be consciously remembered hereafter, it must leave traces on the material universe such that when the *traced parts of the said universe systematically enter into activity together* the act is consciously recalled. During your life the traces are mainly in your brain; but after your death, since your brain is gone, they exist in the shape of all the records of your actions which the outer world stores up as the effects, immediate or remote, thereof, the cosmos being in some degree, however slight, made structurally different by every act of ours that takes place in it.<sup>2</sup> Now, just as the air of the same room can be simultaneously used by many different voices for communicating with different pairs of ears, or as the ether of space can carry many simultaneous messages

<sup>1</sup> *Zend-Avesta*, 2nd edition, 1901, §§ XXI. and following. Compare also Elwood Worcester: *The Living Word*, New York, Moffett, Yard & Co., 1908, Part II.: and Wm. James, *A Pluralistic Universe*, Longmans, Green & Co., 1909. Lecture iv.

<sup>2</sup> "It is Händel's work, not the body with which he did the work, that pulls us half over London. There is not an action of a muscle in a horse's leg upon a winter's night as it drags a carriage to the Albert Hall but what is in connection with, and part outcome of, the force generated when Händel sat in his room at Gopsall and wrote the Messiah. . . . This is the true Händel who is more a living power among us one hundred and twenty-two years after his death than during the time he was amongst us in the body." Samuel Butler, in the *New Quarterly*, I. 303, March, 1908.

to and from mutually attuned Marconi-stations, so the great continuum of material nature can have certain tracts within it thrown into emphasized activity whenever activity begins in any part or parts of a tract in which the potentiality of such systematic activity inheres. The bodies (including of course the brains) of Hodgson's friends who come as sitters, are naturally parts of the material universe which carry some of the traces of his ancient acts. They function as receiving stations, and Hodgson (at one time of his life at any rate) was inclined to suspect that the sitter himself acts "psychometrically," or by his body being what, in the trance-jargon, is called an "influence," in attracting the right spirits and eliciting the right communications from the other side. If, now, the *rest of the system of physical traces* left behind by Hodgson's acts were by some sort of mutual induction throughout its extent, thrown into gear and made to vibrate all at once, by the presence of such human bodies to the medium, we should have a Hodgson-system active in the cosmos again, and the "conscious aspect" of this vibrating system might be Hodgson's spirit redivivus, and recollecting and willing in a certain momentary way. There seems fair evidence of the reality of psychometry; so that this scheme covers the main phenomena in a vague general way. In particular, it would account for the "confusion" and "weakness" that are such prevalent features: the system of physical traces corresponding to the given spirit would then be only imperfectly aroused. It tallies vaguely with the analogy of energy finding its way from higher to lower levels. The sitter, with his desire to receive, forms, so to speak, a drainage-opening or sink; the medium, with her desire to personate, yields the nearest lying material to be drained off; while the spirit desiring to communicate is shown the way by the current set up, and swells the latter by its own contributions.

It is enough to indicate these various possibilities, which a serious student of this part of nature has to weigh together, and between which his decision must fall. His vote will always be cast (if ever it be cast) by the sense of the dramatic probabilities of nature which the sum total of his experience has begotten in him. *I myself feel as if an*

*external will to communicate were probably there*, that is, I find myself doubting, in consequence of my whole acquaintance with that sphere of phenomena, that Mrs. Piper's dream-life, even equipped with "telepathic" powers, accounts for all the results found. But if asked whether the will to communicate be Hodgson's, or be some mere spirit-counterfeit of Hodgson, I remain uncertain and await more facts, facts which may not point clearly to a conclusion for fifty or a hundred years.

My report has been too rambling in form, and has suffered in cordiality of tone from having to confine itself to the face-value of the Hodgson-material taken alone. The content of that material is no more veridical than is a lot of earlier Piper-material, especially in the days of the old Phinuit control.<sup>1</sup> And it is, as I began by saying, vastly more leaky and susceptible of naturalistic explanation than is any body of Piper-material recorded before. Had I been reviewing the entire Piper-phenomenon, instead of this small section of it, my tone would probably give much less umbrage to some of its spiritistic friends who are also valued friends of mine.

<sup>1</sup>See, in proof of this assertion, Hodgson's and Hyslop's previous reports.

## II.

NOTE ON MRS. PIPER'S HODGSON-CONTROL IN  
ENGLAND IN 1906-7.

BY MRS. H. SIDGWICK AND J. G. PIDDINGTON.

WE think it may be useful to complete the account of the Hodgson-Piper control (Hodgson<sub>P</sub>) up to January, 1908, by giving here a brief *résumé* of our experience of it during Mrs. Piper's visit to England, which interrupted in 1906-7 the sittings dealt with above by Professor James.

The Hodgson control appeared frequently at Mrs. Piper's English sittings, but was seldom the most prominent control. In explanation of this he stated that he was engaged in helping Myers and others to communicate, and thought it better to keep himself in the background.<sup>1</sup> On the one hand his style and expressions in communicating resembled those described by Professor James, and were dramatically suitable to Hodgson. Moreover, he referred appropriately and characteristically, though rather generally, to private matters with which Hodgson and the sitter (Miss Alice Johnson on one occasion and Mrs. Sidgwick on another) had been concerned. (These references, however, though impressive, cannot be regarded as quite satisfactory from an evidential point of view, because the knowledge of facts unknown to Mrs. Piper which they *prima facie* seem to involve, might have been derived from facts which Hodgson, when alive, had mentioned to the trance-personalities.) On the other hand, the attempts made by Hodgson<sub>P</sub> to recall trivial incidents were not convincing, and were, in fact, often wrong. To Mrs. Sidgwick it seemed that such attempts in relation to

<sup>1</sup> Thus on February 6, 1907, Hodgson<sub>P</sub> wrote: "You must pardon me if I do not appear here often personally, as I feel I can be of better service by helping others for a time at least."

her were either guesses or, if referring to real events at all, reminiscences appropriate not to her but to some other friend.

The communications so far spoken of are those which came spontaneously and unsought in the course of sittings with persons known to be present both by Mrs. Piper's normal self and by the trance personalities. But a systematic attempt was made to obtain evidence which should be free from the sources of leakage and possibilities of naturalistic explanation, which, as Professor James points out, were largely though inevitably present in the body of evidence with which he had to deal. We introduced anonymously, and after the trance had begun, intimate English friends of Hodgson's hitherto unconnected with the active work of the Society for Psychical Research, and who had never met Mrs. Piper either in her normal or her trance state; about whom, moreover, it was unlikely that Hodgson in this life would have spoken in any detail, if indeed at all, either to Mrs. Piper or the trance personalities. Unfortunately the results were almost purely negative. Three such intimate friends had among them seven sittings, and all went away disappointed. Even after clues had been given by the sitters, nothing that could be regarded as adequate evidence of recognition was said, and there was a great deal of what looked like guessing and fishing, and much said that was inappropriate.<sup>1</sup> A fourth friend of Hodgson's had five sittings under what might be supposed to be very favourable circumstances—in the very rooms in which Hodgson had dined with him the last time that they had met in England. Nevertheless there was no good evidence that there were any associations for Hodgson<sub>P</sub> either with the friend or with the room. This is all the more remarkable because these sittings afforded very interesting evidence of supernormally acquired knowledge. What happened was that another friend of the sitter's, long deceased, professed to communicate, gave his name correctly, and correctly said that he had promised to communicate if he should die first. Other correct statements, though also some incorrect ones, were made.<sup>2</sup> All this time Hodgson<sub>P</sub> professed

<sup>1</sup>Compare, however, in this connexion Section XIII. of Mr. Piddington's paper in *Proceedings*, Vol. XXII. pp. 179-192, where portions of some of these sittings are dealt with.

<sup>2</sup>It is hoped that it may be possible some day to publish details.

to be helping the communicator, but did not himself claim any connexion with the sitter till, after the five sittings were over, a hint was given to him. The following extracts show this:—

*Extract from record of sitting with Mrs. Piper held on  
February 19, 1907.*

(Present, Mr. Piddington alone.)

(Hodgson communicating.)

J. G. P. . . . When you are helping spirits to talk through this light, can you recognise the mortals with whom they are communicating?

No, not at the time when I am helping them, but if I came alone I could recognise them, I think, perfectly.

J. G. P. Yes.

. . . . .  
I had an idea that I got a glimpse of a friend recently, but found another friend who recognised him also, and therefore I left.

J. G. P. What was the name of the other friend?

Hudson [the name of the above-mentioned long-deceased friend of the previous sitter].

. . . . .  
J. G. P. Hodgson.

Hello.

J. G. P. The mortal friend to whom Hudson spoke was also——

(Hand interrupts.)

also a friend of mine? Yes, I understand perfectly.

J. G. P. Well, tell me who he was.

I will, after I talk with Hudson.

. . . . .  
Oh, Pid., I am not idle, not for one moment. I hope] he was not disappointed, as I explained to you long ago

that anything I personally might say would not convince half so quickly as what others might say to whom I gave help.

J. G. P. It would, of course, have been very good if you had recognised the friend; but it will still be very good if, when you go out, you could talk it over with Hudson and then say things to prove you know who the friend is.

*Exactly.* I understand, and I will certainly do so, but I have told you already that I know him.

At later sittings there were what we took to be attempts at this sitter's name, though not explicitly referred to him, and reminiscences that may have applied to him were connected by Hodgson<sub>P</sub> with another sitter; but there was nothing that can be claimed as proof that Hodgson<sub>P</sub> really remembered anything about him.

This failure on the part of Hodgson<sub>P</sub> to recognise Hodgson's friends is the more remarkable because Hodgson<sub>P</sub> had been told first by Mr. Piddington at Boston and later by Sir Oliver Lodge at Edgbaston that friends of Hodgson's (not specified, of course) would come to the sittings, so that it was natural to suppose that Hodgson<sub>P</sub> would be on the look-out for them.

A fifth person who had sittings with Mrs. Piper in England was "Mrs. Forbes," known to readers of the *Proceedings* as an automatist who has had veridical communications, and some cross-correspondences with Mrs. Verrall. Mrs. Forbes had not previously seen Mrs. Piper, but she knew Hodgson, who on one of his later visits to England had stayed at her house to discuss psychical matters. Like the other sitters, she was introduced anonymously and after the trance had begun, but her name was inadvertently mentioned to the trance personalities before the end of the series of four sittings. The sittings were not on the whole satisfactory, though the real name of Mrs. Forbes's son "Talbot" (see *Proceedings*, Vol. XX., p. 220) was gradually arrived at by Rector before her name had been revealed. Hodgson<sub>P</sub> communicated in the course of the first sitting and after a sufficient interchange of remarks

to suggest that the sitter had been acquainted with Hodgson, tried to remind her of the story about the old man and woman praying for bread told by Professor James above (p. 26). This the sitter failed to remember, but she remembers having had discussions with Hodgson about prayer. There was not, however, enough verifiable specific detail to make it certain that the conversation referred to by Hodgson<sub>P</sub> was really a conversation with Mrs. Forbes.

From what we have said it is clear that our attempt, by introducing Hodgson's friends, to obtain evidence of continuity of memory between Hodgson<sub>P</sub> and Hodgson must be regarded as a failure. The same, it may be remarked, is true of the similar experiments we made in connection with Henry Sidgwick.<sup>1</sup> His communications in the trance were much rarer than Hodgson's, but they did not occur at all when friends were introduced whom it was hoped he would recognise. What the inference to be drawn from these negative results should be—whether the failure is to be attributed to the absence of continuous memory or to the absence of conditions essential to its manifestation—it is not possible in our present state of ignorance about the whole subject to decide.

<sup>1</sup>Since 1901 a control calling itself Henry Sidgwick has put in occasional appearances in Mrs. Piper's trance. The personation has been, however, of the feeblest description; a fact all the more strange because Mrs. Piper was personally acquainted with Dr. Sidgwick.

## III.

REPORT ON SOME TRANCE COMMUNICATIONS  
RECEIVED CHIEFLY THROUGH MRS. PIPER.

BY SIR OLIVER LODGE.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION. ANTICIPATORY REPLY TO CRITICS - - -	128
CHAPTER I. EXPLANATORY AND HISTORICAL - - -	130
The present manner of a Piper sitting.	
General remarks on Piper Controls - - -	137
CHAPTER II. THE GURNEY CONTROL - - -	140
Some sittings in 1889 and 1890.	
Various unverifiable communications - - -	145
CHAPTER III. THE ISAAC THOMPSON CASE - - -	162
Communications in 1905 - - -	164
Ditto in 1906 - - -	171
Sittings with Isaac Thompson's family - - -	174
Messages received at Edgbaston - - -	189
Remarks on Relics - - -	196
CHAPTER IV. THE MYERS CONTROL - - -	198
Messages received through Mrs. Thompson.	
Record of sittings in 1901 - - -	201
General remarks addressed to religious objectors - - -	215
Specific comments - - -	217
CHAPTER V. MESSAGES OBTAINED THROUGH MISS RAWSON -	219
CHAPTER VI. MESSAGES FROM THE MYERS AND HODGSON CONTROLS OF MRS. PIPER, AUTUMN 1906 - - -	226
CHAPTER VII. THE MYERS AND HODGSON CONTROLS OF MRS. PIPER, SPRING 1907 - - -	248

	PAGE
CHAPTER VIII. THE JOSEPH MARBLE SERIES . . . . .	255
Mrs. Grove's sittings with Mrs. Thompson in 1900 . . . . .	257
Mrs. Grove's sittings with Mrs. Piper in 1906 . . . . .	265
Experiment on recognition of photograph . . . . .	275
Comment . . . . .	278
CHAPTER IX. SUPPLEMENTARY REMARKS . . . . .	280
Phinuit.	
Concluding observations . . . . .	281

## INTRODUCTION.

MY object in drawing up the following Report is to give a general idea of the dramatic aspect of the Piper phenomena, and of the utterances of some of the ostensible controls. For this purpose therefore I do not limit myself to the consideration of evidential matter, but regard the non-evidential and the trivial as sometimes equally instructive. I do not propose to argue as to the nature of these same controls, although that constitutes the main problem before us. The time hardly appears ripe for useful discussion of that kind, and I feel myself in agreement with Professor William James when he says (see above, p. 29):—

“The facts are evidently complicated in the extreme, and we have as yet hardly scratched the surface of them. . . . . I consequently disbelieve in being too ‘rigorous’ with our criticism of anything now in hand, or in our squeezing so evidently vague a material too hard in our technical forceps, at the present stage. What we need is more and more observations. Quantity may have to supplement quality in the material. When we have the facts in sufficient number, we may be sure that they will cast plenty of explanatory backward light. We can therefore well afford to play a waiting game.”

There is one kind of criticism which had better be met and if possible countered from the first. The method of a Piper sitting is a conversation—usually written on one side, spoken on the other,—and in a conversation it is natural and necessary, if the colloquy is to be maintained, to deal with the utterances at their face value, and accept the speaker or writer for what he purports to be at the time. The only alternative is to refuse to continue the conversation. When therefore a critic objects to “Hail Myers,

glad to see you," as a response to the greeting "Well well Lodge I am Myers," or when he ridicules such phrases as "Glad to see you at last," and "I expect so," as responses to the boisterous salutation "Hello Lodge, I am Hodgson," "I am very much alive," he shows himself deficient in imagination. In the same predicament the most carping critic would himself instinctively respond somewhat in the same vein; unless he declined to respond at all and threw the whole thing up. But we could have managed that still more simply by not inviting Mrs. Piper over!

In answering a telephone call, the object of an ordinary communicator is to ascertain who his correspondent pretends to be. A conversation would soon languish if friendly advances were met by accusations of fraudulent impersonation. Caution should of course be constantly exercised not to give gratuitous information, and every piece of information given should be carefully recorded, but the contention that a hostile or squeamish attitude should be taken by every unprejudiced investigator is quite absurd; it would only be appropriate to one who so despises and sneers at the whole subject as to refuse an opportunity of learning anything about it. Doubtless there are many such people in existence, and with them I have no quarrel; but they are not asked to read or review these and other such reports.

One other preliminary remark may be made. Communications are now conducted by writing, and the script is not at all easy to read. There are only a few cases where there is any ultimate doubt as to the correctness of the reading, when it has been deciphered, but it cannot always be deciphered on the spot. This difficulty has perhaps hardly been sufficiently emphasised in the other papers on the subject—for instance, in Mr. Piddington's. In many cases the temporary misunderstandings recorded must seem stupid to a reader who has printed sentences before him: but I can assure him that if he saw the script he would in some cases be surprised at the amount of intelligence shown by readers. The long experience of Dr. Hodgson and Mr. Piddington enables them to decipher the script with fair promptitude, though Rector is rather liable to discount this advantage by writing more quickly, and therefore still more illegibly, when dealing with a skilled reader. So the contemporary reading is always a strain, and mistakes will occur which interrupt anything like easy conversation—such a conversation as you might expect to carry on with a perfectly dumb person who is not deaf.

## CHAPTER I.

## EXPLANATORY AND HISTORICAL.

MY first acquaintance with Mrs. Piper dates from 19 Nov. 1889, and my first experience of a sitting with her was at Cambridge on Nov. 30 of the same year.

Between Dec. 18 and Dec. 27, 1889, she stayed in my house at Liverpool; and again between Jan. 30 and Feb. 5, 1890; on which latter date she returned to America.

At that time she was accustomed to give sittings as often as twice a day.

A full account of my experiences on these occasions is recorded in the *Proceedings of the Society for Psychological Research* for December 1890, Part XVII., Vol. 6, pp. 443-557. This is preceded by an introduction, pages 436-442, written by F. W. H. Myers, and is followed by a report on further sittings by Dr. Walter Leaf, together with short supplementary statements by Prof. and Mrs. Sidgwick, Prof. Richet, and Prof. Wm. James.

I saw Mrs. Piper again on 9 Nov. 1906 at Liverpool, where she had just arrived from America, and was staying in the house of Mrs. Isaac Thompson of Liverpool, whose acquaintance she had made on her previous visit to this country. Another series of sittings then began, but at a rate of only two or three per week instead of two a day, and of the general character of these I now propose to give an account.

It has been described by Mr. Piddington in his recent paper, but an independent description may supplement his in a few particulars. In so far as there is repetition, it will presumably be repetition of salient points, and as such is not altogether to be deprecated. It is not easy to make a reader as familiar with the whole procedure as an experimenter becomes who has undertaken the labour of supervising a number of sittings.

Since our first English experience with Mrs. Piper a great mass of material had been accumulated in America, under the management of Dr. Hodgson, and the manner of the sittings had somewhat changed. In the old days communication had always been made with the voice, and any writing done was only brief and occasional. Now

communications are almost entirely in writing, and only under exceptional circumstances is the voice employed.

There was an intermediate stage, reported by Dr. Hodgson in Vol. 13, pp. 358 and 398, during which both hand and voice were separately employed at the same time,—a sort of duplex telegraphy—so that two sets of independent messages could be going on simultaneously, and two different sitters accommodated, one talking to the voice and the other to the hand. Once or twice even the left hand seems to have been independently employed as well. This condition was one of great interest, but it must have been a strain and it did not very long continue. Gradually the G.P. control monopolised the right hand, and Phinuit was gradually ousted from the voice.

In the old days Mrs. Piper sat upright in her chair, with head somewhat bowed and eyes closed, and with both hands available for holding objects or a hand of the sitter. Now her head reclined throughout on a cushion, with her face turned away. The right hand alone was active, being engaged nearly all the time in writing, with intervals of what looked like listening. The dramatic activity of the hand was very remarkable: it was full of intelligence, and could be described as more like an intelligent person than a hand. It sometimes turned itself to the sitter, when it wanted to be spoken to by him; but for the most part, when not writing, it turned itself away from the sitter, as if receiving communications from outside, which it then proceeded to write down; going back to space—*i.e.* directing itself to a part of the room where nobody was—for further information and supplementary intelligence, as necessity arose.

The manner of preparation was as follows. A quiet room was selected in which interruption need not be feared; a fire was provided for warmth, and the windows were open for ventilation. A comfortable chair was placed near a table, on which was a pile of from four to six cushions or pillows, on which the medium sitting in the chair and leaning forward could securely rest the side of her head when sleep came on,—not burying her face in the cushions, but turning it to the left side so as to be able to breathe during the trance. If it ever happened that the pillows incommoded the breathing, they had to be adjusted and pressed down by the experimenter in charge, so that air obtained free access to the mouth and nose. On the right hand side of the pillows, either on the same or on a small subsidiary table, the writing materials were

arranged, namely a large pad or block-book (10" × 8") of 100 blank sheets all numbered in order, and four or five pencils of soft lead, 2 B or 3 B, properly cut and ready.

It was the duty of the experimenter in charge to record all that the sitter said. This could generally be done sideways on the same sheet without interfering with the medium's hand. He also had to arrange the pad so that the hand could conveniently write upon it; and to tear off the sheets as they were done with. No attempt was made to economise paper; the automatic writing was large and scrawling, and did not often begin at the top of the page. Sometimes a good deal of writing was obtained on a single page, sometimes only a few lines, and occasionally only a few words. The tearing off of the old sheet was quickly done; and the hand waited the moment necessary: though sometimes, when in the midst of an energetic message, it indicated momentary impatience at the interruption.

Mrs. Piper and her daughters often had breakfast with the family, though occasionally she breakfasted in her room. On ordinary days she went shopping or sight-seeing, or was otherwise ordinarily occupied; but on sitting days she went back after breakfast to her own room to be quiet. At the time fixed for the sitting, say 10 or 10.30 a.m., Mrs. Piper came into the arranged room and seated herself in the chair in front of the pillows; then the experimenter in charge sat down on a chair near the table, leaving a vacant chair between him and the medium, for the Sitter; who at my sittings was sometimes present from the first, but at those held in London, was introduced only after the trance had come on. Mrs. Piper sat with her hands on the pillows in front of her; about five minutes of desultory conversation followed, then heavy breathing began, and the head of the medium presently dropped on to her hands on the pillows and turned itself with its face to the left.

Then almost at once the right hand disengaged itself and fell on the table near the writing materials. After about 30 seconds of complete quiescence, this hand alone 'woke up' as it were; it slowly rose, made the sign of the cross in the air, and indicated that it was ready to write.

The experimenter then gave the hand a pencil, placing it between fore and middle fingers; it was at once grasped, and writing began. First a cross was drawn, and then the word "Hail" was written, followed usually by "We return to earth this day with joy and peace"; or "We greet you friend of earth once again, we bring

peace and love"; or some such semi-religious phrase, signed "R," which stands for 'Rector' the ostensible amanuensis.

In the old days the control had styled itself 'Phinuit'; now Phinuit never appears, and the control calls itself Rector.

I am aware that all this is familiar to a great number of members of the Society; but new members join, and if I were to begin to allow for previous information I should be very uncertain where to stop allowing. I should probably omit the whole of this introductory portion.

In the old days the tone was not so dignified and serious as it is now: it could in fact then be described as rather humorous and slangy; but there was a serious under-current constantly present even then; the welcomes and farewells were quaint and kindly—even affectionate at times—and nothing was ever said of a character that could give offence. I judge that stupid familiarity or frivolity on the part of a sitter—for which, however, there was no excuse—would have been at once rebuked and checked.

In the old days the going into trance seemed rather a painful process, or at least a process involving muscular effort; there was some amount of contortion of the face, and sometimes a slight tearing of the hair; and the same actions accompanied the return of consciousness. Now the trance seems nothing more than an exceptionally heavy sleep, entered into without effort—a sleep with the superficial appearance of that induced by chloroform; and the return to consciousness, though slow and for a time accompanied by confusion, is easy and natural.

A sitting used to last only about an hour; and on the rare occasions when there is a voice sitting now, an hour is the limit; but a writing sitting seems less of a strain, and was often allowed to last as much as two hours, though not more.

In the old days, when sittings were more frequent, there were degrees of intensity about them. Occasionally, though rarely, they declined to come on at all; and sometimes, even when they did, the loss of consciousness seemed less than complete. Under present conditions the trance was undoubtedly profound, and the suspension of normal consciousness unmistakably complete. Once, but only once in my recent experience, the trance refused to come on, and the attempt at a sitting had to be abandoned till next day.

Usually after purposely placing herself under the familiar conditions to which she is accustomed, Mrs. Piper is able to let herself go off, without trouble or delay.

Great care was taken of the body of the medium, both now and previously, by the operating intelligence. She was spoken of usually as "the light," sometimes as "the machine," though the word "machine" commonly signified only the pencil.

If anything went wrong with the breathing, or if there was insufficient air in the room, or if the cushions slipped so as to make the attitude uncomfortable, the hand wrote "something wrong with the machine," or "attend to the light," or something of that sort; and the experimenter amended the arrangements before the writing went on. The whole thing was as sensible and easy as possible, as soon as the circumstances and conditions were understood. Each experimenter, of course, handed down all the information and Hodgsonian tradition of this kind to the next, so that all the conditions to which Mrs. Piper was accustomed could be supplied beforehand, and so that no injury would happen to her bodily health.

The following illustrates the care taken of the physical conditions and the way they are spoken of. It is an extract from a sitting held by Mr. Dorr at Boston in 1906.

(Rector interrupting a "Hodgson" communication)

Friend, you will have to change the conditions a moment.

[At the beginning of the sitting only one of the two windows in the room was open a very little way. A few moments previous to this time H. J. Jr. noticing that the room was a little close had opened the other window, and G. B. D. had nearly closed it again.]

G. B. D. What is wrong with the conditions? Do you want more air or less?

Well, there will have to be a change in the surroundings, there will have to be more strength, what is it, air, yes, air. And a good deal more just now. Hodgson takes a good deal of strength when he comes, but he is all right, he understands the methods of operation very well. (The window was now opened wide.) That is better. Now the light begins to get clear. All right, friend.

As the time drew near to the two-hour limit, which has been set as a period beyond which it is undesirable to persist, and some-

times at the end of about an hour and a half, or an hour and three quarters, from the commencement, the experimenter in charge gave a hint that the sitting must terminate soon; or else the controls indicate the same thing, and they then begin to clear up and take farewell. A sitting usually concludes as it began, with the writing of a serious sentence invoking the blessing of the Most High upon the sitter and the group.

The coming out of the trance was gradual, and semi-consciousness lasted for several minutes, during which muttered sentences were uttered, and the eyes, if open at all, only glared in sleep-walking fashion, until almost suddenly they took on a natural appearance, and Mrs. Piper became herself. Even then, however, for half an hour or so after the trance had disappeared, the medium continued slightly dazed and only partly herself. During this time her eldest daughter usually took charge of her. But the trance itself was so familiar to them all that the daughters were not the least anxious, and in another room went on with their letters or needle-work unconcerned. After a sitting, one of them was usually called and took her mother for a stroll in the garden. Then everybody had lunch together and talked of ordinary topics, nothing being said about the sitting, and no ill result of any kind being experienced. It seemed a normal function in her case. The experimenter meanwhile had collected the papers and arranged them in order, and had removed the pencils and other appliances. Subsequently it was his business to write out legibly all the material accumulated during the two hours of sitting, to annotate it sufficiently, and send it to a typewriter.

The actual record is of course preserved for exact reference whenever necessary. A record was also made of the remarks of Mrs. Piper during the period of awaking from trance. These were more or less mumbled and difficult to hear, but they were often a continuation of what had been obtained during trance, and generally contained useful passages; though part of them nearly always consisted of expressions of admiration for the state or experience she was leaving, and of repulsion—almost disgust—at the commonplace terrestrial surroundings in which she found herself. Even a bright day was described as dingy or dark, and the sitter was stared at in an unrecognizing way, and described as a dull and ugly person, or sometimes as a negro. Presently, however, the eyes became intelligent, and she recognised some one—usually Lady Lodge first—and then with a smile welcomed her by name, and speedily

came to. Some examples of these waking utterances will be found on pages 169, 185-7, 232, 276, 277.

Coming to ordinary social details: it is not an impertinence, but is justified by the special circumstances of the case, to state that the family is an admirable one, and that we regard them as genuine friends.

At the time of Mrs. Piper's first visit her daughters were children. Now they are grown up, and are very useful to their mother. Nothing in any way abnormal or unusual is to be noticed about them, and their mother expresses it as her sincerest wish that they will not develop her power. For though she must realise the value of her services to science, she cannot but feel that it to some extent isolates her and marks her out as peculiar among her neighbours in New England, and that the time spent in the trance state must have made a distinct inroad on her available life-time. This however must to some extent be the case with any occupation, and it is as the duty specially allotted to her that she has learnt to regard her long service, now extending over a quarter of a century. She became acquainted with Professor William James—who from our point of view may be said to have discovered her—in 1885, but by that time her powers were already fully developed and well known to a group of admirers. They appear to have been noticed in 1884,—see *Proc. S.P.R.* Vol. 8, p. 46.

In May, 1887, Dr. Richard Hodgson, who was over in the States as Agent or American Secretary of the S.P.R., was introduced by Prof. William James, and had his first set of sittings with her. On the strength of these experiences he proceeded energetically to investigate and subject her to tests, in case he might be able to discover some fraudulent procedure. There was none however to detect, and gradually he became one of the most convinced and enthusiastic of her supervisors. He held and superintended an immense number of sittings—the first series of which are reported on by him in Volume 8 of the *Proceedings* of the S.P.R. (the details beginning on page 59); and this report constitutes the second large batch of material on the subject published by the Society.

There is a large amount of unpublished material accumulated in America, which remains still to be edited some day: but some portions have already appeared in the Society's *Proceedings* from time to time.

Vol. 13 contains a further report by Dr. Hodgson of occurrences in the year 1892-4, and herein is recorded the first appearance of automatic writing through Mrs. Piper—Phinuit being still in customary

possession, but beginning to be displaced by the other controls. On page 295 is a history of the George Pelham control, and on page 408 is related the first appearance of Stainton Moses, which before long led to the development of some controls like his, though with some dissimilarities. Phinuit gave place to them altogether in 1897.

Vol. 14 contains a record, by Prof. W. R. Newbold, of a considerable collection of sittings held by him in conjunction with Dr. Hodgson in 1894-6.

Vol. 16 consists entirely of a Report by Professor Hyslop on his series of sittings in 1898-9.

Mr. Podmore discusses Piper sittings in Vol. 14, p. 50, and Mrs. Sidgwick discusses them in Vol. 15, p. 16.

Finally, Mrs. Verrall's own automatic script, which only began after Mr. Myers's death, is analysed by herself in a paper which constitutes the whole of Vol. 20. Part LV. of the *Proceedings S.P.R.* (Vol. 21) contains Miss Johnson's report on the script of Mrs. Holland, and Vol. 22 consists of Mr. Piddington's report on Mrs. Piper.

#### *General Remarks on Piper Controls.*

Last time, viz. in 1890, I gave a full chronological series of all the sittings, and it would be easy to continue that process on this occasion also. But it would be rather tedious, and seems likely to serve no useful purpose. It is a more laborious plan, but probably more serviceable, to dissect out the parts relating to certain main episodes, or received from certain chief communicators, so as to collect and arrange together all the messages which purport to come from a single control, free from the interleaved communications from others. In this way the reader will be able to get a better grasp of the personality, or of the impersonation, as the case may be, than if his utterances were scattered about through the sittings as in the old record.

It is even desirable, I think, to extract from those old records a few of the utterances which purported to come then from the same communicators; and likewise to record a few of the messages given by these communicators through other mediums, so far as they have come directly to myself and are concerned with the same general sort of topics.

On the cross-correspondence messages I shall touch only very lightly, though I recognise their great importance; because this part of the subject requires the collation of the contemporary records of several sitters, and the labour of doing this has been left to Mr. Piddington.

One curious circumstance I feel constrained to mention—though it will seem absurd—and that is that the controls seem to do best in their own country. For instance, long ago, before any of us on this side of the Atlantic had seen Mrs. Piper, a control calling itself Gurney sent messages through that medium while she was still in America; which messages, when recorded on this side, were thought feeble and unworthy, so that the control was spoken of both by Prof. W. James and by those in England as “the pseudo-Gurney.” When, however, Mrs. Piper came over here the “Gurney” messages became better, and could be described as quite fairly lifelike. Conversely, the Hodgson control, which seemed rather brilliant and active over there, when it appeared on this side did not sustain that character to the full extent. It was robust and lively, and in manner like Hodgson, but it was not so successful in furnishing tests or in recognising old friends. Again, the Myers control, which had seemed rather weak over there, on this side gained strength and vivacity, and gave some admirable tests.

The fact of the difference here suggested may be doubted, and I do not dogmatise about it, but that is my impression; and I see that something similar has already struck Mr. Piddington, and is remarked upon by him at the beginning of his Introduction. I have no explanation to offer, beyond the obvious suggestion that familiar and friendly surroundings—greater intimacy of friends and relations in the proximate neighbourhood—all make for strength and reality and give assistance to the impersonation. This indeed is a conceivable possibility on any hypothesis, whether the control is merely a personation by Mrs. Piper’s subliminal consciousness, or is a telepathic influence from living persons acting upon it, or whether it is really some surviving influence of the departed intelligence who is the ostensible communicator.

In speaking of messages received from a certain control, it is not to be understood in general that that control is actually manipulating the organism; it may be always, and certainly is in general, merely dictating through an amanuensis as it were,—the actual writer or speaker being either ‘Rector’ or ‘Phinuit,’ who again may or may not be a phase of Mrs. Piper’s personality.

In the old days, undoubtedly, the appearance was sometimes as if the actual control was changed—after the fashion of a multiple personality; whereas now I think it is nearly always Rector that writes, recording the messages given to him as nearly as he can, and usually reporting in the first person, as Phinuit often did. I

do not attempt to discriminate between what is given in this way and what is given directly, because it is practically impossible to do so with any certainty; since what appears to be direct control is liable to shade off into obvious reporting. That is to say, if a special agency gets control and writes for a few minutes, it does not seem able to sustain the position long, but soon abandons it to the more accomplished and experienced personality, Rector. In the recent series there appeared very little evidence of direct control other than Rector.

We shall speak however of the 'Gurney control,' 'the Hodgson control,' etc., without implying that these agents—even assuming their existence and activity—are ever really in physical possession of the organism; and, even when they are controlling as directly as possible, they may perhaps always be operating telepathically on it rather than telergically—operating, that is to say, through some stratum of the mind, rather than directly on any part of the physical organism. It is rather soon as yet to make definite assertions regarding the actual method of control: there are too many unknown quantities about the whole phenomenon; at the same time Dr. Hodgson has thought it worth while to report the general aspect of the phenomenon as it is said to appear to the "communicators" themselves; he does this on page 400 of Vol. 13 (a portion is quoted below on page 147). And in the next few pages he goes on to indicate his own independent view of what is occurring, giving a detailed description which my own smaller experience, as far as it goes, tends in a general way to confirm. Readers interested in these particulars may here conveniently refer to further remarks on the subject in Chapter II., pp. 161, 147.

One other point deserves to be here mentioned:—

In the days of *Phinuit* considerable facility was shown in dealing with strangers. Persons introduced anonymously had their relations enumerated, and their family affairs referred to, in a remarkably quick and clever way: so much so that they sometimes thought that their special case must have been "got up" beforehand. The facility for dealing with strangers in this way is now much less marked. The introduction of a stranger now makes things slow and laborious, and is on the whole discouraged; for although the old characteristics continue to some extent, the tests now given are mainly of a different kind. The early procedure was useful at the beginning, and it continued useful for a good many years till a case for investigation was firmly established; but it must have seemed tedious to prolong

that method further, so the group of controls associated with Rector assured Dr Hodgson that they would take the trance in hand and develop it on better and higher lines.

As to how far the change is an improvement, there has been at times some difference of opinion; but in view of the remarkable tests recently given under what, though of several years' standing, may be called, the new régime—tests which have been dissected out by Mr. Piddington—there can be but little doubt about the improvement now, however imperfectly or doubtfully it may manifest itself in my small portion of the whole report. I shall begin, however, not with messages received under the new conditions, but with some received under the old.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE GURNEY CONTROL.

SOME of the messages purporting to come directly or indirectly from the late Edmund Gurney were received by me in 1889, and are partially reported in the *Proceedings*, Vol. 6, already referred to; but part was ignored as unverifiable, and another part suppressed as too private; moreover, even the part published is disguised under the pseudonym of "Mr. E." This anonymity seems no longer necessary; and I shall no longer trouble myself as to whether the communication refers to verifiable subjects or not, but shall give what was said as completely as possible—that is to say as far as it could be taken down by a moderately expert note-taker with an excellent memory—in order to convey some idea of the conversation.

On the whole, it was rather a lifelike impersonation, and now that we have determined to make the working hypothesis that deceased members of the S.P.R. may conceivably have something to do with the messages, I propose to republish the old Gurney communications, so as to make a more complete set.

It should be remembered, however, that the communications in the earlier sittings were by word of mouth, which, although the easier and livelier and more interesting method, is not so conducive to *exact* record as the writing plan.

The report aims at being a correct representation, but cannot be regarded as verbally precise, since it necessarily suffers from defect

frequently, and there is no guarantee against occasional mishearing. But the chief fault is omission of connecting words and such like, resulting in a jerkiness of style not necessarily characteristic.

With regard to the influence of the medium herself upon the messages, there is in all cases bound to be a certain amount of sophistication attributable to this cause, and some hesitation and confusion, owing to the cropping up from time to time, or perhaps the constant superposition, of idiosyncracies of the medium herself. In other words, the impersonation, however good, cannot be perfect; and this we say with the more confidence now that we have the same control purporting to communicate through different mediums. The manner, and even partly the matter, is coloured by the medium; so that, for instance, we have to speak of the Piper-Myers, the Verrall-Myers, and the Holland-Myers, as to some extent different people, though also to a great extent similar.

For instance, one and the same sentiment or fact can be expressed through Mrs. Verrall by classical language and allusions, through Mrs. Holland with some poetic composition and literary style, and through Mrs. Piper in simple English.

If a child were the medium, it would be reasonable to expect some childish turns of phrase; whereas the brain of a scholar naturally furnishes an instrument of greater power and scope.

The communications which immediately follow are all from the Piper Gurney, or, as Mr. Piddington denotes it, from Gurney<sub>P</sub>.

A few episodes are said by the control to be private, he did not want them told to others or published, and accordingly these are perforce omitted. They were of an identifying nature, and conveyed information as to facts previously unknown to me; I was permitted to mention them to Mr. Myers, and they turned out to be true. I am informed however that they had already come out in the presence of sitters aware of the facts; so that they had not the evidential importance that might attach to them if they had been mentioned a first time while only one who was ignorant of them was present. Of some I have no record, and these I have practically forgotten. But I remember this,—that I learnt in this way more about the life and thoughts of Edmund Gurney than I had known in his lifetime. My acquaintance with him was not intimate, and its history can be briefly given. It began in the early seventies, when in order to proceed with his study of Sound, he came as a senior student and sat on the benches of University College, London, to listen to my regular college lectures on Mechanics and Physics, in classes

with which I was entrusted at that time by Professor Carey Foster. He was good enough to strike up a friendship with his youthful instructor, and I occasionally lunched with him, and once or twice saw him in his rooms at Clarges Street.

The talk gradually turned upon psychical matters, concerning which I was—as were most young physicists in those days—entirely sceptical and completely ignorant. Though he did not let it consume the whole of his time, I recollect that Mr. Gurney was even then at work on systematic preparation for the book, *Phantasms of the Living*, and that his room was strewn with papers and printed slips. Before long he introduced me to his friend, F. W. H. Myers, who, like Mr. Gurney, was patience itself in trying to inspire my superficial and dogmatic materialism with an element of larger sense.

A few years after all this the S.P.R. was founded, but I was not one of the original members. I joined, I suppose, after the Liverpool thought-transference experiments in 1883 and 1884. I had migrated to Liverpool in 1881, and remained there till 1900. Professor Barrett I had of course known all along as a physicist, and in the eighties we had some conversations on thought-transference in connexion with the Liverpool experiments, in some of which I took part, and on which I reported in the *Proc. S.P.R.*, Vol. 2.

Until 1884 I was unconvinced of the possibility of telepathy; and not till the end of 1889 did the evidence for survival of personality beyond bodily death make any serious impression upon me, though I recognised the force of some of the arguments employed. The subject did not trouble me however. I knew that the facts must be in one direction or another, and there I was content to leave them; under the belief that real *knowledge* was impossible. So if anyone represents that I was keenly anxious to believe and be assured on this subject, at this or any other time, they are unintentionally representing a falsehood.<sup>1</sup>

I did not get to know Myers really well till about this date, and it was later still before I gained any genuine acquaintance with Henry Sidgwick. Before his death, Myers had become perhaps my most intimate friend; but Edmund Gurney died in 1888, at a time when I was entirely absorbed in orthodox physical experiments and theory, in connexion with electric waves.

<sup>1</sup> See, for instance, some anonymous gossip quoted by Mr. Edward Clodd in his book called *Pioneers of Evolution*, page 66.

## OLD PIPER SITTINGS.

*Sitting on evening of 21 Dec., 1889, with Mrs. Piper.  
O. J. L. alone.*

The first mention of Gurney in my sittings occurred on Saturday evening, Dec. 21, 1889, at a sitting which I had alone, taking notes as best I could; for at that time it was the custom for the medium to hold one of the sitter's hands. It is only very partially reported on page 493, Vol. 6.

After the messages already reported, ending, "It is the one who doesn't paint who is married," Phinuit went on:—

You have got a mighty good life before you. You are going to be very rich. I wish I had your life. It is through your work. There will be a change of work in two years, and you will go out of present surroundings.

[This is quoted as an example of the style of some of Phinuit's humorous attempts at fortune-telling predictions, to which every now and then he shamelessly resorts when gravelled for lack of matter (Cf. top of p. 497 of Vol. 6, also p. 525 and elsewhere).]

(A photograph of my late Demonstrator Mr. Clark was here handed in.)

O. J. L. Can you tell who this is?

Well I will try. Edmund will help me. A vessel burst in his stomach, and he passed out very suddenly. He was away, not at home. A clever fellow and a great help. He fell. Edmund sends his love to you.

(A letter from Edmund Gurney was handed in.)

O. J. L. Can you read this?

Oh, I don't know. I can't read it word for word. I can tell you what it is about.

It has got Edmund's influence on it.

So had that picture. Had you kept it with Edmund's letter?

O. J. L. Well it had been in the same pocket.

You must not do that. You mix things up if you do that. No, I can't read this letter. It is something about some books, and asking you about something. There is an illness described in it and a person in trouble. It is about an experiment or for a meeting, and about some experiments. No, I give it up.

[Here the personality seemed to change and to represent Edmund Gurney. He spoke so naturally that for a time I forgot to take notes, but nothing *evidential* was said. The notes go on thus:—

They are henceforward very imperfect, i.e. fragmentary.]

I am here, I etherially exist. I wrote to you about some books for the Society.

I have seen a little woman that's a medium, a true medium. I have written to Myers using her hand. I did do it, I, Edmund Gurney, I.

O. J. L. Is this a medium here now?

Yes, she's a medium. Very few you will get like Dr. Phinuit. He is not all one would wish, but he is all right.

You are Lodge. I know you. Lodge we shall beat them yet. There is no death, only a shadow and then Light. Experiment and observation are indispensable. We have to use some method like this to communicate.

My extant notes here come to an abrupt end, the lower half of the paper being cut off, presumably because something concerning Gurney's private affairs was said which I was asked not to remember.

At any rate I do not remember what it was. One of the advantages of a lone sitting like this is that the controls seem to feel freer, and more willing to enter upon more private, and therefore more really evidential, subjects, than when a reporter is present. Before closing we discussed Phinuit's powers a little, and I told the Gurney control that I had arranged a special clairvoyant experiment which I wanted to try with the Phinuit control. That is to say I wanted to see if he could read some letters which, in that grouping, were not and never had been in anybody's

mind,—namely some cardboard letters pinched by me at random from a child's alphabet box and forthwith sealed up. I doubted if it was of much use, but wanted to try in order to test for clairvoyance as against telepathy. The voice said:—

By all means try. All these experiments must be tried.

O. J. L. Well, tell him it's very important.

Yes. Here he is coming back. (Change of control.)

Now then, what is it you want of me?

O. J. L. I want you, doctor, to tell me what's in this box, please.

No one knows.

Give me a pencil (putting the box on top of medium's head).

A pencil was handed to him and he wrote on cardboard, slowly,

L K Q U C N

and then dropped the pencil.

I am getting too weak.

Try me earlier on another time. I am going now.

This was the end of the sitting, and Mrs. Piper speedily came to.

I may as well repeat that this clairvoyance experiment, as reported in Note B on p. 494 of Vol. 6, entirely failed. The letters were not read. It is true that this matter has nothing whatever to do with the Gurney episode, but I think it better to exhibit continuity between the portion previously reported and the portion which I now report more fully. So I give a little bit at the beginning and a little bit at the end, each time.

I have no particular comment to make upon this sitting; the published parts of which are not remarkable.

*Specimens of unverifiable communications.*

People constantly ask why the communicators do not deal with subjects that are important, or which give us new information. I see no reason to suppose that we are here in contact with a trustworthy source of general information, or that the controls know more about things than we do. When an opportunity is occasionally given for miscellaneous conversation, the following is the kind of thing

obtained—at least in the case of this medium at that time; and it is not encouraging, nor does it make us greedy for more. It must be remembered that it was obtained twenty years ago, and that it is rather exceptional; so if any critic selects this rubbishy portion as a fair specimen of what comes through under ordinary circumstances, he will be criticising unfairly.

The sensory nervous system is the foundation of all etherial substance . . . . . recall mundane experience. the sensory nervous system is a medium through which the etherial intellect like mine must operate. But you must be good. Immorality, impurity, never approaches the spirit world. There are two spheres, and the good are separated from the bad.

Is it not overcrowded?

No, it is a spacious place. The body is only a covering for the etherial to grow in. It is difficult to know things when in it.

Is evolution true?

Yes, God is in Nature, all Nature is God. We are a reflexion of God. Don't give up a good thing. The world will know, and our Society will know, that there is no death. I didn't know. I would have given anything to have had you come and speak to me, if you had passed away first, as I am speaking to you now.

Is it good to be where you are?

Yes, it is good,—the only good thing.  
Life in material world is beautiful.  
Marriage is beautiful, but this is far better.

Is there no marriage?

No, no, Swedenborg was all wrong.  
Jesus Christ was right; he knew.  
He was a reflexion of God.

More than any one else?

Yes, more than any one else. And why?  
Because he was purer and better in every way . . . . .

All this does not amount to much, and it would be quite easy to suppress this portion; but, as it was at that time a part of the phenomenon, it is thought fairer to quote a specimen of what could be got when rein was given, as in this instance, to anything that came. Usually unverifiable utterances of this kind were not encouraged.

Here also I might insert the summary made by Dr. Hodgson in 1897 of what the communicators themselves say as to what appears to them to be occurring on the physical side while they are communicating. Their statements, he says, may be put in brief general terms as follow (I quote from Vol. 13, p. 400).

“We all have bodies composed of ‘luminiferous ether’ enclosed in our flesh and blood bodies. The relation of Mrs. Piper’s etherial body to the etherial world, in which the ‘communicators’ claim to dwell, is such that a special store of peculiar energy is accumulated in connection with her organism, and this appears to them as ‘a light.’ Mrs. Piper’s etherial body is removed by them, and her ordinary body appears as a shell filled with this ‘light.’ Several ‘communicators’ may be in contact with this light at the same time.

“There are two chief ‘masses’ of it in her case, one in connection with the head, the other in connection with the right arm and hand. Latterly, that in connection with the hand has been ‘brighter’ than that in connection with the head. If the ‘communicator’ gets into contact with the ‘light’ and thinks his thoughts, they tend to be reproduced by movements in Mrs. Piper’s organism. Very few can produce vocal effects, even when in contact with the ‘light’ of the head, but practically all can produce writing movements when in contact with the ‘light’ of the hand. Upon the amount and brightness of this ‘light,’ *ceteris paribus*, the communications depend. When Mrs. Piper is in ill-health, the ‘light’ is feebler, and the communications tend to be less coherent.

“It also gets used up during a sitting, and when it gets dim there is a tendency to incoherence even in otherwise clear communicators. In all cases, coming into contact with this ‘light’ tends to produce bewilderment, and if the contact is continued too long, or the ‘light’ becomes very dim, the consciousness of the communicator tends to lapse completely.”

Needless to say that in thus making a *précis* of a number of statements, Dr. Hodgson is not to be supposed as in any degree vouching for their accuracy, nor even for their reasonable sense—

he goes on, in fact, to give his own independent view of the matter—but such statements are interesting and deserve study as part of the phenomenon. They must certainly represent a subjective or dream-like impression of some true and ultimately intelligible kind.

As a further example of non-evidential statement I quote a statement made about the difficulty of recalling old memories, which I find among some reports made to me by Mr. Dorr of remarks made to a lady during a sitting in America in 1906 (cf. pp. 202-5).

(The Hodgson control communicating by the voice.)

SITTER. I want you to tell me something that you do on your side. You saw Mr. Dorr yesterday. Now what have you done since you saw him?

Oh, Myers and I, we have formed a society over here. I suppose you know that?

SITTER. Yes.

And we are investigating the conditions that constitute a medium, and I have been studying that very carefully since I was here yesterday, and that is the work in which I am engaged now. I am also looking up mediums on the earthly side and trying to find those through whom it would be safe to speak. Is that clear?

SITTER. Perfectly.

(Rector communicating.) Oh, I hear his voice just as plain as I ever heard anything. It is very clear. Some things, when dissolution takes place, go so completely out of one's mind that it takes time to recall those incidents. The impressions and thoughts in the mortal mind are removed when the spirit is released, temporarily. It takes time to recall those memories. Is that clear?

Incidentally, and as a continuation of non-evidential matter, I will also quote a little bit of Phinuitesque assertion about Christmas day which was previously omitted from the report on page 516, Vol. 6. I insert it now because it is not now my object to deal with verifiable incidents alone, which by this time are numerous, but to give an idea of the manner and method of the whole business—especially as it was in the old days.

The sitting opens with a curious episode, characteristic of the relation between the controls and the medium. They sometimes speak of 'seeing a woman going away' as they come in. A new control often does not know who she is, or what she has to do with the business. For instance, on page 453, Vol. 6, a 'Mr. Wilson' is supposed to be controlling, and to him I am explaining the desirability of eliminating the hypothesis of telepathy from the sitter "whose mind might be influencing that of the medium"; when he replies:—

I see your idea, but what do you mean by the 'medium'?  
That woman I saw just now?

O. J. L. Yes.

Phinuit of course knows her well. Sometimes the control speaks of having tried to grasp the 'spirit of the light' and give it a message as it was returning to its body. (See p. 96 of J. G. P.'s Report, Vol. 22.) Whether the same kind of thing happens sometimes in pathological cases of multiple personality I am not sure.

*Evening of 25th Dec., 1889. Control at first Phinuit.*

*Present—O. J. L. and Professor Alfred Lodge.*

Captain, do you know that as I came I met the medium going out, and she's crying. Why is she crying?

["Captain" was the humorous nickname employed by Phinuit to designate O. J. L.]

O. J. L. Well the fact is she's separated from her children for a few days, and to-day being Christmas day she is feeling rather low about it.

Christmas day! Do you think we don't know that?

O. J. L. Oh do you?

Certainly, it's the day Christ was born isn't it, and he always appears to us on that day.

O. J. L. Do you not often see him?

No, he's much higher. I have only seen him two or three times. He's very high up.

I have got your mother's influence very strong: she's been talking to Edmund Gurney—a nice fellow he is—she's very fond of you; he'll tell her all about you. She has got on a good way since she passed out. Do you know what we mean by Christ's appearing?

O. J. L. No.

We have to express it in your language. He comes to-day with a basket of flowers, forget-me-nots, and gives them to the little children. They are awfully pleased when they see him coming. (Cf. a somewhat similar statement on p. 545, Vol. 6.)

How are you Alfred? I've your mother's influence strong. [And so on as already reported, p. 516, ending,]

Convince yourself, and let others do the same. We are all liable to make mistakes, but you can see for yourself.

Here's a gentleman wants to speak to you.

(Phinuit now seemed to leave, and another control, speaking in a more educated voice, took his place; the change taking place with a little uncertainty and difficulty as to how to manage it, and a seeming colloquy between the departing and entering controls,—Phinuit giving *sotto voce* instructions. After the change was over, the voice said)

Lodge, how are you? I tell you Edmund Gurney is living, not dead. Edmund Gurney that's me: you know me don't you?

O. J. L. Yes Gurney, delighted to see you again.

Don't give it up Lodge. Cling to it, it's the best thing you have. It's coarse in the beginning but it can be ground down fine. You'll know best and correct(?) It can only come through a trance. You have to put her in a trance. You've got to do it that way to make yourself known.

O. J. L. Is it bad for the medium?

It's the only way Lodge; in one sense it's bad, but in another it's good. It is her work. If I take possession of the medium's body, and she goes out, then I can use her organism to tell the world important truths. There is

an infinite power above us. Lodge believe it fully, infinite over all, most marvellous.

One can tell a medium she's like a ball of light. You look as dark and material as possible, but we find two or three lights shining. It's like a series of rooms with candles at one end. Must use analogy to express it. When you need a light you use it, when you have finished you put it out. They are like transparent windows to see through.

Lodge, it's a puzzle. It's a puzzle to us here in a way though we understand it better than you. I work at it hard. I do. I'd give anything I possess to find out. I don't care for material things now, our interest is much greater. I am studying hard how to communicate; it's not easy. But it's only a matter of a short time before I shall be able to tell the world all sorts of things through one medium or another.—Who's that?

O. J. L. It's my brother. He's taking notes.

Make experiments, observe, record, Lodge. Observation and experiment are indispensable.

I have seen your father, but am not very well acquainted with him.

I suppose people thought I was well, but I wasn't. No, far from it. Lodge if I could take the same body and be the same as before I wouldn't take it. I would far rather be as I am than as I was.

What was that letter you shewed the Doctor? [*i.e.* Phinuit]

O. J. L. Oh, one you wrote to me about taking the chair for you at Liverpool.

I have met an aunt of yours; was introduced. A delightful character. Not had the advantages many have, but thoroughly good and sensible.

O. J. L. How is it they see their things?

I don't know, there is something about articles worn by spirits which retains their personality (?) and a spirit controlling a medium is sensitive to such. In nine cases out of ten they will recognise their things; it doesn't come from your mind.

O. J. L. Then it's not ordinary thought transference.

No, it's not that. Investigate. You can verify with patience. From time to time you will hear from me and I will advise you.

I met a lady in America—a Mrs. Dorr. [A lady well known to Mrs. Piper, but I did not happen to know the name then. *O. J. L.*]

O. J. L. Daw ?

No, Dorr, D<sub>o</sub>r<sub>r</sub>, a very nice lady ; very intellectual spiritual and good. I had a long talk with her, and through her I found the medium. She is a medium. These people are links between the material and spirit worlds. Their spiritual body is stronger than their material body. The light is given to them and to us. Using her organism may be bad for her in one sense, but not in another. She will never allow herself to be dishonest. Sometimes she is not well. If the physical is ill and depressed you cannot come easily.

Where's Myers? Give him my love. I want to help him. Lodge, when I passed out at first I didn't know who I was, nor where I was. I hunted about for my friends and for my body. Soon however my sister welcomed me. Three of them, all drowned. If I see Myers I will talk to him. No spirit in the spirit world is more anxious to let friends know than I was.

[Some private matter here.] Don't mention this.

Tell Myers if you like.

Myers is my confidential friend.

There is nothing I wouldn't have him know.

Kate is my wife my sister is Ellen. [abbreviated]

Lodge keep up your courage ; there is a quantity to hope for yet. Hold it up for a time. Don't be in a hurry. Get facts ; no matter what they call you, go on investigating. Test to fullest. Assure yourself, then publish. It will be all right in the end—no question about it. It's true.

O. J. L. You have seen my Uncle Jerry, haven't you?

Yes. I met him a little while ago—a very clever man—had an interesting talk with him.

O. J. L. What sort of person is this Dr. Phinuit?

[It is noteworthy that all the Controls treat Phinuit as a genuine person of whom they have to speak circumspectly when he is likely to be able to overhear what they are saying or read what they are writing. Compare, for instance, statements about him made by G. P. in the Hodgson Report; footnote to page 369, Vol. 13.]

In the present instance the Gurney Control replied to my question thus:—

Dr. Phinuit is a peculiar type of man; he goes about continually and is thrown in with everybody. He is eccentric and quaint but good hearted. I wouldn't do the things he does for anything. He lowers himself sometimes; it's a great pity. He has very curious ideas about things and people, he receives a great deal about people from themselves (?). And he gets expressions and phrases that one doesn't care for, vulgar phrases he picks up by meeting uncanny people through the medium. These things tickle him and he goes about repeating them. He said to me the other day 'Mr. Gurney what you think a gentleman said to me the other day: he said "put that in your pipe and smoke it Dr."' He picks up this sort of thing and it tickles him. He has to interview a great number of people and has no easy berth of it. A high type of man couldn't do the work he does. But he is a good-hearted old fellow. Good-bye Lodge. Here's the Doctor coming.

O. J. L. Good-bye Gurney. Glad to have had a chat with you.

(The Control here changes back again.)

This [ring] belongs to your Aunt.

Your Uncle Jerry tells me to ask . . .

By the way, do you know Mr. Gurney's been here; did you hear him?

O. J. L. Yes, I've had a long talk with him.

wants you to ask Uncle Bob about his cane.

[And so on as already reported on page 517, Vol. 6.]

The Gurney control appeared only once more in that year 1889, on the evening of Dec. 26, and speedily disappeared,—as we were, so

to speak, engaged. It seems to have been the third sitting held on the same day, and the last before Mrs. Piper went on to London. This crowding of three sittings into one day now seems extraordinary, and cannot have been wise. However, they were by no means bad ones—in fact they were distinctly good.

The following is the report: it has already been given on p. 524, Vol. 6.

*Evening of 26th Dec., 1889. Present—O. J. L., M. L., and Mr. and Mrs. Thompson.*

(Dr. Phinuit speaking and reporting in the first person.)

I could almost come back and die over again to see you.  
You tell Mary that her sister Isabel still lives; tell her she has done nobly; tell her William and I are together.  
That lazy gardener! . . . . .

(Then the voice and manner changed to that of the Gurney control.)

Don't give up a good thing, Lodge. . . . Who is here?

O. J. L. This is my wife.

How do you do, Mrs. Lodge (shaking hands).  
I remember having tea with you once.

[It was true that Mr. Gurney had done so.]

O. J. L. (Introducing) Mr. and Mrs. Thompson.

Yes, I remember you, I think. [They had once met.]  
Good-bye, Lodge; don't divulge my secrets.

O. J. L. No, all right; good-bye.

(Then Dr. Phinuit appeared again and said to Mr. T.)

Ted is asking about George.  
Don't forget to tell him I asked about him, and send my love.

[And so on as reported on page 524, Vol. 6.]

The point of this short episode is the sudden and natural stoppage of the conversation directly the control realises that strangers are present. That and the introductions that followed were all just as if the Gurney control were a person really present.

Mrs. Piper returned to Liverpool, from London, at the end of January, 1890, and we held sittings again until it was time for her to depart to America.

The Gurney control appeared again on Feb. 3rd, and the following is the report.

*At a sitting with Mrs. Piper, on Monday Evening, 3 February, 1890. Present—O. J. L. and E. C. L., afterwards Mr. and Mrs. Thompson.*

This sitting began with conversation with Phinuit and messages to Miss E. C. Lodge, who was present, and a final communication also from "Mr. Wilson", as reported on page 552, Vol. 6. (It may be interesting now to record that this "Mr. Wilson," junior, there spoken of as travelling, was my friend the Rev. John Watson—afterwards known as Ian Maclaren—at that time on a tour in Egypt.) Then Phinuit suddenly said, "Here's Mr. Gurney."

(Thereupon the control appeared to change, the impression somehow conveyed being very much as if Phinuit were leaving and another coming in his place. The voice also became different and more educated than before. No longer was I called 'Captain', nor were people's relations and personal affairs any more regarded as objects of interest.)

Here's Mr. Gurney—(change of control).

Lodge don't loose hold of a good thing. I could have done much for the Society if I had lived, but I can do still more now. It is wonderfully difficult to communicate. All the time I've been here I have only found two mediums beside this one. More people might be mediums, but many won't when they can.

O. J. L. What constitutes a medium ?

Not too much spirituality and not too much animalism, not the highest people and not the lowest. Sympathetic and not too self-conscious, able to let their minds be given up to another—that sort of person—easily influenced. Many could, but their pride and a sense of self comes in and spoils it.

O. J. L. Gurney, what about those table-tilting and physical things? Is there anything in them?

Mostly fraud. The rest electricity. A person's nerves are doing they don't know what. They are often not conscious when they move things.

O. J. L. It's like automatic writing then?

Something. Often the tilts and noises are made by them when under the control of some other spirit, and then the message may be genuine. Trance things and automatic writing are good. Often good. Other things sometimes, but mostly fraud.

O. J. L. Can things be moved without contact?

No. All bosh.

O. J. L. Then that Eglinton writing, with bits of pencil untouched?

Trickery Lodge. Not worth a thought. Most of this I have gone into, and it's as false as that elf, that fiend I might say. She bewitched me once. What's her name, that woman who smoked?

O. J. L. Blavatsky?

That's her name.

O. J. L. And what about those Indian tricks? Mango and basket tricks?

I do not know about the mango, don't remember it; but you mean that cutting up a child and flinging its legs and arms about.

O. J. L. Yes, that's one of them.

It's a veil Lodge, an ethereal veil between the thing and the spectators. They can't see what really happens. It's a delusion, it's done through ether. It's not true spiritualism, it's a gap in ether [?] But true spiritualism has been real ever since the first life that had any humanity in it.

What are you, Lodge?

O. J. L. I don't know.

You've not made it out. You are a reflexion of Christ, and Christ's a reflexion of God. We praise and bless him without tiring. Lodge, I wouldn't be back for anything. I was not happy, and I was not well. Not at all well.

Lodge, I told Myers what I told you. It's secret.

O. J. L. Yes I know, I am forgetting it.

That's right. Myers is the soul of honour, a real friend, a true man. I told it you as a test. Forget it.

O. J. L. Right, I have promised you before.

Yes, I know. Who is this?

O. J. L. It's my sister, a young girl.

Oh ; pleased to make your acquaintance.

I didn't meet you I think.

E. C. L. No, I never saw you.

Glad to see you now. I wrote a little book once, "The Power of Sound." Did you ever read it?

E. C. L. No.

You might by chance be interested in it.

Lodge I will shew you some verses I have written up here some day.

Phinuit will be coming back soon.

He's a good old man. He has a hard place. I wouldn't do the work he does for anything. Seeing all manner of people and hunting up their friends, and often he has hard work to persuade them that they are really wanted.

O. J. L. Is he reliable?

Not perfectly, he is not a bit infallible. He mixes things terribly sometimes.

He does his best ; he's a good old man but he does get confused, and when he can't hear distinctly he fills it up himself. He does invent things occasionally, he certainly does. Sometimes he has very hard work.

O. J. L. Are his medical prescriptions any good?

Oh, he's a shrewd doctor. He knows his business thoroughly. He can see into people, and is very keen on their complaints.

Yes, he is good in that way, very good.

O. J. L. Can he see ahead at all? Can any one?

I can't. I haven't gone into that.

I think Phinuit can a little sometimes. He can do wonderful things; he has studied these things a good deal; he can do many things that I can't do. He can look up people's friends and say what they are doing sometimes in an extraordinary way. But he is far from being infallible.

O. J. L. The Thompsons are waiting in next room. Shall I call them in?

The Thompsons? Oh, I know, I met them at your house once at dinner I think. No, I don't specially want to see them.

Well Lodge I must be going. Good-bye. Stick to a good thing and don't give it up. Go on with the investigation. I will help you. This will be the thing of the future, and will increase people's happiness. More mediums will arise, and communication will be easier. Good-bye.

(Here the medium seemed to sleep a few moments, and then woke up again in the Phinuit manner, putting out hand and feeling sitter's head.)

Eh, what. Oh, yes. All right. [This was internal colloquy.] Look here, Mr. Gurney has been here; he told me to express his regret that he had not said good-bye to Miss Lodge.

E. C. L. Oh it doesn't matter a bit.

I'm to tell him that, am I. Very well.

(Mr. and Mrs. T. had come in.)

Here's Dr. Thompson [etc. as reported in Vol. 6, page 553].

Again it was the dramatic character of the speaking that was impressive—rather than the things said. The conversation was carried on in an exceedingly easy and natural manner. I attach no importance to what is said concerning physical phenomena: it does not pretend to represent more than an individual opinion, whoever the individual may be; but it seemed to me interesting to ask this sort of question, to see what would be said.

The casual reference of unknown phenomena, part to fraud the rest to "Electricity," though quite common with uneducated people, was especially unworthy of Edmund Gurney, and not in the least the sort of thing he would have said to me when alive. In *Phantasms of the Living* he writes humorously of the excellent people who are ready to jump lightly from the hypothesis of "fraud" to that of "electricity", and suggests that they are equally innocent of either form of energy! But the little friendly speeches to my sister were quite appropriate to Mr. Gurney, and so especially was the readiness to depart the instant he heard that the Thompsons were waiting to come in.

"The Thompsons? Oh, I know. I met them at your house once at dinner I think. No, I don't specially want to see them. Well, Lodge, I must be going. Good-bye."

Not that he had any objection to them; but, besides the dislike of keeping anyone waiting, he had the natural unwillingness of the man of sensitive temperament to be thrown with strangers needlessly.

It will have been observed that several times in the record I have emphasised the change of control. I have done so all the more explicitly because now it seems a comparatively extinct, or at any rate a less pronounced, feature. The whole business of 'control' seemed more difficult then, and it is possible that a personality really changes now without our noticing the change so much. Then, however, the change of control was a distinct operation, sometimes appearing to be really a difficult one, that could not be managed in a hurry; and once I remember it occupied a minute or two, with a muttered internal colloquy going on, as if there were a tangle or a hitch somewhere.

The naturalness of the change in manner and memory was very pronounced. Even a reader can perceive that; but a reader may think that this is due to the perfection of conscious acting, while a sitter of any experience will hardly think that. The fluctuation of memory is certainly not artificial, it is a genuine change of personality

—whatever that may be. People may legitimately hold that the change is some kind of subliminal modification—that depends on the view they take as to the meaning and nature of control in general—but it is unmistakably analogous to multiple personality, whether that be ever due to control by actual possession or not.

Undoubtedly actual control or telergic possession used to be claimed for some of the more experienced communicators. For instance, at a sitting on the morning of February 3rd, 1890 (as reported on p. 550, Vol. 6), I asked for a certain person to come and control instead of only sending messages, and was told that it was too difficult. I pleaded “Mr. Gurney does.” To which Phinuit replied, “You are greedy. Yes, Mr. Gurney does, but Mr. Gurney is a scientific man, who has gone into these things. He comes and turns me out sometimes. It would be a very narrow place into which Mr. Gurney couldn’t get.”

The appearance of direct control is even now preserved, and at voice sittings held in 1906, after Hodgson’s death, must have seemed rather realistic. Moreover, the Hodgson control often says that the conditions are stuffy and confusing, and that he must go away to get air sometimes,—the extracts on pp. 134 and 236 suggest that he and Rector were interchanging places;—and yet, when questioned, “Hodgson” disclaims the exertion of immediate control.

The following, for instance, is an extract from a sitting with Mr. Dorr, who is speaking to the Hodgson control.

G. B. D. I wanted to ask whether you ever controlled the organism of the light yourself, or whether it is wholly done by Rector.

It is wholly done by Rector and it will continue to be. I shall take no part in that.

G. B. D. Then it is he who is speaking?

It is Rector who is speaking and he speaks for me. I have no desire to take Rector’s place. I trust him implicitly and absolutely.

G. B. D. And he constantly reports for every one?

Every one. There is no question about that. In the first place he is more competent to do it, he understands the conditions better than any individual spirit; he is fully

capable and is under the constant direction of Imperator. When I finished with the conditions in the earthly life I finished with my control over the light.

So it would appear that the changes of control claim to be now usually dramatic rather than real.

But, as said before, these dramatic changes of personality are much less marked and less frequent features in the sittings of to-day. They still appear to occur occasionally, but they are not so striking and vivid as they used to be.

It was on the strength of the experience gained by a number of such transitions of personality that I wrote in 1890 my introduction as printed on p. 453, Vol. 6, from which I will now quote a small portion :—

“On reading the record it will be apparent that while ‘Phinuit’ frequently speaks in his own person, relating things which he himself discovers by what I suppose we must call ostensible clairvoyance, sometimes he represents himself as in communication—not always quite easy and distinct communication, especially at first, but in communication—with one’s relatives and friends who have departed this life. The messages and communications from these persons are usually given through Phinuit as a reporter. And he reports sometimes in the third person, sometimes in the first. Occasionally, but very seldom, Phinuit seems to give up his place altogether to the other personality, friend or relative, who then communicates with something of his old manner and individuality; becoming often impressive and realistic. This last I say is rare, but with one or two personages it occurs, subject to reservations to be mentioned directly; and when it does, Phinuit does not appear to know what has been said. It is quite as if he in his turn evacuated the body, just as Mrs. Piper had done, while a third personality uses it for a time. The voice and mode of address are once more changed, and more or less recall the voice and manner of the person represented as communicating.

“The communications thus obtained, though they show traces of the individuality of the person represented as speaking, are frequently vulgarised; and the speeches are more commonplace, and so to say cheaper, than what one would suppose likely from the person himself. It can, of course, be suggested that the necessity of working through the brain of a person not

exceptionally educated may easily be supposed capable of dulling the edge of refinement, and of rendering messages on abstruse subjects impossible."

*End of the Gurney set.*

### CHAPTER III.

#### THE ISAAC THOMPSON CASE.

THE next case I shall take will be that of the late Isaae C. Thompson, F.L.S., for a long time my neighbour and friend in Liverpool. His family made the acquaintance of Mrs. Piper during her stay with me there, and had several sittings. They are specially referred to on pages 455 and 523 of Vol. 6, and all the sittings then held with them are fully reported (pp. 508, 523, 544, 553). We owe them thanks for allowing the report to be printed without reserve or anonymity. It is always more interesting when this can be done; and in practice it has been found that people of a low order, who from mischief or malice might possibly cause trouble and annoyance, are not sufficiently interested in our Proceedings to take any notice of them.

Excessive reticence, therefore, seems to be unnecessary; and it was on that basis that I drew up the whole of my 1889-90 report.

It must be understood that the wife of the above Isaac Thompson has no connexion whatever with the (to S.P.R. members) better known Mrs. Thompson, formerly of Hampstead, whom I shall have to mention in some portions—especially in chapter IV.—of my report.

As an introduction to this set, I will first quote what I said for the same purpose in 1890 as printed on p. 455, Vol. 6.

"One of the best sitters was my next-door neighbour, Isaac C. Thompson, F.L.S., to whose name indeed, before he had been in any way introduced, Phinuit sent a message purporting to come from his father. Three generations of his and of his wife's family living and dead (small and compact Quaker families) were, in the course of two or three sittings, conspicuously mentioned, with identifying detail; the main informant representing himself as his deceased brother, a young Edinburgh doctor, whose loss had been mourned some 20 years ago. The familiarity and touchingness of the messages communicated in this particular instance were very remarkable, and can by no means be repro-

duced in any printed report of the sitting. (Nos. 45, 50, 80, 81, 83, Vol. 6.) Their case is one in which very few mistakes were made, the details standing out vividly correct, so that in fact they found it impossible not to believe that their relatives were actually speaking to them. This may sound absurd, but it correctly represents the impression produced by a favourable series of sittings, and it is for that reason that I mention it now. Simple events occurring elsewhere during the sitting were also detected by Dr. Phinuit in their case, better than in any other I know of."

To this I have only to add that in 1906, when the recent series of sittings was held, one of the three daughters, who in 1889 were children, was married, and the son engaged; that the grandmother, alive in 1889, was now dead; and I regret to say that Isaac Thompson himself had suddenly died of an apoplectic seizure in his own house on the 6th November, 1903.

The interest of the family at the present time therefore lay in receiving communications if possible from him: and it is the episodes connected with that very natural desire, and with the corresponding appearance of an Isaac Thompson control, that I now proceed to deal.

The first attempt at reaching this control through Mrs. Piper occurred during a business visit of the son, Edwin Thompson, to America; when Dr. Hodgson introduced him as a stranger—not by name—to Mrs. Piper in trance at her house near Boston.

The effort was, I consider, unsuccessful; partly in all probability owing to the inexperience of the sitter. The position is a very difficult one. He had had no previous experience of the sittings; because in 1889, when Mrs. Piper was in Liverpool, he was only 8 years old. Besides, the character of the sittings had changed, and the writing of Rector is not at all easy for a novice to read.

Suffice it therefore to say that Edwin Thompson was introduced anonymously by Dr. Hodgson after the trance had begun on Monday, 11 December, 1905, at Boston. Messages purported to come from his father, who seemed to wonder how his son had "managed to find him." It was however a bad sitting and evidentially blank.

Undoubtedly there ought to have been another sitting without delay, to clear up this unsatisfactory interview, which clearly established nothing whatever; though I believe that Mr. E. Thompson is on the whole more satisfied with it than these remarks of mine would suggest; but unfortunately he had to return to England

immediately, and at the next sitting he was not present. From some points of view—however unfortunate it undoubtedly was—this absence of any connecting link at ensuing sittings held by R. Hodgson or others in America may be held to strengthen the evidence, provided anything further was obtained—as it was; since now the facts could hardly be supposed to be obtained from the Sitter; American strangers naturally knowing nothing about the family, and Dr. Hodgson being a complete stranger to them all, except E. T., whose slight acquaintance he had only just made.

The Sitter on 12 Dec. 1905, was a Miss M., who the same evening sent a Special Delivery letter to Dr. Hodgson conveying a message entrusted to her by the control George Pelham. She wrote:—

“‘There was a message for you,’ George saith. ‘Tell Hodgson that name the gentleman in the spirit tried to get was Agnes.’ They said you would know, and it was the day before.”

This evidently refers to a name ‘Anna’ attempted near the end of the omitted sitting. The name Agnes is quite appropriate—being the name of a daughter—and would have been jumped at by Edwin Thompson if it had occurred while he was present as sitter. It is noteworthy that Agnes was a name that Phinuit in the old days had always boggled over, pretending he could not pronounce it; his best attempt being something like Annese or Anyese, see Vol. 6, p. 478; but when taken unawares he could pronounce it well enough, though he quickly changed it to Adnes before repeating it. See p. 509.

On the next day, 13 Dec., 1905, Dr. Hodgson had a sitting; when Rector, after script relating to other matters had been obtained, wrote as reported below:—

*Sitting with Mrs. Piper in America, 13 Dec., 1905. Present—  
Dr. R. Hodgson alone.*

Didst thou receive the message from George?

R. H. Yes last night, thank you.

Have you the influences of the young man’s father?

R. H. (No.)

It seems almost an injustice to us not to have met him once more, as it would be a great help to the communicator himself and all on our side.

R. H. I have explained all to him, and he will send me some articles of his father after he returns to England. He had no more time here, and is already on his way back. He had no opportunity, before leaving home, to know what he ought to do.

We U.D. and since the spirit is now waiting with our good and faithful co worker George we shall after preliminary matters are cleared up listen to what he hath to say.

R. H. I shall be glad.

That young man hath some significant light himself.

(Scrawls were now made, ending "help me.")

R. H. Kindly tell me anything you wish.

I hold this bottle in my hand for identification. . . Bottle . . in my hand.

R. H. Yes?

I had much to do with them when in your world.

R. H. Who are you?

I used to be address [sic] Dr. I got.

[He had medical ambitions, and was partner in Thompson & Capper.—*O. J. L.*]

(G. P. communicating). He is trying very hard. let him dream it out H and he will be all right.

If he says anything clearly, congratulate him help him by words of encouragement only, remember he has nothing or no one except yourself to attract him here.

R. H. Yes. Is he the young man's father?

he is surely. Agnes is his daughter.

R. H. Yes?

So he tells me.

R. H. Shall I talk to him ?

Just encourage him a little by telling him who you are  
etc. what your object is etc. It will help him greatly.

R. H. I will explain in answer to your enquiry who I am,—that I  
am an old friend of Professor Lodge.

LODGE.

R. H. Yes.

What my old neighbour in Liv. .

(Excitement in hand which cramps and twists about.)

calm friend (Between sp.)

Li . .

(Excitement stops the writing again.)

Drugs . .

Do not go.

Wait for me.

LIVERSTOOL.

R. H. *Liverpool*, you mean.

I say so.

I say so I say so I say so I say so [sic.] . .

R. H. Yes I understand.

I say so.

Liverstool [Livestool?]

R. H. Liver-pool.

POOL. R [R=Rector.]

I live I live I had three daughters one son [true]

(scrawls over sheet) . .

I want to help them all all all. God help me to help them  
to understand that I am alive.

R. H. Yes ?

I am confused [confussed] No doubt but I will be better soon  
it is so hard to understand. You look so heavy, a black  
cloud comes over you and I can scarcely see you. Do you  
know me ?

R. H. I do not know you personally, but I now know your son who came with me. Did you not see the lady in England with Professor Lodge through whom you are now communicating? I mean the light?

Oh I cannot tell you yet wait until I find my way about.

R. H. Don't . .

Tell me all about yourself first I want to get acquainted with you.

R. H. Yes I will. Kindly listen.

I'll do my best, because I want to reach my family. very very much.

R. H. I am interested in psychical work and sent Mrs. Piper many years ago to England,—don't you remember seeing Mrs. Piper?

Piper?

R. H. Yes, and the . .

(Perturbation in hand.)

Oh yes I remember Piper. Was Mrs. Piper a Medium, an American lady?

R. H. Yes.

Oh yes Oh yes I do I do, but I'll find her out and come to you if it is a possible thing. What is your name?

R. H. My name is Hodgson, Richard Hodgson.

Can't you spell it for me?

R. H. Hodgson.

Oh he is telling me thank you greatly.

Let me think.

I am so anxious to U.D. all about this then I can talk with you.

R. H. Well, now, Mr . .

Where are we? I left my body some time ago. Where are you?

R. H. This is America where I am now.

America?

R. H. Yes.

Well well that is very interesting to me.  
You are in the body?

R. H. Yes I am.

Well, happy?

R. H. Yes, both, thank you.

Splendid I begin to U.D.

R. H. Well now I will tell you more about myself and Lodge.

My wife is better thank you I am watching over them.  
but my business will be better in time. I am trying to  
take care of it for the children.

R. H. Yes. Mr . . did you [say] that there were three daughters  
and one son in the body?

Yes . .

My wife wore *glasses* . . spectacles we called them I think.

R. H. You mentioned her eye trouble.

Oh may be so, it was on my mind.  
Who is the lady with my boy?

R. H. I don't know anything about her.

No . .

Well I U.D. I had a business called . .  
sounds like DRUGS.

I am helping all I can [this was evidently Rector.]

(Hand to Sp. 1.)

he must rest + . . [meaning Imperator.]

R. H. I shall be so pleased for you to come again and send any  
messages you wish to your family.

he will return in a moment friend but I command him to go  
for a moment. + R.

(Thump of hand.)

Mrs. . kindly

Your friend George is the very best helper we have.

R. H. I am very grateful to him.

Did his spirit seem any clearer? R.

R. H. Yes I should judge that he will probably be a very clear communicator shortly.

talk with him in general when he comes whether he gives you a chance or not. . . chance or not . . he is very earnest but he does not U.D. yet our methods.

R. H. No.

I say I shall return and help you.  
was very very glad I came.

R. H. Thank you very much.

I could not U.D. while you were here but I could see him after you left. T——

R. H. I understand.

*Waking Stage.*

(During the waking stage Mrs. Piper said)

. . Thompson [sic.] . . with you all.

[This was the first time the name had been mentioned.]

Before I let you go . . you must take this over to Mr. Hodgson.

Tell him . .

R. H. "Tell him"?

Tell Mrs. Thompson I'm very glad to be here. It is better so. I am grateful for all God has done to help me.

. . the truth will find its way.

Farewell. fare thee well . . peace . . .

(Pause.)

There was two gentlemen resembling each other. One was George, the other was another man looked something like him.

This is a great improvement on what had been obtained at the sitting before, and indicates considerable anxiety on the part of the Isaac Thompson control to manifest himself, since this time he had to overcome the difficulty of talking to a complete stranger; and save for the mention of my name as a common friend of Hodgson and himself, it is doubtful if anything could have been got. The excitement which the hand displays, as here at the mention of Lodge and Liverpool, is characteristic. On such occasions it twists and squirms about and frequently breaks the point of the pencil by pressure against the paper. It is as if the nerves conveyed too strong a stimulus to the muscles, so that until the excitement abates no writing can go on.

The bottles and drugs mentioned are symbolic of his profession. (See p. 525, Vol. 6, and cf. a similar case near foot of page 554, Vol. 6.) The things said are all true and appropriate.

One of the most curious episodes is the way in which Mrs. Piper's name is introduced. R. Hodgson says, in order to introduce himself,

R. H. I am interested in psychical work and sent Mrs. Piper many years ago to England,—don't you remember seeing Mrs. Piper?

Piper?

R. H. Yes, and the . .

(Perturbation in hand.)

Oh yes I remember Piper. Was Mrs. Piper a Medium an American lady?

R. H. Yes.

Oh yes oh yes I do I do, but I'll find her and come to you if it is a possible thing. What is your name?

R. H. My name is Hodgson, Richard Hodgson.

Can't you spell it for me?

R. H. H o d g s o n .

Oh he is telling me thank you greatly."

The perturbation in hand thus begins again when the name Piper is remembered, and then the Thompson control speaks of her as a

medium he had known, and says he will try to find her now in order to communicate.

When it is remembered that the whole thing is being obtained through Mrs. Piper's body, the curiosity of the position is obvious.

The sentence "oh he is telling me, thank you greatly" signifies that whereas the Thompson control had been trying to understand with difficulty what Dr. Hodgson was saying, he was now being told on on his own side by G. P., whom he thanks—all this by-play being, now as often, automatically recorded by the writing hand.

The way in which he receives the information that Hodgson is in America,—where in 1884 Isaac Thompson had been with me alone for nine weeks,—is also very natural; and his enquiry as to whether Hodgson is a living person or not is curious.

It is quite true that Mrs. Thompson wore spectacles, though of course this was within Mrs. Piper's own knowledge. In the previous set (p. 524, Vol. 6) a sister of Mr. Thompson's was represented as unfamiliar with them and wanting them taken off. This also was a correct apprehension of fact at the date referred to.

"The lady with my boy" may well refer to his son's engagement: though that was not in Mrs. Piper's normal knowledge, and presumably not in Dr. Hodgson's either. But of course this sort of thing can be guessed; and E. T. had clearly hinted it. (Cf. p. 176).

In fact although there is nothing very much obtained, and little that can be called really evidential, because of Mrs. Piper's previous normal knowledge,—provided any clue to the particular family had been conveyed during Edwin Thompson's sitting, in the course of which I observe that he had mentioned the name "Theodora" and also spoken of "the business,"—there is nothing that is inapplicable or foreign to the person represented, or in the least untrue, as soon as communication really began; and there is much in the dramatic details that I find distinctly interesting.

#### *Sittings in 1906.*

It may be that when the American records of this period are hunted through, a few other brief manifestations of the Isaac Thompson control may be found in them. For a record has been sent me by Mr. Piddington of an incident which was unexpectedly interpolated in a sitting of his during a visit to America in the spring of 1906.

It should be premised that Mr. Piddington was ignorant of and not interested in the Thompson family.

The following is the relevant extract:—

*Portion of a Sitting held by J. G. P. with Mrs. Piper in Boston  
on 23 May, 1906.*

Yes, we have much to say to you and we have a message to give you from a spirit whom we call Thompson. He wishes to send his love to his wife and children and says he is anxious to meet Teddy again.

J. G. P. To meet Teddy?

That is what he said.

J. G. P. Yes, I think I understand. Could he give any fact?

He says he is delighted with the change which has come to him and believes it will be a great help to him.

J. G. P. By the "change that has come to him" does he mean to Eddy, or Freddy, his son?

Ted. Ted, Ted.

J. G. P. Yes, I will give that message to Ted.

Tell him not to feel anxious about the business as I am helping him constantly.

(Hand seemed to listen and then wrote)

I was sorry about Theo's headaches but I know [she] will be better now.

(J. G. P. read "Ted's" instead of "Theo's.")

Not Ted's. Listen. Theodore's. Theo's. (read)

Yes, correct. Oh my, I hardly realized I could speak so well.

J. G. P. Was that the spirit Thompson who said that?

It was I myself. I have been waiting this opportunity a very long time.

J. G. P. Now can you tell me some incident in your past life that might be a proof of identity? And I will send it to your family.

Yes, gladly. I was writing some letters to an uncle hoping I might be able to help him just before I came over here.

Ted will U.D. this. [It does not seem to be specially appropriate.]

J. G. P. Yes?

I am very anxious to keep in touch with all my family. More later.

It will be observed how natural it is for a sitter or for the experimenter in charge to challenge a control to furnish some evidence of his identity, or to demand from him a sudden answer to a specific question.

It is quite natural and I suppose inevitable: but that it also is to some extent unreasonable must be admitted. Trivial domestic incidents are not constantly in one's thoughts, and only when in a reminiscent and holiday mood, or under the stimulus of friendly chat, does any vivid recollection of such incidents normally occur.

It is a common experience that characteristic touches, specific phrases, and sparkling sayings, are most likely to come out in the give and take of lively conversation. Silent and solitary brooding, though it may generate valuable and even brilliant ideas in a few cases, does not as a rule lead to anything specially personal or identifying—rather the contrary,—such ideas seem to spring up impersonally, or to be supplied from outside, so to speak.

It is proverbially difficult to control thoughts to order, and a communicator suddenly asked to remember an identifying circumstance, or to send an appropriate message, may feel rather as a person feels when set in front of a phonograph and told to "say something brilliant for posterity." Under these conditions any one with the gift might compose some half-doggerel verse perhaps, or might remember some poetry more or less accurately,—and indeed that is what it appears the controls sometimes actually do—but usually there would be hesitation, requests for delay, and fishing for suggestions,—something like what we find in the records. The controls cannot, unfortunately, be assisted by the give and take of friendly and stimulating conversation; for, under the conditions of a sitting, the intercourse on our side is nearly all "take" and very little "give." It is admittedly dangerous for a sitter to talk freely, because the conditions then become "loose," and more may be inadvertently given away than was intended, so that thereafter nothing obtained, however otherwise good, can be considered evidential. But then—it must also be admitted—no conversation can be in the full sense stimulating or satisfactory if its animation is hampered by a constant desire to keep back as much as possible, lurking in the background.

In order to be human a conversation should be whole-hearted and free from *arrières pensées* on both sides: but under evidential conditions that seems quite impossible. It is one of the many disadvantages under which the investigation of the subject inevitably labours.

*Sittings in England.*

We now skip to Nov. 1906, when Mrs. Piper was brought over by the S.P.R. to England; and on landing in Liverpool was met by Edwin Thompson on behalf of Mrs. Isaac Thompson, and was taken with her daughters to their home for a few days. On the evening of Nov. 9th I went over to Liverpool from Birmingham for the Saturday and Sunday, and we had a couple of sittings, in which again it is the dramatic character of the recognition that can alone be treated as of any interest.

In America it was a question, and a minor test, whether the family could be identified. Here in Liverpool of course no test of that kind was possible. The getting into communication at a strange house in America was evidently difficult and tiresome, as the first [omitted] sitting, held on 11 Dec. 1905, shows: but here in Isaac Thompson's own home, so to speak, and with his own family, recognition is easy enough,—though even there, after the interval, not quite sudden. The change of locality seems a barely recognised incident, he continues at first to talk to his son much as he had tried to do before; but the excitement, when at a certain stage in the sitting the widow let her presence be known and her voice heard, was very great and remarkable.

Here is the record, or so much of it as need be printed.

I think it desirable to report in full the initial stages of this first English sitting of the new series, although some of it may be considered dull and dispiriting; because it illustrates the difficulty that apparently exists, even under these exceptionally favourable circumstances, at getting into what purports to be clear communication with a deceased member of a family,—the difficulty being not wholly on one side. And the ultimate vivid recognition, when the recognition stage is reached, is likewise instructive: indeed to persons present it is more than instructive,—it is, in its accessory way, what may be called 'convincing',—perhaps for the moment more convincing than it ought to be.

## FIRST RECENT PIPER SITTING, LIVERPOOL, 1906.

*Held at 19 Waverley Road, Liverpool, on Saturday, 10th November, 1906, beginning at 10.50 a.m., ending about 12.50 p.m.*

*Present—Mrs. Isaac (Susan) Thompson, Edwin Thompson, and sister, with O. J. L. recording.*

+ HAIL. (Hand raised. Cross in air.)

O. J. L. Hail, Imperator!

We return to earth once more this day with peace and love + R

O. J. L. I thank you for coming now, because I am so busy.

We understand, but we must follow after Sabbaths as we understand time better.

O. J. L. But will you sit to-morrow, this Sabbath?

[That is the way these controls reckon time. By 'Sabbath' they mean Sunday. *O. J. L.* See also p. 27 of Mr. Piddington's report (Vol. 22) for other days of the week.]

We will. + R. A spirit is present whom we have seen before, he is imploring us to let him speak.

O. J. L. Yes, we wish to speak to him.

We understand you very well, friend, and you are understanding me also.

[Then came the change of control, either real or simulated, and *O. J. L.* gives place to *E. T.* as sitter.]

(Excitement in hand, many scrawls.)

I am so very glad to return again.

I have longed to speak once more.

*E. T.* Have you ever communicated with me before through this medium?

Are you by any possibility my son?

E. T. Yes, have you spoken to me before ?

Oh yes, do you not remember how difficult it was for me to reach you under those new and strange conditions? I am so delighted to see you again. I cannot think fast enough. God bless you my boy. I have been helping you and Theodo.

E. T. Was it long ago you saw me ?

I do not understand.

E. T. Can you give your name ?

What name ? R.

E. T. I do not know who it is yet.

Neither do I. R.

Theoder. THE

E. T. Oh, you mean Theodora.

All the time I am helping her.

E. T. Do you remember speaking to me before ?

God bless you. Not long ago, but it was not here. Do you not remember you asked me what I thought of your new life ?

E. T. Yes, I remember.

I am your father, I am, and I sent several messages to you through a friend who came with you, and who is now on our side. [This of course refers to Dr. Hodgson.] Do you understand, my son ?

E. T. What is that last ?

My son. I wish you to understand and to tell Theodora I am watching over her.

E. T. Tell mother ?

No, tell Theodora I am watching over her.

I want mother to know it also.

How is it you do not speak ?

E. T. Can you give any message that I can tell mother ?

[*Note, interpolated by the recorder.* The interesting feature in this

part of the record is the conscientious anxiety of the sitter not to give any clue or assistance to the control. This attitude—the result of instruction from Dr. Hodgson on the other side the Atlantic—was specially appropriate at the Boston sitting to which E. T. was introduced as an anonymous stranger, though it is less useful and may indeed seem hampering here in his own house at Liverpool, with Mrs. Piper staying with the family and knowing them all well. It illustrates, however, what is always very marked, how naturally a sitter ignores the normal knowledge of Mrs. Piper and treats it as non-existent. It seems to me that the controls likewise treat it as non-existent, and that her normal knowledge has in reality very little if any influence on the information that is obtained during her trance. The trance personalities appear to be ignorant of, or to be groping after, a number of things that Mrs. Piper knows quite well, and, on the other hand, to attain knowledge of which she is and remains entirely ignorant until she reads these records;—which it is to be presumed she does when they are printed and published, not before. (See further remarks on this subject below, page 181.) Now, however, the sitting enters on a more natural phase]:—

Tell her I am sorry I did not understand about coming here.

Had I, I should have arranged things differently for her.

Take good care of her will you?

E. T. She is here, would you like to speak with her?

Oh yes, oh yes, oh yes. Why did you not tell me before?

Mrs. T. Do you see me?

I hear her speak.

(Excitement. Breaks pencil.)

Isa

Mrs. T. Do you see me?

I do, I do, I do, I do.

Isaac.

Mrs. T. Can you call me by my name?

S S S A.

Let me free my mind and tell you how I feel.

I am not dead now, but I am speaking with you.

Isaac. I am he. Do you remember

Issa. Issa.

Susa. Susa.

MRS. T. Can you help me about Theodora?

Yes I can now, but I did not before.

Dear, are you tired? Are you tired and discouraged at times?

MRS. T. Yes, Isaac, since you went.

Better I came. Think it so.

Can't you see me?

MRS. T. No, I cannot.

Susar Susan Susu Susin

(Excitement. scrawls.)

MRS. T. Shall Theodora come in? Would you like to see her?

Yes, more than you think.

MRS. T. Here is Theodora.

She is going to get well and get stronger and better than ever before in all her life.

She has light, she has light, but do not use it. It isn't good for her.

MRS. T. You mean she could write automatically, but is not to try!

Correct. Do not let her do so, I beg of you.

Father. Papa. I wish you to get all good out of that life: that let me desire for you. [?]

Dear Theo, you have a claim to health—it is your right.

T. T. Can you tell me anything I should do to get strong?

Yes, I'll ask the Doctor, I'll call the Doctor.

(Change of control.)

Come here.

(Then the control calling itself "Doctor" entered into long medical details and precepts.)

Then the Isaac Thompson control returned and talked of business matters with his son, and was much interested to hear about the result of a lawsuit, begun before he died, and other matters concerning which Edwin Thompson gave information. The reception of the

information was perfectly appropriate and natural. It concluded thus :—

Good for you. [?] I shall be happier to understand.

I tried to tell that man who helped me reach you in America, and who is now with me. Did he tell you? I told him before he came over that I was troubled about something and hoped it would be all right. [Meaning presumably the lawsuit which was bearing on his mind.]

E. T. Are you happy now?

Yes, I am, very, because I understand and see you all, and I am so near you. I spoke of you all to him.

E. T. Who is that?

His name is Hodgson.

E. T. Oh yes, Dr. Hodgson. I understand.

And he is helping me now.

(Interpolation by recorder.)

I find all these episodes instructive, and the portion about the lawsuit was as good as it could be; but it would be tedious to strangers. The anxiety to be told about it—a matter which had weighed on his mind and caused him a good deal of worry just at the end of his life—seemed quite genuine.

E. T. Have you any messages for mother?

Ask her if she understands what I meant by Agnes.

E. T. Have you any message for Agnes?

Yes, I love you all so much, so very much.  
I wish you to know it well. Agnes.

E. T. Would you like to speak to Agnes?

I should, I should, I should.

[Agnes is the married daughter, living in another town.—*O. J. L.*]

E. T. Shall she come to-morrow or next day?

I do not understand. Ask Rector.

MRS. T. Would you like her to come to see you?

Oh yes, much. Do you remember, dear Susan,

(There appeared now to be some confusion.)

What are you talking about? Something is troubling me very much just now. Something. You are all talking at once, and I do not understand you.

O. J. L. Shall we all go out of the room except one?

No, stop talking. What is that fellow doing?

(An organ-grinder was playing outside in the street, and the sound coming in through the open window evidently introduced confusion. This must have been what was spoken of as "all talking at once.")

What are you doing? Stop it, stop it. Rector.

O. J. L. We have sent out to stop it.

What is he talking about?

O. J. L. It was a man outside, we have sent out to stop the noise.

Oh, I understand.

(The noise ceased.)

Your father is not quite satisfied with the way in which I spelt that name, but I cannot understand it very well. R.

[This probably referred to some name mentioned in connexion with the business.—*O. J. L.*]

E. T. Has my father gone away now?

He is here, but he is getting weak.

Good-bye for the present, I will speak again. Good-bye children, I will speak again. Darling S. Are you getting on well without me? I am looking after you, and when you think of me I am nearest you. You are a part of me always. I am a part of you always, a part of you always. Nearest you dear.

(End.)

There was nothing of special interest in the waking stage this time.

*Comment.*

Comment on this sitting is not specially necessary : it was a sound and satisfactory sitting with a quite realistic impersonation of the deceased, as soon as communication was once established. The incidental episode of the disturbance caused by the organ-grinder outside is interesting. The sitting was in a room high up, on the second floor, with the window open. The noise from the outer world perturbed the control, as if it were a sort of general conversation that was going on. We, the sitters, were not specially annoyed ; but the fidget of the hand increased until it rebelled, and called for cessation of whatever it was that caused the disturbance,—as recorded.

I am told that Mrs. Piper, in trance, was similarly disturbed by passing vans, and by the noise of coal being put on the fire, at sittings in London.

In continuation of what I have said above (page 177) about the normal knowledge of Mrs. Piper having little or no influence on the knowledge shown by the controls, the instance of the surprise and eagerness shown by the Isaac Thompson control when told that Mrs. Isaac Thompson was present is a case in point. For of course Mrs. Piper had known perfectly well the people likely to be present at the sitting, and had seen them assemble ; it was no news to her. But indeed everything tends to show that during thorough trance the normal consciousness is in abeyance. And, although it is true that we cannot claim anything as evidential when it comes out in the trance if it had ever been known to Mrs. Piper, I myself am unable to trace much, if any, connexion between the trance knowledge and her normal knowledge. For instance, a sitter introduced by name is no more likely to have his name mentioned during a sitting than one who is introduced as an anonymous stranger. I make a general statement of this kind believing that careful analysis will bear it out, and as a challenge to anyone who will bestow time and labour upon the work of analysing the records from this point of view. It seems to me a desirable piece of work for someone to undertake.

Of course a sceptic may say that this kind of *kenosis* is due to mere cunning ; but the time for suspicion of that kind is over with most of us investigators. It is a genuine piece of psychological information that we now desire, not anything analogous to detective work. Detective work is necessary in its proper time and place, but there are cases which have run that gauntlet, and require more advanced treatment. The Piper case is one of them.

When I speak of "Mrs. Piper's normal knowledge," I mean of course knowledge acquired in her ordinary state. Knowledge acquired while in the trance state is of course reproducible when in that state, but it appears not to be accessible in her ordinary state; and *vice versa*. I do not call that "normal knowledge."

To illustrate that the controls themselves feel that their only access to the normal Mrs. Piper is through the agency of her daughter, with whom they can communicate during trance, I extract a small fragment from a quantity of serious conversation which took place between them and Dr. Hodgson's executors soon after his death.

Mr. Dorr, I think, was conducting the sitting and speaking the remarks printed in parentheses.

"(We are anxious that the light in the future should not be adrift and astray, and anxious that past relations should not be wholly interrupted by any change of environment or other.)"

Well, no one could be more anxious about these things or more concerned than we ourselves are, and it hath disturbed us not a little to see the conditions on the earthly side. We are not quite pleased with them because the light cannot know itself, it cannot understand itself. It is shut off from communication with us on our side and it must remain in ignorance of the methods which we pursue in our endeavors to reach the mortals on the earthly side.

(But through the daughter, Alta, I have felt that you might in a sense reach her.)

Yes, that is the only way."

I do not adduce this as evidence, but as illustrative of how the phenomenon represents itself; for when it does so consistently it is reasonable to suppose that something true is indicated.

*Sitting No. 2 of the Thompsons in Liverpool, on Sunday, 11 Nov.  
O. J. L. again present.*

After a brief interlude with the Myers control talking to O. J. L. (see further on), the Isaac Thompson control appeared and continued

to the end. There was plenty of family talk of a reasonably satisfactory kind. The following may suffice :—

[In reply to some question.]

I do, I do, and remember my brother who was lame.  
Joe.

E. T. Did you say Joe ?

Yes.

E. T. Is he with you now ?

No, no.

E. T. Is Joe my uncle ? It is Ted speaking. Do you mean Ted's uncle ?

I do, Yes. Tell him I send my love to him, also greetings from this life [?] Tell him I thank him for all his kindness to you all, and I will do all I can to help him in return.

Do you understand ? Why do you not repeat after him ?  
Rector.

E. T. We were trying to read it.  
I will now read it over. (does so).  
Is that right ?

Yes, all is well.

E. T. Do you wish him thanked ?

Yes, I thank, I thank.  
Have you got it ?

E. T. Can you explain further who Joe is ?

Yes I can. Where is mother ? She will understand.

MRS. T. Do you mean Joe Coventry ?

Yes.

MRS. T. Is he helping now ?

No, not now.

MRS. T. Did he help us before ?

I thought so.

E. T. Yes it is quite true that he did when you went away and we were in trouble. He did help us a good deal.

Good. I like you to understand, and I like it very much. It helps me much to recall, recall, recall, things for you.

I want you to know I live.

I want you to know I live. (Repeated because misread.)

O. J. L. Can you send something to prove your identity?

Hello Lodge. Well if I ever saw anything so strange.

O. J. L. Hullo Thompson. Glad to see you again.

Good. Do you remember a talk, in fact many, we had about this?

O. J. L. Cannot read that.

A talk, in fact many.

O. J. L. Yes, I do indeed.

I used to wonder how much I could believe, and now I am to prove it for your world.

O. J. L. Yes, that is what we want.

Hello.

O. J. L. We want you to prove your identity.

Good. I am getting clearer every minute.

I see you all better than ever before.

May I speak to my wife alone?

(All go out but Mrs. T.)

MRS. T. Do you see me Isaac?

Yes I do see you dear, and I love you dearly. I see it clearly. I know you are, dear, and when you think of me I know it. I see. [Etc. No questions being kept, this part is unintelligible. Two sheets are removed by O. J. L. from the script, numbered 40 and 41.]

The omitted part of the record is appropriate but not strictly evidential, as the remarks of the Sitter are not preserved, and some

of it is private; but I may say that she was called by the right abbreviation of her Christian name which he always used. It is worth noting that in a previous set the 'Uncle Edwin' called her by another abbreviation—which was the appropriate one also in his case. See pp. 523, 4, Vol. 6.

Subsequently there was much talk with his daughters, and more business talk with the son, whom he called Ted as usual, but whom he did not call by a childish nickname which was asked for and not given.

### *Waking Stage.*

While coming out of trance Mrs. Piper spoke, or rather muttered at intervals, as usual; and her words were taken down, or such of them as could be heard (cf. p. 135). It is worth while to quote one record of these ejaculations—say this one, since it was a fairly typical case of an unimportant and unevidential but characteristic coming to.

Notes intruded in square brackets are added merely in order to place the reader in the same sort of position as regards understanding the significance of these sub-conscious utterances as a recorder finds himself in after an experience of many sittings.

I am aware that such explanations may irritate a certain group of people who have been all their lives familiar with trance speeches of one kind or another; but in the first place I must beg them to observe that when I explain things to members and associates I am not assuming ignorance on the part of specialists. It would be impossible to write in an explanatory fashion on any branch of even the most orthodox science if thereby one ran the risk of offending specialists. In ordinary subjects it is safe silently to assume that experienced people will understand that their knowledge is taken for granted. Again, trances are by no means identical. Each has distinctive features. Mrs. Piper's trance has itself undergone modification in the course of the nineteen years since I first knew her; and it may be useful to quote the kind of phrases employed by her during recovery—if only as a psychological study. They are seldom or never identical, but they have a strong family likeness. Here then they are on this occasion:—

“I saw you before. It is fearful. [This means that she dislikes changing from her trance state and coming back to ordinary surroundings.]

They are going away. It's awful. Too bad. Snap. [This refers to a sensation which she calls a snap in the head, which nearly always precedes a return to consciousness. Sometimes it heralds almost a sudden return; and she is always more conscious after a snap than she was before; but often it takes two snaps to bring her completely to. What the snap is I do not know, but I expect it is something physiological. It is not audible to others, though Mrs. Piper half seems to expect it to be so.]

What are all the people doing?

[Probably some of the sitters were moving about and leaving the room, under the mistaken impression that the snap meant that interest was over.]

I saw a man in the light, which looked like Mr. Thompson. Kept waving his hand. The man with the cross was helping him out.

[“The man with the cross” is intended to signify Imperator.]

The moon was shining [or it may have been the ‘sun.’ It only signifies that her recent surroundings have been bright and luminous.]

Has an old lady with him.

[This no doubt means Isaac Thompson's mother. See Vol. 6, pages 523-544.]

She is helping him read something. I could see his face perfectly.

Noise. [probably something going on outside.] They were talking to me. I came in on a cord, a silver cord. They were trying to tell me something about the children in the body. Lovely place.

Buzzing in my head. Another snap.

Miss Thompson. I thought you were small. Looking through opera glasses at wrong end. You grew larger. Did you hear my head snap? It breaks.

I forgot where we were sitting.

Why Mrs Thompson, I didn't know you were there. My cold.”

[Mrs. Piper was troubled with a cold at this time. Her intelligence was now normal.]

In further illustration of the waking stage, showing how similar it was in 1906 to what it is now, and as a further description of the curious "snap" sensation, I subjoin an extract from the termination of a sitting with Henry James, Junior, and Mr. Dorr in America in 1906.

I thought you were a stranger.  
Well, did you hear my head snap?

H. J. JR. No.

Didn't hear it? It is a funny sound. Don't you hear it at all? Sounds like wheels clicking together and then snaps. There it is again.

G. B. D. Now you are really back.

*Third Sitting of the Thompson Family with Mrs. Piper at Liverpool on 12 November, 1906.*

With regard to sitting No. 3, held on 12 Nov.—at which I was not present, though all the Thompson family were, including the married daughter Agnes—there is not much in the record to interest an outsider. The Hodgson control put in a short appearance, but the Thompson control appeared to be present nearly all the time, and said many appropriate things, though in my judgment the record does not show that it was a specially good sitting.

It may be sufficient to copy here Edwin Thompson's letter to me the next day.

*Letter from Edwin Thompson about Sitting No. 3.*

To us the sitting was most satisfactory; the most convincing part being the last few answers. Mother asked if he recognised the room, and you will see the answer is correct (the hand looked round for some time): and then when we said Good-bye, he said he never did like Good-bye; which is perfectly true, although at the time, when we said it, we did not think of it.

Are the original writings kept? If not I should be very much obliged if I might have the originals of *this* sitting.

I cannot remember the stick to which Father refers.

Dr. Hodgson [*i.e.* the Hodgson control.—*O. J. L.*] seemed most emphatic in [his part of] the writing. With regard to “Dinner at Club” [to which he refers] he had been most pressing for me to dine with him there, when I was in America, and had also written and asked me to do so. It never came off, however, as I was so pressed for time.

I will send a full report of the sitting by to-night’s post.

Yours sincerely,

(Signed) EDWIN THOMPSON.

The following are the passages in the script referred to in this letter [Isaac Thompson supposed to be communicating]:

Do you remember a stick I gave you one Christmas?

AGNES. No I do not, what kind of a stick?

I got it in the Canary Islands.

AGNES. I don’t remember the stick, but I remember your going to the Canary Islands.

That’s what he said. R.

All right I am glad you remember that.

[And then later in the sitting]

MRS. T. Can you remember this room?

Give me time and I’ll see. (Hand waves about and seems to look round everywhere.) Can it be the nursery, Sue dear?

MRS. T. Yes it’s the old nursery, where we have been so often together.

I am so glad to know and see you all here.

E. T. Emperor, Rector, it is time for us to close.

+ We are about to cease.

ALL THE FAMILY. Good-bye Good-bye.

Do not say it more [or now], I am with you although I speak not. I never did like Good-bye.

Mrs. T. May we say au revoir.

Yes au revoir.

God bless you and keep you in his holy keeping.

+ R.

We cease now and may the blessing of God rest on you all.

+ Farewell R.

*Sittings at Edgbaston.*

Mrs. Piper thereupon came from Liverpool to my house at Edgbaston; where the first sittings were occupied by other matters—fragmentary talks with the Myers and Hodgson controls, arrangements about future sittings, and plans for the London visit. For it was as necessary to secure the good-will and consent of the responsible controls as it was to conciliate Mrs. Piper herself, in making future arrangements; they would not see everybody, nor could it be assumed that they would consent to appear unless they approved the conditions of time and place. (Parenthetically I may here remark that on one occasion I had a total failure; the trance would not come on. See page 238.) But they frankly discuss the proposed arrangements and are as amenable to suggestions as real people are. They were evidently desirous that the conditions should be good, and that no undue tax should be put upon the medium. Of course their attitude in this respect may be taken as a natural self-preservative attitude of the subconscious part of Mrs. Piper's intelligence.

Other friends also appeared, and more than one important stranger was introduced during this short series.

Not till the fifth Edgbaston sitting (the 8th of this English series) did the Isaac Thompson control again put in an appearance. I do not assert that he actually controlled—probably not—but he sent messages through Rector.

The ostensible reason for his coming was because Mrs. Isaac Thompson had just sent me through the post an object connected with a living brother of his, concerning whose health anxiety was felt. I opened the packet and handed what turned out to be a necktie to Mrs. Piper's hand, after she was entranced, giving her no clue whatever. Before long it was said to belong to "the family with Agnes Teddy . . ."; and when I admitted that it had to do with the family of Isaac Thompson, I was told (what I knew) that it belonged to one of his living brothers, whose name was correctly given.

Medical statements were made, concerning facts not in my knowledge, which were said to be correct when reported; and advice was tendered, especially concerning the visits of some specified local doctor. This apparent obtaining of information from an object is very remarkable, though common enough. I have remarked on it elsewhere. It seems to strengthen the case for general telepathic activity as opposed to personal identity.

Then 'Isaac Thompson' spoke to me of a few incidents during travels which we had taken together; but those which he best recollected for the most part I did not, or only partially, and *vice versa*; so that there is nothing much worth recording. Among other things, he tried to remind me of a knife—a paper knife—which he had given me. I could not remember it; but it has since turned up—a carved red-wood paper knife which I did not use, and so had forgotten. He had brought it, I think, from the Canary Islands—a visit to which had been mentioned by the control in an evidential manner. Other things which I had forgotten may be true; but, save in exceptional cases, these reminiscences do not seem of much value.

Appropriate—though, under the circumstances of previous normal knowledge, non-evidential—messages were sent to his family, and to his brother; which were duly delivered.

Mrs. Isaac Thompson wrote to me, after receiving a record of the statements made in connexion with the necktie which she had sent me, saying that the brother (who had never seen Mrs. Piper) admitted the general correctness of the medical diagnosis, that he was much interested in the message sent to him, and that he was going to the Doctor recommended. Also that a "picnic," referred to as among the reminiscences of the Isaac Thompson control, suggested to her one at Coniston; though I had failed to remember it.

In a still later Edgbaston sitting, in May 1907, after Mrs. Piper's return from London, Isaac Thompson again sent messages to the family, with further reminiscences of events in which I was concerned; but nothing of special importance.

*Last English sitting with the Thompson family at Liverpool.*

Finally—to finish up the Isaac Thompson series—when at length Mrs. Piper went back to Liverpool, on her way to America (after a holiday in Scotland, which she had spent in the neighbourhood of the Thompson family who were also in Scotland and with whom she and her daughters were on very friendly terms) they had a

farewell sitting, at which I was not present, from which a few extracts must be made.

It must be stated that a brother of Mrs. Thompson, named Charles, had died in the interval, namely on May 22nd; this final sitting being held on July 3rd, all in the year 1907.

The following is a sufficient extract from the record.

*Sitting called No. 17. The Thompson family with Mrs. Piper, at Liverpool, on 3 July, 1907. Annotated chiefly by Edwin Thompson.*

[After Rector's introductory remarks.]

E. T. Have you anything you wish to communicate to anyone present?

Yes we have much. We bring a spirit who says he's your father.

E. T. Is he present now?

He is.

Good morning my boy, I am glad to see you again; did you and mother receive my message? you and mother.

E. T. Yes, we did.

I want to tell you that I have a new friend here whom I was very glad to meet. Chas.

He says Chas. Chas Chare Charl

E. T. We do understand, but can you spell that word correctly?

I'll ask your father. R.

[Thereby indicating that Rector is really conveying the messages.—*O. J. L.*]

Yes. CHARES CHARES  
CHARLES

[Charles E. Stevens, brother of Mrs. T. died on 22 May, 1907.]

sends love to M.

[Probably Mary his sister.]

E. T. Is that M ?

Yes.

I didn't realise I was coming over.

[He died suddenly from apoplexy.]

Oh dear I am so glad to understand it now.

Isaac has been so kind, so very kind to me.

I can't tell you how kind.

(Then he expresses anxiety about his other surviving sister, Mary, and begs that she may be looked after. Then he says he has something on his mind.)

I want you to look up a picture I ordered before I left, and it never came.

E. T. Can you tell us from whom you ordered it?

That would be difficult to get through to thee, but I ordered it from a friend of mine, who used to take my orders, and get them for me.

Tell Mary she dreamed I was there and I was.

That picture must be looked up.

E. T. Can you tell us whether it was a water-colour or an oil?

Water, yes.

Mrs. T. Yes, Charlie, the picture did come after you left, and Mary sent the bill of it to Mr. Alsop to pay.

[E. T. did not know anything about this.]

Oh I am so glad to understand.

Mrs. T. That is good, and all done with. Is there any other message thou would like to give about anything?

(Then again he refers to his sister.)

Take good care of her and do not let her go off alone.

Mrs. T. We will do our best.

She will come over to me some time but before she comes I want you all to look after her.

MRS. T. But you have no reason to think that she will join you shortly ?

I have reason for asking you to take good care of her.

Ted, is this you ?

E. T. Yes it is, Uncle Charlie.

I *am* glad to see you.

(Then he gives his nephew business advice and again refers to family matters, mentioning names quite familiarly and correctly, though some of them were also mentioned by the sitters, in a fairly natural conversational way on both sides,—though of course all rather of the anxious and telephonic order necessitated by the difficulties incidental to the situation.

Then ‘Charles’ disappeared, and his brother-in-law, ‘Isaac Thompson,’ once more sent messages and advice about business—showing rather detailed knowledge on some points. Then he addressed Mrs. Thompson again :—)

Oh dear Sue, did you understand my message ?

MRS. T. Do you mean the message that came through Sir Oliver ?

Yes I do.

MRS. T. Yes I did get it. Did you see Charlie when he went over ?

Oh yes, I was by his side and helped him to find his way.

MRS. T. We were so sorry to part with him.

Yes I was so glad to see him . . . he is always near you all.

MRS. T. And Isaac, we want to send our love to thee and Charlie. Theodora is here and Agnes is downstairs.

Theodora dear are you better. (Theodora had just come into the room.)

I say *you*. R. Because I understand it better. Rector. He says Thee, but I say you. I understand it better.

MRS. T. We understand.

(Then after long medical advice from “Doctor” to Theodora Agnes comes in and says)

A. Here is Agnes. Is my father there?

Well dear I have been waiting to speak with you.

A. What is that?

I have been waiting to speak with you.

A. Can you call me by the name you used to call me?

Yes . . . Yiyi [But this name had been given away by her in a previous sitting.—*O. J. L.*]

A. Yes, that is what I wanted.

Do you remember how I used to explain about your work?

Tell me dear you are happier now?

A. Yes, I am.

Do you understand when I come to you when seem bothered?

A. Yes, I do. What is the little light I often see?

(Hand excited.) Agnes dear do you understand that light? I, it is I who bring that light to you.

A. When there is another light beside the big one what does that mean?

It is your brother here [meaning a deceased infant brother].

Never feel that I forget you for a minute. I never do.

There is a young girl here who sends love to Helen.

A. Is it Nita?

Yes (emphatically) yes she says.

A. Has she any message for Helen?

Yes, she says tell her not to think I am far away. I am trying to help and cheer her, but she seems not to know me and goes on weeping. I do not wish her to do so more. Ask her to get my little brown purse and keep it.

A. Have you any message about little Donald?

Yes I wish so much to make her understand how I am trying to reach them all.

Yi Yi are you there dear?

Listen. A young girl is trying to send her love to her Mother.

A. Her Mother?

Mother and Donald and all . . . too.

Will you tell her?

A. Yes, I will tell her. Has my father any message for me or my husband?

Ask her if she remembers a very pretty handkerchief he gave me one Christmas.

A. Yes, Helen has it now.

Helen, oh I want her to have it.

Give my dearest love . . . Yes indeed all.

Tell them I am better off, and very happy, if they will only be so too.

A. Who does Nita want to look after Donald?

BERTRAM—very very much and Mother also. Good-bye.

. . . . .

I could say much more to you, but I can't now Dear.

Yes dearest, you feel troubled don't you? Well I do not wish you to.

MRS. T. I can't help it Isaac.

But don't, if you only won't I know dear Sue everything is *all* right.

(E. T. indicates that time is up.)

Yes but let me say one word more; may I not?

E. T. Yes, but we have only one more minute.

Sue dear, feel that all is going to be right, and it will be, and we shall meet again.

Mrs. T. Yes, that is what I am looking forward to,

I too, when it is right. I shall be so glad. That is what light is for. Good-bye.

Ted my boy I am not overlooking you at all, my love and *all* my help for you; father.

+ we cease now, and may the blessings of God rest on you.

+ Farewell (R).

That is the last of the Isaac Thompson series of messages. They are reported because of their simple domestic character and the appropriate knowledge and anxiety they show; though few of them can be regarded as technically evidential.

*Remarks on Relics.*

In this last sitting the unexpected, though rather hoped for, appearance of the uncle (brother of Mrs. Isaac Thompson) recently deceased, is rather striking; and his messages are all quite appropriate. (Of course Mrs. Piper had heard of the death, since she was in friendly relation with the Thompson family.) It need not be supposed that he was actually in control: presumably it was Rector who was reporting in the first person all the time.

It will by some people—who might otherwise be in favour of some form of spiritistic hypothesis—be thought absurd that reference should be made under such circumstances to trifles like ordered but undelivered pictures, and to trivialities like the possession of a handkerchief or other relic. The usual excuse is that these things are mentioned for purposes of identification; but though there may be some truth in that view, there is, in my judgment, more reason than that for such incidents, and they are not contradictory of the notion of survival. The fate of objects once regarded with affection, or even interest, and possessing any kind of personal association, does not seem to have suddenly become a matter of indifference. Scattered through all the sittings are innumerable instances of this sort of curious memory of and interest in trifles; so that it would be merely tedious to refer to pages where they occur. Every experienced sitter knows that such references are the commonest of all. What is the explanation? I am not prepared with a full explanation; but, granted the most completely spiritistic hypothesis, it would appear that the state after death is not a sudden plunge into a stately, dignified, and specially religious atmosphere. The environment, like the character, appears to be much more like what

it is here than some folk imagine. This may be due to the effort and process incidental to the condition of semi-return, under which alone communication is possible: it appears to involve something less than full consciousness. But it goes rather further than this, since a few of the controls, when recently deceased (a pious old lady in particular is in my mind), have said that the surroundings were more "secular" than they expected; they have indeed expressed themselves as if a little disappointed, though they nearly always say that the surroundings are better than they are here. Anyhow, there appears to be no violent or sudden change of nature; and so any one who has cared for trinkets may perhaps after a fashion care for them still.

But there must be more than that even. Objects *appear* to serve as attractive influences, or nuclei, from which information may be clairvoyantly gained. It appears as if we left traces of ourselves, not only on our bodies, but on many other things with which we have been subordinately associated, and that these traces can thereafter be detected by a sufficiently sensitive person. This opens a large subject which I have touched upon once or twice already in other papers—never with any feeling of certainty or security—and which requires careful handling lest its misunderstanding pave the way for mere superstition.

But to return to common sense, and without assuming anything of this kind, even hypothetically, how do we know that we are right in speaking of some things as trifles and other things as important? What is our scale or standard of value?

No one expects people to be wholly indifferent as to the posthumous disposal of their property, provided it amounts to several thousand pounds. They make careful wills, and would, if they knew, be perhaps displeased if the provisions were not adhered to, or if their final will was lost.

Very well, on what scale shall we estimate property, and how shall we measure its value?

It is conceivable that, seen from another side, little personal relics may awaken memories more poignant than those associated with barely recollected stocks and shares.

That at any rate is the kind of idea which naturally suggests itself in connexion with the subject. Our terrestrial estimate of the comparative importance of things is not likely to be cosmically sufficient or perennially true.

However that may be, it is clear that the various Piper controls

do not estimate the importance of property by any standard dependent on pounds sterling. As a variant on old lockets, old letters, and other rubbish, in which Phinuit seemed to take some interest, I once gave him a five-pound note. It was amusing to see how at first he tried to read it—in his usual way by applying it to the top of the medium's head;—and then on realising the sort of thing it was, how he crumpled it up and flung it into a corner with a grunt, holding out his hand for something of interest. Needless to say, I did not share in this estimate of value, and, after the sitting, was careful to rescue the despised piece of paper from its perilous position.

*End of comment upon the Isaac Thompson Series.*

## CHAPTER IV.

### MESSAGES RECEIVED THROUGH MRS. THOMPSON.

#### THE 'MYERS' CONTROLS.

Now let us enter upon the episodes where F. W. H. Myers was supposed to be controlling, or at least communicating, while I was present. I shall begin, however, with communications received not through Mrs. Piper, but through other mediums. Most of the Piper-Myers messages were obtained, and must be dealt with, by Mr. Piddington; because they often involve cross-correspondences, which belong to his department of the work. Moreover, in the recent series of sittings I had but few conversations with the Myers control as modified or represented by Mrs. Piper—what we call the "Piper-Myers" or Myers<sub>p</sub>. I fear I did not give him many chances, and one day was rather rebuked by Rector for not affording the Myers<sub>p</sub> control more opportunity for utterance. This was because I usually had something else ready that I wanted to try. So neither from Myers<sub>p</sub> nor from Hodgson<sub>p</sub> did I get very much in these recent sittings.

And of course in the old days, 1889-90, both had been in full vigour of life.

But it so happens that long before Mrs. Piper arrived, and very soon after Mr. Myers's death, I had had a couple of unexpected and exceptional sittings with the well-known Mrs. Thompson, at that time still living at Hampstead. She had suspended sitting altogether; but she kindly allowed myself and my wife to sit twice with her,—she said she felt impelled to do so,—on two occasions when she happened to be visiting friends in or near Birmingham.

Accordingly the first, and certainly the most striking, of the communications that I have to report are not from the Piper-Myers, but from the Thompson-Myers or Myers<sub>T</sub>.

There was a certain amount that was dramatic in these sittings and a little substantial information concerning unknown facts which I subsequently verified, together with a few which are not yet verified and therefore perhaps erroneous.

*Sittings with Mrs. Thompson.*

Sittings with Mrs. Thompson are first reported on by several members of the Society in Vol. 17; where there is first an introduction by myself, with a posthumously published paper by Myers (giving a history of this case on p. 69); then papers by Dr. van Eeden, Mr. Piddington, Dr. Hodgson, Miss Johnson, and a long and important discussion with details by Mrs. Verrall.

A fairly full account of Mrs. Thompson's sittings and controls is given by Mr. Piddington in Vol. 18, *Proc. S.P.R.* His remarks on the trance are on pp. 106-7; also on pages 147 and 157. Those who have read his report will know that her chief control represents itself as her deceased daughter Nelly, and that it talks in semi-baby language, and with the kind of intelligence appropriate to a clever child. Instances of 'Nelly's' occasional modes of speech are quoted on page 158, and again on p. 162, with further instructive details on and about p. 209 and p. 221, Vol. 18.

Other controls are described on pp. 126-135. Some inter-relation between 'Nelly' and Miss Rawson are referred to about p. 207, and a Gurney control on p. 301.

Mrs. Thompson was so well acquainted with Mr. Myers and his family that no evidential importance can be attached to remarks and messages concerning that family, obtained through her mediumship, however natural they may be. These are therefore all omitted. Reference to trivial facts and domestic affairs are good as evidence only in the case of unknown strangers: in other cases they are only of use as contributing to the dramatic character and personal expression of the whole. From this point of view I regret some omissions, which nevertheless have been considered necessary.

A further statement can be made. It may be recollected that Dr. Hodgson experienced only poor sittings during his few opportunities of meeting Mrs. Thompson, that he accordingly formed an unfavourable estimate of her powers, and published his views in

*Proc. S.P.R.*, Vol. 17, p. 138. But, speaking for myself, I form my own opinions on the subject, and do not agree with his criticisms; though doubtless the reader may be influenced thereby.

I now return to the description.

Mrs. Thompson's trance is an easy trance, not so complete or striking as Mrs. Piper's, but it is a state of suspension, or partial suspension, of ordinary consciousness, and is accompanied by a change of voice and manner.

In the sitting which follows, 'Myers' was represented as controlling and speaking for part of the time, but the sittings began with the "Nelly" control, and when the Myers control is not manifestly intended to be speaking, the words may be taken as emanating either from Nelly or from one or other of Mrs. Thompson's ordinary controls—it does not matter which, since I am not studying Mrs. Thompson's phenomena, but am giving what appear to be messages from or about Myers, who died on 17 January, 1901.

The first sitting was on Thursday, 19 Feb. 1901, that is to say just about a month after his decease. Present, only myself and wife with Mrs. Thompson. At 6 o'clock the control Nelly began talking about Myers, about whose death she had been for some time incredulous. Indeed she had declared that she could not find him anywhere and did not believe that he had come over. See J. G. P.'s paper, Vol. 18, p. 240, also 238. But now she was just beginning to admit the fact.

*Tuesday, 19 February, 1901. Sitting with Mrs. Thompson at 225 Hagley Road, Birmingham. Notes by O. J. L. and M. L.*

6.0 p.m. I was allowed to go on his birthday to see him. They will have plenty of work to do, for he has promised to send messages to 74 people.

All the people said he was dead, but I did not believe it; and though I saw him, I thought he only came over for his birthday like in a vision. But I see him now. *It is the truth, it is the truth* (excitedly). Let us see if he can talk sense. He was talking on the platform with you. It was at a station by a race-course. [I had met him at Liverpool; seen him off from the landing stage to America. But this is unimportant.] He will come when he is more wakened up—before 9 o'clock. You be ready at 25 minutes to 9. He will

be awake by then. He would rather think and realise for a little space by himself.

He is sensible, for a spirit.

Before you came, mother was praying. She said "Come and tell the truth for truth's sake."

(At 6.30 Mrs. Thompson came to.)

Then we had dinner, and at 8.30 the Control Nelly appeared again, saying

What is the matter with the little girl's throat? her ear seems to have made her throat ache. One of yours—a twinkle one.

[This is of course a mere friendly interlude. One of my twin daughters was often troubled with ear-ache about this time.]

(Here there was an incipient attempt at a Myers control, and an incident at a Club was referred to. Then another control said)

Do you know he feels like the note-taker, not like the spirit that has to speak. I think he will speak presently.

(A short interval of apparent discomfort, and then 'Myers' purported to communicate)

Lodge, it is not as easy as I thought in my impatience. Gurney says I am getting on first rate. But I am short of breath.

Oh, Lodge, it is like looking at a misty picture. I can distinctly feel I ought to be taking a note of it. I do not feel as if I were speaking, but it is best to record it all.

Tell them I am more stupid than some of those I had to deal with. Oh, Lodge, what is it when I see you? Was it the Albemarle Club we went to when I talked about — oh, it leaves off.

Sidgwick knows I am with him. He said that he saw me in the morning of — Oh, dear, it always leaves off in the interesting places.

I can hear myself using Rosa Thompson's voice.

I want to convince Sidgwick. He says "Myers, now we are together, you convince me that I am sending my messages, and that she is not getting them from us some way." He still wants me to show him. He says he saw me in the morning of the day he went to Trevelyan. He met Trevelyan, and he saw me first. I am trying to show him the way. It is funny to feel myself talking when it is not myself talking. It is not my whole self talking. When I am awake I know where I am. Do you remember the day I was with you here? When I went home that day I was ill. I had such a bad night. It is in my diary. It was in May, I think. I was very ill. [This about Trevelyan seems to refer to an incident dealt with by Mr. Piddington. See *Proc.* Vol. 18, pp. 239, 241.]

[The description of the feeling of the control while engaged in communication agrees closely with that of Dr. Hodgson based upon his experience of Mrs. Piper. See for instance Vol. 13, pages 366, 380, 404, 405. And the forgetfulness immediately following may be compared with Rector's statement, p. 148 above.]

O. J. L. Do you want to say anything about the Society?

What Society?

O. J. L. You remember the S.P.R.

Do not think that I have forgotten. But I have. I have forgotten just now. Let me think. You know, Lodge, when you have wanted a thing thirty or forty years, and at last got it, you do not think of much else beside. Let me think, and bit by bit give it you. I used to get better evidence when I let them say what they wanted to say.

They tell me it was my best love that Society. They will help me.

What did Battersea say about it?

O. J. L. I do not know.

I am going to talk to you clearly and very distinctly in April. I do not know my Mother's name now. . . .

What James gave me to make me sleep did not do me any good.

There is plenty of good matter in those papers that I left, . . . if it is gone through. You remember the discussion there was over Hyslop's paper and its length? If it is put in too much detail, there is too much of it; and yet if you put it fully it is there for those who want it full; and you can pick out the points too. . . .

I was confused when I came here. I groped my way as if through passages, before I knew I was dead. I thought I had lost my way in a strange town, and I groped my way along the passage. And even when I saw people that I knew were dead, I thought they were only visions.

I have not seen Tennyson yet by the way.

I am going to be bold and prophesy already. I am going to see you in April. I am going to know who I am by then.

O. J. L. And will you then read what you wrote in the envelope?

What envelope?—I shall be told.

Ernest does not mind now. What do they mix me up with him for? (Jocularly.) Do they think I want to shine in his glory?

[This was evidently a reference to the "Times" obituary notice, which I had written, but to which some one in the "Times" office appended a supplementary statement that F. W. H. M. had been a joint translator of Homer together with Walter Leaf and Andrew Lang; whereas it is public and general knowledge that this was only true of his brother Ernest.]

I wanted you to do for me what I did for Sidgwick. [*i.e.* write a notice in the Society's *Proceedings*.]

O. J. L. I am going to; and so are Richet and James.

Ah, Richet: Yes, Richet knows me; and James will do it well.

I never finished those letters I was writing—letters to be published.

[Probably meaning the book “Human Personality.”]

[Then the control seemed to change, and it went on]:—

He says he must stay and try and help. He says, Bless him when he has so much to do. He says “Brothers I have none excepting Lodge.” He wants Lodge to be President if he dare spare the work; but he says “Do not rope yourself, but keep the group, keep the group together. It will soon take care of itself.”

O. J. L. We are trying to get Rayleigh.

That will be splendid, but that is too good to hope for. I think it will be you. Thank you for being helpful to him. You have helped him. Man’s sympathy is more helpful than anything else, and with sympathy everything slips into place. Among the things which are not evidential you get things which are. They must take it all. Those that seek only the evidential things will not get them.

There are so many he would like to help. He promised, and he will have to.

When he comes in April he will remember a great deal more. He will remember what he wrote for you in the envelope.

(Trance ends about 10.30 p.m.)

The impersonation at this sitting was really a remarkably vivid and lifelike one. It occurred only a month after the death of F. W. H. Myers, and the state of confusion in which the Myers control found itself seemed very natural. Indeed, it would be difficult for me to invent an experience or a communication more reasonable and natural under the supposed circumstances than what we actually got. The necessity for still “convincing Sidgwick” struck us as amusingly characteristic; so did several other little traits, such as that Myers “felt as if he ought to be taking notes”—a point on which F. W. H. M. was always specially insistent. And as to his temporary forgetfulness of the existence of the S.P.R., though it will probably be pounced upon as an absurdity by scoffers, and though it was of course quite unexpected, yet even that struck

us at the time as humanly natural and interesting. And indeed so it does now. (Compare Rector's statement on p. 148.) With the portions omitted and everything taken into account, this sitting seems to me about the best of the Myers sittings in which I have been immediately concerned. Without being strictly evidential, it was in fact as convincing as anything that could be imagined of that kind.

This was in February, 1901. A further communication was promised for April, but no opportunity for another sitting came until May 8th, and then it came quite unexpectedly and without being arranged for. In fact at that time it was unlikely that any sitting would occur, since we had all been definitely told that they were suspended, or rather that they were intended henceforth to cease.

#### SECOND THOMPSON SITTING AT EDGBASTON.

On May 8th, 1901, Mrs. Thompson happened to come to Birmingham again to see her connexions there; and she incidentally visited us at our temporary house in the Hagley Road.

I made the following contemporary notes, and it seems to me worth while to reproduce them as a representation of the circumstances of the case at this time.

*From O. J. L.'s Note-book, 9 May, 1901.*

After dinner Mrs. Thompson spontaneously asked Mrs. Lodge to take her up into my study, saying as she went upstairs that she felt only half conscious, and as if she were going off.

Upstairs we three alone sat and talked for some time.

At last "Nelly" appeared and notes began: Mrs. Lodge taking them as well as myself. Mrs. Lodge spoke no word during the trance from first to last.

The sitting was dim and unsatisfactory and in most respects apparently at the time a failure. It lasted about an hour and a half, one continuous trance, and at the end Mrs. Thompson was much agitated; not exhausted, but weepy; saying how much she disliked the idea of coming back to consciousness and leaving the conditions in which she had just been. She said she had no recollection of what had been said; and this appeared to be the case. She also told me, before the sitting began, that of late she had been quite unconscious of any communications, that is to say, she could not remember their contents, but that she was under the

impression that during the last month or so she had had three or four trances when no one was there, at different times, and that once she found herself waking on the floor with a feeling of great satisfaction and contentment.

She further said that the sudden cutting off of all attempts at communication had been a great blow to her and seemed to upset her physically to some extent. Also that she had been promised something for her birthday, April 22nd,—evidently connecting it with me. 'Nelly' had indeed promised me a sitting in April, [as recorded in last sitting] though not for any particular date. But it seems she had expected it on the 22nd. However I had no sitting in April—nothing till this May 8th.

The difficulties of clear utterance at times rendered it necessary for me to help the ideas out, or anticipate them as far as I could. My notes aim at recording the sense of what was intended, and can only be of interest to those who understand.

*Additional Note written on 11 May, 1901.*

The above was dictated before copying the notes, and gives my contemporary impression of the sitting; but on reading over the notes I find them better than I expected; and now think that though at the time it seemed a bad sitting to everybody concerned, it is not really bad; though the utterances were so feeble and confused that to a novice it would have been nearly all gibberish. A little gibberish remains undeciphered in places; but is recorded in case any meaning can be attached to it. I do not think it is gibberish really,—only as heard and taken down. It probably had sense if it could have been heard and understood, though most likely not at all important sense.

*Second Sitting with Mrs. Thompson at 225 Hagley Road, Birmingham, 8 May, 1901, from 9.0 till 10.30 p.m.*

*Present*—O. J. L. and M. L., both taking notes.

*(Nelly speaking.)*

Professor Lodge, what is that umbrella they have put up and made it all dark? I wish they would take it away.

(Further indications followed that she had tried to communicate but found it dark.)

[This evidently refers to the suspension of sittings; Mrs. Thompson, for some private reason, having declined to sit for the last few months, and only doing it now as a special favour, and because she felt internally urged to do so.]

I have not seen Mr. Myers, not once; I have not seen him since they put that umbrella up.

Nelly then appealed to me to try and believe her and receive her statements sympathetically and not with an undercurrent of suspicion, explaining that such undercurrent befogged her, and that she could give me better things if I was sympathetic. I asked her not to regard me as in any way hostile, and she said "No, I do not feel like that to any of the Marshall family." This remark was not amplified, nor did it seem understood by Nelly herself.

It is perhaps worth noting incidentally that my grandmother and my wife's father were both Marshalls, though no relation whatever to each other, nor to Frederic Myers's relations of that name.

Nelly then sent a few messages to Mr. Piddington, and incidentally remarked that she felt as if in a pound in the middle of a field, and as if she could not see clearly the people on the other side of the enclosure, and that communication was very difficult and not clear to-day.

Then followed some convulsive movements and a sort of internal colloquy of which only fragments were audible. They appeared however to indicate a confused conversation between Nelly and Mr. Myers, Nelly asking him to come in, and Mr. Myers saying that he had been told not,—that he had understood the communications were suspended for a time.

But this was only an impression gathered from the confused mutterings. A further impression was that Mr. Myers mistrusted the presence of a third person and was being reassured by Nelly that it was only Mrs. Lodge.

It's only Mrs. Lodge whom you love.

No I don't love her.

It's only Lodge's wife, who will help.

More than I anticipated much more.

With other barely intelligible fragments of internal colloquy.

Ultimately the conversation with me began again but in a very halting and indistinct fashion, no marked personality at all, somewhat as if Nelly were half giving messages and half personating Mr. Myers, and doing both badly and with difficulty.

The following however are my notes of what was said:—

Mr. Myers is worrying about something connected with Mr. Sidgwick, something that was not understood or that was not put down. He [H. S.] had some Jews in College and he could not do it on a Saturday.

Tell Feilding that he is doing something that is waste of time. The Times said something about it and said it was valuable.

[But I understood the communicator to mean that it was not. I do not know what work is being referred to.]

The first shock to my dearest hopes.

So stupid not to tell them what I wished.

The time was gradually passing.

You know Sidgwick and I had many disappointments like this [when communications would not come clear?]

I thought I should do better, but I cannot. [cf. p. 227.]

We had many, a year, a hundred, at Newcastle. Bitter disappointments.

But when I can give pound [muddle]

Given a grain and found as much as would have been, for Sidgwick, in that hundred.

Mrs. Sidgwick was cold on a brick floor.

A hundred results nil.

It is true Lodge it is true.

I tried on the Sunday with.—

I saw the receptacle, but not this one. It was Hodgson and Smith and I. We were all in my room together, and I told him.

I told him I would find no difficulty, if he were in difficulty, in putting things straight;

But it is.

[Meaning that it was much harder than he thought.]

I thought I knew better than be such a miserable failure.

I thought I would come and read it.

[Apparently or *possibly* meaning the sealed letter.]

I had gone away. I thought I was not to communicate now.

It is not the time now.

I wished you would all write to me. I was so far away. I pined to hear from you all.

My philosophy did not help me much.

I feel just as lonely. Lodge, it is just as they say, you grope in fog and darkness.

I do not know, when I come to talk to you, about the other side.

But I must do as I promised.

I feel I am selfish still.

I wanted it for my own satisfaction.

Further indications that the conditions under which he was were not altogether to his liking, not at least when trying to communicate; and also further statements that he could not very clearly realise the conditions on that side when he was trying to communicate, and that now he was wishful to pass on and up and not stay to redeem his promises.

Is the typhoid better?

What are you doing in this place?

[Apparently meaning strange and unfamiliar surroundings, the temporary house in Birmingham which I had taken, and which he had never seen.]

I had plenty of this kind of unsatisfactory experience [meaning bad sittings.]

James went with me.

I seemed to be taken from all my pain and suffering into light.

I hardly like to tell you what I wanted to do, it seems so selfish now, but I wanted to go and talk to Tennyson, whom I idolised. But I was told that I must suffer for my promises, and then I could have what I wanted.

I wish I had not been taken so far: it makes it difficult to communicate.

Then—referring, as I thought at the time, to Mrs. Thompson's trance which she had told me of, when she woke up and found

herself on the floor, but perhaps more probably referring to one of the incidents mentioned by Mr. Piddington in *Proc.*, Vol. 18, pp. 147, 148—the Medium went on,

I did not throw her on the floor.

It was Talbot—Talbot Forbes.

It was not I. I wanted her to know I was there, but Talbot only wanted her to tell his Mother.

Why does she [meaning apparently the Medium] pray to me and beg me to come, when she knows I want to be cleansed from earth first? I do not want her to fetch me back at all times.

They keep on calling me. I am wanted everywhere. I hear them calling, and I cannot tell who it is at first.

They tell me I am wanted. But I want to concentrate in a few places, or in one place, and not to be split up.

Do appeal to them not to break me up so, and leave me not clear in one spot.

I am only one now, and the noise of you all calling makes me feel I cannot. Someone is calling me now.

What did Miss Edmunds want with me? On Friday she called.

[A letter from America referring to this, May 3rd, arrived later.]

Tell Richet I shall meet him in Rome. I shall speak to him in Rome on the third day of the Congress.

I heard them describing how I died, and I could not stop them.

[Referring apparently to some unpublished Piper sittings in America.]

I could not say it, but they were translating like a schoolboy does his first lines of Virgil—so terribly confused and inaccurate. But somehow I could not help it. It was not me communicating, yet I saw it going on. They had something from me on the 15th.

I tried to communicate on a 15th.

[These things are referred to in Mrs. Verrall's report. *Proc.*, Vol. 20, pp. 207-9. See also Notes below.]

I tried by writing.

Moses—Stainton Moses.

They mixed the deaths up—his death and my death. It applies to him and not to me.

[Apparently referring to some unpublished and to me unknown account of the death-bed.]

How easy to promise and how difficult to fulfil.

Make one appeal to them to let me be at rest for two or three weeks after they get the note. After Hodgson hears that I have tried, however badly, ask him not to call me, and tell him that if he does, they will not let me hear him. I have gone back from where I was that night. I could hear what she (the Medium) was saying, and keep a check on it, but now I cannot hear what is being said: I can only think the things, and false things may creep in without my knowing it.

Have you ten days work in a week? I cannot protect you from the calls upon you as they may protect me.

Do you not think, Mrs. Lodge, he has ten days work a week?

(Then the Nelly Control reappears.)

Professor Lodge, do you know I have seen such a funny thing. I have seen Mr. Myers talking as if to a stick right through Mother's body; and while he was talking to it some one came up and touched it, and it all got confused, and he could not think why it went funny.

He seems to have to talk through this stick, and yet it keeps on being interfered with by other people.

I wish Mother was not so wicked; because when Mr. Myers wants to go to sleep and be quiet, Mother will not let him. She will call him. You must tell her not to. Tell her it is wicked to call him. When he wants to go to sleep and be quiet she keeps him back. She must not do it.

[I promised to give her the message; which I did after the trance, and she then admitted that she thought of him frequently and urgently, but that she would try to refrain.]

(Nelly went on,)

Do you know last Monday when I went to Dr. Van Eeden's house; he called for me and we went. Mr. Myers came and told me he was calling. We both went, yes, on Monday. He has got an impression that Mr. Myers helped him to call me. Mr. Myers said, "Let us go and see 'old Whiskers' in his little bed and laugh at him." He is much more lively when he is talking to me, and much more wakened up than when he is talking down that stick. [Cf. *Proc. S.P.R.* Vol. 18, p. 201.]

But he does seem worried, he gets no rest. Some one has called him in a glass bottle—yes, a crystal.

Oh yes, and he said it was not he that wrote when Miss Rawson wrote and said he told her. But it was not he that was writing. You know when; Miss Rawson wrote two very full sheets in the middle of a Gurney letter. [Perhaps referring to the incident recorded on p. 224.] He said it was not he, but neither was it fraud. He does not want you to stop the phenomenon. He wants to study it. You are not to say that it was wrong and get it stopped. He likes to watch the somnambulistic thing at work. It is not he that is doing it, and yet he is looking on.

He does not see how it is worked, but he finds this more interesting than the genuine communications.

He did not rattle the curtains either. Eva—now do not think I am talking about Mrs. Myers, but Mrs. Eva; they had a shaking of the curtain, and thought it was he. It was not he, but it was not cheating, and he does not want you to make them think that they are cheats. He does not know how it is worked, but he is studying, and he thinks it will help a great deal if he can understand how the cheating things that are not cheats are done. It is not cheating, and yet it is not him doing it. . . . There was no stick that went through any one's body there.

He says that others tell him it was just the same with them. Sometimes when he thought they were communicating they were not, and yet they knew about it.

"He says he is finding out how honest non-phenomena are to be accounted for.

Apparently dishonest phenomena are phenomena of extreme [interest?] apart from the spirit which purports to be communicating."

[This last part was slowly recited by Nellie, like a lesson not understood by her.]

I can't help what he says.

I must go now.

(End of sitting 10.30 p.m.)

*Notes on this Sitting.*

Some of the remarks reported above seem to indicate a connexion with statements made in Mrs. Verrall's automatic writing of the same period, about which Mrs. Thompson knew nothing. Thus there appears a certain similarity between the remark "Mr. Myers is worrying about something connected with Mrs. S." and the attempts—misunderstood at the time—in Mrs. Verrall's script between April 19 and May 8, as related in *Proceedings* Vol. 20, pp. 195–198, to describe where Mrs. Sidgwick was to look for something of the nature of a book. Again "I tried on the Sunday with—I saw the receptacle but not this one" may perhaps be connected with the sudden impulse on Sunday, March 17th (*Proceedings*, Vol. 20, p. 221), which induced Mrs. Verrall to write automatically and which produced the first reference to Mrs. Forbes in what eventually became a long series of cross-correspondences between those two automatists.

Finally, there seems a close correspondence between the above remarks as to difficulties produced by simultaneous efforts at communication and similar observations in Mrs. Verrall's script of the same day and approximately the same hour (*Proceedings*, Vol. 20, pp. 207–209). Thus in Mrs. Thompson's sitting the Myers control speaks of "the noise of you all calling makes me feel I cannot. Someone is calling me now"; he also says "false things may creep in"; and the Nelly control describes how, just before, "someone came up and touched" the stick through which communication was being made, "and it all got confused." While Mrs. Verrall's automatic script of Monday, May 8th, 10–10.30 p.m., concludes as from the Myers control with the words: "falsehood is never far away. What do you want with me. I cannot . . . . . No power, doing something else to-night. Note hour." The initial 'H' with which the message is there signed was a substitution for the real initial,

because that purported to represent F.W.H.M.; and in those early days of Mrs. Verrall's writing it was thought safer to treat this as mere impersonation.

The correspondence can be shown by a statement in parallel columns, as follows :

May 8, 1901.

Mrs. Thompson  
Birmingham  
9-10.30 p.m.

Mrs. Verrall  
Cambridge  
10-10.30 p.m.

- |                                  |  |
|----------------------------------|--|
| 1. "I cannot."                   | 1. "Non possum (I cannot)."<br>"No power." |
| 2. "Some one is calling me now." | 2. "Doing something else to-night."        |
| 3. "Let me be at rest."          | 3. "Desine (leave off)."                   |
| 4. "False things may creep in."  | 4. "Falsehood is never far away."          |

The utterances of Mrs. Thompson were not known to Mrs. Verrall when she wrote the script reported in her paper, *Proc.*, Vol. 20; but the correspondence is mentioned there on pages 207 *et seq.*

*Further Notes on the Thompson Myers Sitzings.*

The rather strikingly worded complaints and requests recorded above (p. 210), as received through Mrs. Thompson,

"They keep on calling me. I am wanted everywhere . . . .

Do appeal to them not to break me up so . . . .

How easy to promise and how difficult to fulfil. Make one appeal to them to let me be at rest for two or three weeks."

also correspond with something to the same effect independently received through Miss Rawson three months earlier; and constitute what may be fairly considered another cross-correspondence. This message, received on Feb. 7th, 1901, purported to come from Edmund Gurney, who was represented as speaking through Miss Rawson as follows, (see for fuller report below, pp. 223-5).

"I have come to warn you for my friend to implore you not to let them call him. He gets no rest day or night. At every sitting 'Call Myers! Bring Myers'; there's

not a place in England where they don't ask for him; it disturbs him, it takes away his rest. For God's sake don't call him. It is all right for him to come of his own accord. . . . What we want for him now is to rise, and to forget the earthly things.

He can't help any more. His life was given to it, and that must be the help. He was allowed just to say that he continued. That was his great desire, but it will help nobody that he should be called back, and made to hover near the earth. In fact it will only make him earth-bound.

I am tempted to quote here, from page 213 of *Proc.*, Vol. 21, a different though not altogether dissimilar extract from the script of Mrs. Holland in India which was written on January 5th and 6th, 1904, by the Myers<sub>H</sub> control:

"Oh if I could only get to them—could only leave you the *proof positive* that I remember—recall—know—continue . . . . I have thought of a simile which may help you to realise the 'bound to earth condition' which persists with me. It is a matter very largely of voluntary choice—I am, as it were, actuated by the missionary spirit; and the great longing to speak to the souls in prison—still in the prison of the flesh—leads me to 'absent me from felicity awhile.'"

This clearly expresses the idea of service to which I refer later, and it is a reverberation and later expansion of the thought expressed in the extracts already quoted, which had not been published and were not known to Mrs. Holland. But the long post-dating of this last communication destroys any claim to consideration as a cross-correspondence. Besides it was only an explanation of why the messages still willingly continued; whereas the other two—so soon after the death—are full of earnestness and anxiety.

*General Remarks, addressed to religious objectors.*

Good and earnest though moderately intelligent religious people sometimes seek to pour scorn upon the reality of any of these apparent communications—not for any scientific reason, but for reasons born of prejudice. They think that it is not a worthy occupation for "just men made perfect" "who have entered into felicity" to be remembering trivial and minute details, under

circumstances of exceptional difficulty, for the purpose of proving to those left behind the fact of survival and the continuance of personal identity. It is taken for granted that saints ought to be otherwise occupied in their new and lofty and favoured conditions.

What may or may not be possible to saints, it is hardly for me or other gropers among mere terrestrial facts to surmise: nor am I anxious to imagine that all our communicators belong to the category of 'perfected and glorified saints,'—it seems to me, I confess, singularly unlikely; nor is it necessary to suppose that such exercises as we report—even if they are fully and entirely what they pretend to be—constitute any large proportion of the activity of the people who are professedly concerned in their production—people who are confessedly far from perfection and who have still much to learn. And as regard dignity and appropriateness, does it not sometimes happen that an Archbishop or a Savant is found willing to play a frivolous childish game, and otherwise to disport himself, in spite of his being on the brink of eternity in a world of sorrow and sin?

But seriously, is it not legitimate to ask these good people whether, if an opportunity of service to brethren arises, an effort to seize it may not be made even by a saint? Whether this notion of perennial service is not in accordance with their own doctrines and beliefs? and whether they are not impressed by that clause in the creed of most Christians which roundly asserts that their Master descended into Hades? for purposes which in another place are suggested. Whereby they may learn that, even after such a Life and Death as that, Felicity was not entered into save after an era of further personal service of an efficient kind. Those who interpret the parables in such a way as to imagine that dignified idleness is the occupation of eternity—that there will be nothing to do hereafter but idly to enjoy the beatific contemplation and other rewards appropriate to a well-spent life or to well-held creeds,—free from remorse of every kind, and without any call for future work and self-sacrifice,—such people will probably some day find themselves mistaken, and will realise that as yet they have formed a very inadequate conception of what is meant by that pregnant phrase "the Joy of the Lord."

*Remarks concerning the nature of the record.*

For the purpose of making the record, which was written out very soon after the sitting, notes were taken continuously both by

my wife and by myself. The record is built out of both these, eked out by memory, and is substantially true, though I by no means guarantee verbal accuracy everywhere.

When anything depends on verbal accuracy, as it does in some cases of cross-correspondence, the writing sittings are far better than oral ones, and the original script must always be referred to for doubtful or specially interesting points.

My record aims at giving a true representation, and at conveying to the reader, as far as possible, an impression of the circumstances, the substance, and the manner of the communications,—an impression which shall be fairly correct even though not lifelike and vivid.

I have not the slightest interest in attempting to coerce belief of any kind. The facts will make different kinds of appeal to different people, and to some they will not appeal at all. These will regard the whole business with contempt and pity. They are within their rights in doing so if they have conscientiously read this and the other records. As a rule however that is where they are apt to fail; and when a person's knowledge of a subject is minute, we may be pardoned for holding his opinion concerning it in light esteem.

Those who think that there is anything sensational or specially emotional in this sort of conversation are mistaken. The conversation is conducted on the same lines as a telephonic conversation: it is liable to the same sort of annoying interruptions, and likewise to the same occasional surprising gleams of vividness,—a happy turn of phrase, for instance, a tone of the voice, and other unmistakable and unexpected revelation of identity—forged or real—such as may be conveyed by an appropriate nickname or by some trivial reminiscence. When this happens, and when relatives are present, their emotions are certainly perturbed.

These remarks are general, and are applicable to this whole group reported on by me: they are not limited in their application to any one particular series.

*Specific Comments by O. J. L.*

To me the most interesting of the whole are the concluding observations, part of which were carefully and laboriously reported by the "Nelly" control,—the words sounding odd in a childish voice.

Whatever their origin, they do, in my judgment, represent the truth about a good many of these phenomena—that is to say, that they

are not precisely what their surface-aspect implies, yet neither are they fraud. They are attempts at doing something rather beyond the power of the operators,—who arrive approximately at their aim without achieving what they want exactly. They are trying to get something definite through, let us say, and something like it comes. Occasionally they hardly know how it comes, it is a puzzle to them as to us, and often they don't know what it is that we have got; but sometimes they too seem to be spectators, aware of the result, and to be worried by the misconception and misunderstanding which they see will arise, but which they are powerless to prevent,—except, as here, by trying to instruct us and awaken our intelligences into a condition in which we too can understand and grapple with the unavoidable difficulties of the situation.

“I can only think the things”: seems to me likely to be an accurate description of the method. It is a telepathic method, and the reproduction by voice or pen is a supplementary and only barely controllable process. And, as reported above, the process of communication is instructively described as from that side thus:—

“I could not say it, but they were translating like a school-boy does his first lines of Virgil—so terribly confused and inaccurate. But somehow I could not help it. It was not me communicating, yet I saw it going on. . . . I can only think the things, and false things may creep in without my knowing it.”

“He said it was not he, but neither was it fraud. He does not want you to stop the phenomenon, he wants to study it. You are not to say it was wrong and get it stopped. He likes to watch the somnambulistic thing at work. It is not he that is doing it, and yet he is looking on. He does not see how it is worked, but he finds this more interesting than the genuine communications. He did not rattle the curtains either . . . but it was not cheating, and he does not want you to make them think that they are cheats. He does not know how it is worked, but he is studying and he thinks it will help a great deal if he can understand how the cheating things that are not cheats are done.

. . . .

[And then came the laborious sentences]

He says he is finding out how honest non-phenomena are to be accounted for. Apparently dishonest phenomena are

phenomena of extreme [interest] apart from the spirit which purports to be communicating.

It was characteristic also of Myers to feel as if he were the note-taker, not the communicator, and that he ought to be putting it all down (p. 201). Another amusing episode was the persistence of Prof. Sidgwick's incredulity (p. 202), so that he was represented as asking to be convinced that he was himself communicating, and that the medium was not "getting it out of him somehow."

The coincidence in time between the termination of this sitting at Birmingham and some writing obtained by Mrs. Verrall at Cambridge, as exhibited in the analytical statement above, on page 214, is very remarkable and worth careful notice—especially when the unexpected character of the Thompson sitting is taken into account. It really makes an effective cross-correspondence.

These observations terminate this account of communications received through the mediumship of Mrs. Thompson.

An immense mass has been obtained through her in the past (see Reports in Vols. 17 and 18), but so far as I know these are the last two sittings or among the last sittings which she has given. We owe her thanks for the time and opportunity which she has freely accorded to members of the Society for scientific purposes.

I now pass to messages received through a lady known to leading members of the Society, but who desires to remain anonymous.

## CHAPTER V.

### MESSAGES OBTAINED THROUGH MISS RAWSON.

IT is perhaps doubtful whether the following series of messages, with the reception of which I was in no way concerned, ought to be included in this paper or reported at all. Doubtless a great number of communications ostensibly purporting to come from Mr. Myers have been received through many mediums, and some of them I have seen. For the most part I regard these as valueless,—as not even plausibly lifelike representations of the person supposed to be communicating. But on the spiritistic hypothesis it must be admitted as likely that Miss Rawson—a lady well known to Mr. Myers, whose hand sometimes writes while she remains conscious—would be one of the channels of communication employed by a posthumous Myers-like activity; and accordingly when com-

munications coming through this channel are specially sent to me, I do not feel at liberty to suppress them. They do not in fact fall into the category of things which we may safely ignore: they must be regarded as part of the psychological evidence; and in so far as they differ in tone with what is received through the two entranced mediums with whom I have been myself chiefly concerned, we can, as before, discriminate and attribute them to what we may call a Myers<sub>R</sub>.

Until there is evidence to the contrary we are bound to assume that writings done by people who are not in any kind of trance can hardly fail to be greatly influenced by their own normal consciousness, as well as largely controlled by their normal sub-consciousness. It may be instructive therefore to interpose among the trance communications a specimen of this other kind of perfectly honest and sincere record.

The following is an extract which I have been kindly allowed to make from one of the note-book records kept of Miss Rawson's trance speech and script. I received and had it copied out of the book in March, 1901.

For a brief account of the lady called Miss Rawson, see Mr. Piddington's paper in Vol. 18, p. 294.

*Extracts from Note-book of Miss Rawson's trance utterances, as recorded by the Experimenter in charge (who is anonymous but known to me).*

The extracts which follow are entirely of the unevidential order; but since the book is an honest record of what purported to be a series of communications, I think it wise to publish some, since it forms part of my scheme to illustrate the general character of the communications, in so far as it can be done in moderate compass. The hypothesis that all this matter is a product of the subliminal activity of the medium is a feasible one; no one hypothesis fits all the facts. But, of course, if Miss Rawson had never given evidential matter on other occasions, and in respect of other persons and events, her script and utterances would be totally disregarded.

Dec. 22, 1900. Message from H. S., with F. W. H. M. himself present, (unimportant).

Jan. 11, 1901. Message from H. S. Tell Myers to tell my wife not to put in the whole of the last chapters of the

book she is finishing. She will know the passages she feels doubtful about. Tell him it is really I who am here.

This was spoken with hesitation and stuttering just as in life; 'last' was a difficult word and repeated twice. The last sentence was very difficult, as the power seemed to be going. [Myers was alive then; he died on Jan. 17.]

Jan. 23, 1901. *H. S.* I have not seen my dear friend Myers yet, but I am more thankful that I can say that he has come here. The circle above has been waiting for him, and will with great joy welcome him.

[17 January, 1901, was the date of his death.]

(What is the work of the circle above?)

It is to attest his work, to make a school above to correspond with the school on earth. His wonderful power of organisation will not be lost here.

The world is not so ready as he thought.

We shall work together again.

Jan. 26, 1901. *F. Myers*, (very faint voice.) I am at rest; my body is laid where I wished, and my soul is free. I told you if possible I should return. Little did we think when, not a month ago, I stood beside you, telling you that all my happiness was on the other side, that I should again stand beside you, having obtained that happiness. I thank you a thousand times for making [this] meeting . . . possible, for it confirmed what I had been told, which I was never quite certain of, how far my desire controlled the spirit speaking. But when I was assured . . . then calm and content came to me, never to leave me again.

And through the last great struggle those blessed words . . . were ever present with me, and made my physical suffering a thing to be borne to obtain the greatest desire of my heart.

Thank God, it was and is true.

Later I can do more. I am supremely happy.

Jan. 30, 1901. *F. W. H. Myers*. I have come back as I told you I should on that last day at the Grand Hotel.

I shall return through Mrs. Thompson. My great wish was to come back and tell you that I am still living, and things are to a great extent as I had pictured them. I know now that it will be impossible for me to inhabit [this medium] to give many messages but it will be my privilege to come now and then to your circle to give you the higher evidence that it will be impossible always to secure through the other mediums that I work with. I prepared my place and I must go to it. I prepared Mrs. Thompson, and she will carry on the work, but it will not be for long that I shall come back.

I understand now the full meaning of what I had only half realised in the subliminal consciousness. I can separate the two now, and know how far conscious thought and unconscious thought are dependent one on the other, and I can fully apprehend their indivisibility. That's where I made my mistake. I believed them to be separate, but now find they are merely two sides of the same thing—the unconscious self is the sleeping conscious self, and the conscious self is the reflection of the spiritual man, and that light, reason, and discernment come from one and the same source.

I want to thank you for what you did for me.

I was unable to, then, but my wife will give you my messages, they were left with her. I shall return again.

Feb 3, 1901. (5 p.m.) *F. W. H. M. letter.*

As soon as Miss Rawson was entranced she got up from the sofa, crossed the room to the writing table, hunted for a sheet of writing paper and pen and ink, and then wrote a letter; put it in an envelope and addressed it.

The room was not quite dark and I stood by her and watched her throughout. When she sat down again, I took the letter and found to my surprise it was addressed to me at [a certain address]. The letter runs as follows:—

“My dear . . . I spoke to you at our last meeting of my intense wish to [be] on the other side. . . .

My wish is accomplished. I am now at peace.

I am sending you a message later through Mrs. Thompson and you will then understand all I said to you.

F. W. H. MYERS.”

The control said later that F. M. could not speak because he was not inside the medium; he pushed her along.

Feb. 7. 1901.

While waiting for a friend to come in to begin the sitting, Miss Rawson suggested that we should sit in the dark and she would perhaps see something. The lamp was turned down and she at once saw a bright mist in corner of room, out of which gradually emerged the face of a tall man with moustache, blue tie, black coat: he advanced towards her waving his hand and evidently most anxious to communicate. She repeated the alphabet and he waved his hand at the right letter. She spelt out Edmund Gurney.

The friend then came in and the sitting began.

*E. G.* at once controlled the medium.

“I have come to warn you for my friend to implore you not to let them call him. He gets no rest day or night. At every sitting ‘Call Myers! Bring Myers,’ there’s not a place in England where they don’t ask for him; it disturbs him, it takes away his rest. For God’s sake don’t call him. It is all right for him to come of his own accord. You might send a letter to Light to say that when a great person passes you mustn’t call for him.

Don’t mention Myers’ name, our people wouldn’t like it. . . . His heart is tender and when he hears them call, he tries to come. If they leave him to rest, in time he’ll come back again more strong, but if they call and call it will take away the power and help and everything else. . . .

Feb. 9. 1901.

*F. W. H. M.* “Really, really this is delightful.

. . . , I never thought to meet you here. It was all true—we had not deceived ourselves. Thank you for giving me the power to come. We wrote and sat so often together in the old days; sometimes the results were good, sometimes not at all. You are strong, very strong. Thank you so much. I could not thank you at the same time. ——— has my message for you. I believe in the touch now.

Your testimony, . . . , was most valuable—you’ve done a great deal for the cause—I gave my life for it. It must be carried on. I talked about it the last two days. I do hope my wishes will be carried out, though it’s not easy. . . .

They don't know how one consciousness can merge into another . . . our lives are only given us to learn how to help humanity, but it will take us thousands of years to learn it . . . we must ignore the conscious self sometimes, and let the unconscious self have a chance . . . I implore you not to lose the least scrap of evidence. It is only by putting down all the scraps you make a mosaic.

Feb. 10. 1901.

*F. W. H. M.* (by raps)

'Your friend is here.' Then the medium saw F. M. in Mr. [White's] body. She went into a trance and spoke.

He's there. He's in Mr. [White.] He is lying on a brown bed, and he has got violets, and his eyes are shut, and beside him is standing another Mr. Myers, and the other one has picked up some of the violets, . . . . .  
 . . . . .—That's the curious experience—He is tied to it yet, and has to hold the cord of light in his hand—he can't leave go. He is in you Mr. [White] still, but he is in bed, and standing beside the bed. He dictated three letters the day before he died—important letters, and left a paper for Richet. ( . . ) You'll hear through another source in 10 days' time a curious circumstance of his illness and death. You'll hear it at a place you'll go to after a little from here. [The gentleman here called Mr. White is generally recognised as possessor of some occult powers.]

Feb. 16. 1901.

During the sitting Miss Rawson suddenly got up and went across the room to the writing table, and wrote a note in pencil purporting to come from F. M. We could not read it.

Mar. 17. 1901. London.

*Edmund Gurney.*

It will be no advantage to my friend to be kept down for communication with the groups he prepared.

What we want for him now is to rise, and to forget the earthly things. He can't help any more. His life was given to it, and that must be the help. He was allowed just to say that he continued. That was his great desire,

but it will help nobody that he should be called back, and made to hover near the earth. In fact it will only make him earthbound. So tell all those who tried to persuade him to come, . . . to receive the messages that will be sent now and again, but never permanently.

*Another control.*

The mistake Myers made was, he thought the finite could control the infinite; so he gathered groups and did his best to train them into working order, to carry out his design. This was not a good thing to do—mapping out work to do under different conditions which he did not understand. He made promises, but did not know if he could fulfil them or not; and now he knows these different groups will have to go on as they began, not with communications direct from the other side, but communications attracted to a centre and given out in a revised form.

If you pass over with a fixed idea of which you have sown the seed, and which you have nourished up until it is a tree, you must wait till the tree withers and dies, you can't sweep away the idea in a second.

I have seen Myers, he is perfectly happy; he finds many of his theories difficult to work.

I believe Mrs. T. to be quite honest and straightforward.

March 19.

“Myers is here, but will not be able to speak himself.

I shall speak for him. He is not so near, and not so real as he was. This means that he is soon leaving the earth plane and going to rise higher.

He is being personated right and left.

He is being used as a peg to hang innumerable hats and coats on. He came to thank you and to say that as you prayed for others at a sitting when he was present, so he hopes you will pray for him now.”

In concluding this chapter I must once more call attention to the caution and explanation with which it opened. These scripts represent a genuine phenomenon, and are therefore of interest to students of psychical matters, although it is quite possible that a hostile critic

may here find part of the pabulum necessary for making every effort of the kind appear ridiculous. Whether this portion, or the subsequent commonplace dialogue carried on through Mrs. Piper, or such of the unverifiable communications as were reported, in Chap. II., will appear the more humorous when regarded from the scoffer's point of view, I am unable to judge. Nor need the question deeply concern us.

## CHAPTER VI.

### MESSAGES OF THE MYERS AND HODGSON CONTROLS RECEIVED BY O. J. L. THROUGH MRS. PIPER.

#### *Autumn Series.*

COMING now to communications obtained through Mrs. Piper, the "Myers" messages were, as I said before, not specially useful or impressive: partly perhaps because I did not give this control much chance. They were far less interesting than those reported in Chap. IV.

The dramatic aspect of the "Myers" communications, being not specially striking, I shall no longer trouble to quote what immediately preceded or followed them, but shall give as a rule only the substance of the message; together with such facts of date and circumstance as shall enable easy reference to the original MS. whenever necessary.

I had at first thought of collecting the Myers<sub>P</sub> and the Hodgson<sub>P</sub> scripts separately, but inasmuch as they deal with a similar class of subject, as a rule, there seems no particular gain in separating them; and perhaps there may be some convenience in retaining them in the actual order in which they occurred—omitting only the irrelevant parts and such as were concerned altogether with other controls. If a Gurney or Sidgwick control had appeared in this set, it would likewise be included.

To save the reader trouble—that is to say what seems to me unnecessary trouble—I introduce punctuation and other trivial clarification into the script. It must be understood that it is not by any means always easy to read. *Occasionally* it is necessary to illustrate the superposition of words and other accidental defects, but this is not so necessary in my report as it was in Mr. Piddington's.

Proceeding now to the record, we may as well quote the initial particulars of the first sitting of the Edgbaston series, which followed the few Liverpool sittings, reported on pp. 175-189; but all that can be published is confessedly very poor, and is preliminary only.

## FOURTH ENGLISH SITTING WITH MRS. PIPER.

(FIRST AT EDGBASTON.)

*Held at Mariemont, Edgbaston, on 15 Nov., 1906, 11.0 a.m.,  
ending 1 p.m.*

*Present*—O. J. L. and M. L.

(Hand raised. Cross in air.)

+ HAIL.

O. J. L. Hail, Imperator and Rector.

We are glad to return once more to earth this day. + R.  
We desire that you should understand and know the truth.

O. J. L. All right. (Then began a "Myers" message.)

Well well Lodge. I am Myers.

O. J. L. Hail Myers, glad to see you.

I have not forgotten you in the least.

O. J. L. Nor I you. (Some private matters were here referred to.)

Do you remember a talk I had with you in which I  
promised to do better than others? [Cf. a similar remark  
made through Mrs. Thompson on page 208.]

O. J. L. Yes, you always thought you would do better.

In case I came first.

O. J. L. Yes.

I wish you to remind me of something.

O. J. L. What we are anxious to get is correspondence messages  
between this medium and others.

Good. I U.D.

O. J. L. Well, will you now give one to some one?

Very well; give me a message.

O. J. L. Suppose you say 'Julius Cæsar.' Can you send that?

Yes, I believe I can, but let me repeat the message that I may be quite certain of it.

O. J. L. Good.

Spell it. (O. J. L. spells it.)

J u l i u s C e s e a r

O. J. L. Yes, very near, not quite right.

Spell it. (O. J. L. spelt Cæsar again.)

Cæsar.

O. J. L. Yes, it is really Æ diphthong, not Œ.

I said O, it is intended for O.

O. J. L. Very well then, I quite understand.

I will give it her within five minutes.

O. J. L. That would be excellent.

He has gone.

I need not point out how absurd all this need for spelling, and other signs of apparently rudimentary ignorance, would seem, if we were to assume that we were in effective touch with the intelligence of F. W. H. Myers; even though intercourse be, as it is represented as being, conducted through the intermediate agency of an amanuensis,—namely the control calling itself Rector, who purports to be ignorant of everything but simple English. Our business is to record the facts, and to make deductions from them afterwards. These trivial signs may be an indication of something which will help towards a theory of the phenomenon some day. Meanwhile it must be regarded as curious on any hypothesis that there should have been hesitation at taking a couple of words so simple as these, since it cannot be urged in this case that such words are foreign to the brain of the medium. All that we can say, I think, is that they are treated as a 'code' message, which must be received and conveyed with scrupulous precision, in order to be efficient. As to

the œ instead of the æ, it would have been characteristic and satisfactory if the misspelling had reappeared in Mrs. Verrall's script. For if it had so appeared it would have been a good case of the simplest kind of cross-correspondence. But as a matter of fact this particular message did not succeed in getting through at all.

Returning to the record, I omit a long interlude and talk between some other controls and M. L. on various subjects, chiefly medical, and take it up again at a later stage of the sitting.

Myers.

O. J. L. Yes, well?

Here I am I have given your message to Mrs. Verrall and she will record it in black and white within a few hours.

[It is noticeable here that the controls discriminate between the *delivery* of a message and the actual *record* of it. The interval mentioned here is "a few hours." In our actual experience there is sometimes an interval of a few days or even weeks between the claim and the performance.]

O. J. L. I hope she will not forget it.

No, I will see to that. Good-bye.

O. J. L. Good-bye for the present.

(Another short interlude. Then scrawls of a curiously energetic nature, ending)

I am Hodgson.

O. J. L. Glad to see you at last.

Hello Lodge. I am not dead, as some might suppose: I am very much alive.

O. J. L. Good, I expect so.

I wish to correct a statement I made some time ago to Piddington.

O. J. L. Whatever you say I will send to him.

I did not send you a posthumous letter, but I gave one to William James, which I will re-read to you before we get through.

[Hodgson<sub>P</sub> had told J. G. P., at a sitting held at Boston, U.S.A., in the spring of 1906, that he had deposited a 'posthumous letter' with O. J. L. None of these asserted posthumous letters seem to have been found.]

O. J. L. That is right; that will be first rate.

Speak to me.

O. J. L. Are you interested in the cross-correspondence? Could you send something to other communicators?

I am, very, and think it the very best thing.

O. J. L. Could you send one now to one of the mediums?

I will go to Mrs. Holland.

O. J. L. What will you send?

St. Paul.

O. J. L. That is a good idea.

St. Paul. I will give it to her at once.

O. J. L. Right. [J. G. P. has referred to this in Vol. 22, p. 31.]

Stick to the truth, and it will stick to you.

Is this your wife?

O. J. L. Yes, it is.

Glad to see you.

M. L. But I never saw you in the flesh.

[They were not acquainted.]

I wish of all things to do the very best thing to prove my identity.

[A few private matters are here omitted.]

Oh yes, well get Mrs. S. to verify it.

O. J. L. You mean Mrs. Sidgwick?

Yes, and it will be good. Better use judgement.

Give my love to Piddington and tell him I shall try cross messages.

O. J. L. And also we shall introduce some of your friends to you, and see if you recognise them.

Good. I wish Feilding to meet me.

O. J. L. Yes, but he is not in England just now.

Yes, I will see him later on.

O. J. L. They wish your medium to sit in the rooms of the Society.

Why?

O. J. L. Well, because of the difficulty of lodgings, and because the sittings will be more under control.

All right; it may be good. If not, I will tell them.  
You understand me wonderfully well.

O. J. L. Well I have been practising reading this writing, in readiness.

Capital.

O. J. L. I have to arrange the days to suit us both. I am very busy. To-morrow and Sabbath [see page 175] will suit me best. Can we have 'voice' to-morrow?

Voice, yes certainly. Good; all right.

I hope Piddington will get into the spiritual truth of this thing. If he does, all will be very good. It is very important not to crowd in too many.

O. J. L. He will introduce people only after the trance has begun.

Very good, I U.D.; there can be no objection to that.

O. J. L. And only one at a time.

Yes, better probably for most who meet me.

O. J. L. We want you to recognise your friends, and to take cross messages.

Yes, very good; we are willing to do anything we can.

O. J. L. Do you remember what you were going to say to Mrs. Holland?

St. Paul.

O. J. L. Yes, quite right.

I will go at once.

I am Rector. Hodgson has gone away.

Do you U.D. ?

O. J. L. Yes, he has gone to take a message.

Mrs. Verrall has got one name already.

O. J. L. Yes, that was from Myers. Hodgson has gone to another.

[But the intention, perhaps, was that she had got either  
'Julius' or 'Cæsar.']

Yes. Mrs. Thompson is a nonentity with Hodgson.

(Then came a change of control and some talk with M. L.,  
her father being represented as communicating much  
as he did eighteen years ago (Vol. 6); and finally,  
suddenly interjected, after a scrawl,)

St. Paul. Got it. (Then Rector goes on.)

Will leave now, and may the blessing of God rest on you.

+ Farewell R.

O. J. L. Voice sitting next time.

We U.D.

(Cross in air.)

*Waking Stage.*

Good-bye. I wonder where they have gone.

(Looking at M. L.) In the body. Oh Lady Lodge. I was  
up in another place.

I saw a nice looking gentleman. He had a book in his  
hand. Talking with me. I did not want to come here  
to see you.

I did not know you at all. I forgot where we were.

The house looks so strange. When I woke up this morning  
I did not know where I was.

They take care of me on the other side. It is so nice to  
waken up and see you and know you.

(End of trance.)

---

The next was a voice sitting—that is a talking, not a writing, sitting—as promised. It is the only one of the kind we had during the whole of this English series: and it was less unlike those of the old Phinuit days than I had expected. In fact there was distinct recurrence of what in the old days used to be called “fishing,” when Phinuit was groping in tentative fashion for a name and hoping for help from the sitter. More fishing is reported on pp. 266-7.

But in truth I have long wanted to exonerate Phinuit from most of the blame in this matter. The ‘fishing’ procedure had to be admitted, and indeed emphasised, like all other weak spots; and Phinuit had not been trained to eschew normal help and to take precautions against it, as Mrs. Thompson’s ‘Nelly’ control had been trained; but I always felt that his haziness and tentative approach to things probably represented a genuine difficulty, and was part of the phenomenon which needed study; so I am interested in reading in Dr. Hodgson’s Report, page 382, Vol. 13, the following judicial pronouncement:

“It was out of the automatic dreameries of persons in some such conditions as those which I have illustrated above, that Phinuit in my present view so often had to fish his facts, and I think that assent to correct statements and other clues from the sitters, besides helping the ‘communicator,’ were probably of great service to Phinuit, enabling him to ‘cast his line’ for those mental automatisms that specially concerned the sitter. Much light seems to me to have been thrown upon Phinuit’s mistakes and obscurities and general method of trying to get at facts, in what were on the whole bad sittings, by comparison of the results obtained from the various communicators writing directly or using G. P. as amanuensis; and I feel pretty sure that much of Phinuit’s ‘fishing’ was due to the confusions of the more or less comatose communicators, whose minds had let loose, so to speak, a crowd of earthly memories.”

For the voice sitting all preparatory arrangements, with the cushions etc. (p. 131), were made as usual, and when trance supervened, the head sank upon them; but instead of the right hand slipping off and ultimately holding a pencil, both hands remained all the time on the cushion, while the head raised itself and emitted speech in a rather deep voice. The manner was solemn, without any of the ejaculations and humorous slang of Phinuit; and although up to this time I had thought that a voice sitting would be easier

and better (as it is certainly more interesting and less strain to a sitter) I perceived that really it possessed but little advantage over a writing sitting—now that the lively Phinuit control, who was specially competent in this kind of manifestation, had disappeared; while for evidential purposes, and permanent record, the writing method is indisputably better.

As this was the only voice sitting, however, I think I had better report sufficient to give some idea of the manner of it.

#### FIFTH SITTING.

(VOICE.)

*Held at Maricmont, Edgbaston, on 16 November, 1906,  
11.0–12.0 a.m.*

*Present*—O. J. L. and M. L., with Mrs. Grove.

I come to take up the voice as I promised thee.

I bring to thee this day a message from Emperor that that for which thou dost ask can be granted [meaning about London arrangement].

[It is rather curious that Rector speaking for himself should employ the second person singular for his pronoun, whereas when giving messages from a member of a Quaker family he explains that he translates from “thou” to “you” because he “understands it better.” See p. 193.—*O. J. L.*]

I see all well. I shall conform to those requests if they involve no injury to physical conditions of Medium, without injury to the brain. We understand the conditions and must be obeyed.

(Others spoke here, but I only report the short ‘Myers’ portions.)

Here is Myers. I must express myself to Lodge with deepest affection. I have not succeeded in getting it through to Mrs. Verrall, but I will persist. [This may be regarded as a warning of the failure otherwise referred to in Mrs. Verrall’s script of same date. See J. G. P.’s paper, Vol. 22, p. 306.]

(Messages from others here intervened.)

“St. Paul” has been given. Ask Piddington if he remembers anything about a church at Mrs. Holland’s. Ask him if he gave a message to be recorded here about a church—if he said “church” to Mrs. Holland. [See *Proc. S.P.R.*, Vol. 22, p. 46.]

(Messages from others again intervened.)

It would be wise to give Prudens a message to take to another lady. Give it to me to give to Prudens, who will take it to Mrs. Forbes.

O. J. L. I understand. Well, suppose you suggest “Botanic Gardens.”

Botanic Gardens. Very well, Prudens will take this.

That was all that came through *of that kind*, on this occasion. The ladies whose names here and elsewhere in the *Proceedings* are printed as Mrs. Holland and Mrs. Forbes were really spoken of by their right names.

It will be of interest to those familiar with the script of Stainton Moses to see the names of his old Controls cropping up. Not only Emperor and Rector, but ‘Prudens’ also, who appears to act as an accomplished messenger. I conjecture, however, that whatever relationship may exist between these personages and the corresponding ones of Stainton Moses there is little or no identity. For instance, a ‘Doctor’ is represented as communicating or controlling, but he appears neither to have nor to claim any connexion with the non-medical ‘Doctor’ of Stainton Moses; sometimes at any rate this Piper one is called ‘Dr. Oliver,’ and is probably intended to represent a deceased medical man of Boston. It is rather a puzzle to me why Mrs. Piper’s personalities should have assumed the same set of names. In general characters they are similar; but I see no very close resemblance in detail. And hitherto the Piper ‘Imperator’ has not given to us the same old earth-name as did the original ‘Imperator’ to Stainton Moses. So that it would appear as if they did not very seriously pretend to be identical.

That gives a meagre idea of a voice sitting at the present day; and some of what is temporarily omitted may appear later in another connexion. In no case was there any marked change of control, such as occurred with Phinuit sometimes. It appeared to consist

of first-person-reporting on the part of Rector, who spoke after the fashion of a dignified and gentle old man.

There has been no recent experience so far as I am aware of any apparent control except Rector during a voice sitting. Whether or not other controls speak now, they certainly appear to have done so as late as 1906, and when they did it was evidently impressive: so much so that, as Professor James records, a lady sitter was quite overcome on one occasion by the apparent identity of the Hodgson control with R. H. and fainted. No such excitement would be justified by anything that has come within my experience, but even now it seems to me that personality can loom out more obviously in a voice sitting, and when clear can more thoroughly satisfy a surviving friend who is present. The record may be less exact, but the impression made at the time is more vivid; at least when the sitting is a personal one with only an intimate friend present.

It may be noted that in America with the advent of the Stainton Moses control the atmosphere of a sitting sometimes became rather markedly "religious." This can be illustrated by the following close of an American voice sitting in 1906, reported to me by Mr. Dorr; which also indicates that a change of control occurred, in spite of the statement on page 160:

("Hodgson" terminating his communication.)

Well, I will be off. Goodbye for the present.

(Rector resumes.) All right. That is first rate. Took him a long time to turn round and get out. He dislikes to go more than anybody I ever saw. The last moment he kept talking to me and talking to me. He could not give it up.

#### PRAYER.

Father, in Thy kindness guide Thy children of earth, bestow Thy blessings on them, teach them with Thy presence and Thy power to receive suffering, pain, illness and sorrow, teach them to know that Thy presence is always with them. May Thy grace and everlasting love be and abide with them now and evermore.

Farewell. We depart, friends, and may the blessings of God be bestowed on you. Farewell.

It is only occasionally that the atmosphere of a sitting is serious and solemn—usually it is of an even tenour, and sometimes it is

hearty and jovial. The following is a characteristic "Hodgson" greeting extracted from a sitting with Mr. Dorr and Henry James, Jr., at Boston in 1906:

Ha! Well, I did not expect to see you so soon. Good morning, Harry!

I am delighted to see you.

H. J. Jr. Is that you, Mr. Hodgson?

Yes, it is a great delight to me to see your face once more. How is everything with you, first rate?

H. J. Jr. Very well.

(An "influence"—a glove formerly belonging to Hodgson—was now given to Mrs. P. A brief remark, of greeting apparently, was lost by the stenographer while this was going on.)

Why, I feel as though I was one among you. Hello, George!

G. B. D. Hello!

You people don't appreciate my spirit of fun! But I am Hodgson, and I shall be Hodgson to the end of all eternity, and you cannot change me no matter what you do.

H. J. Jr. I think we appreciate it, Mr. Hodgson.

Well, I hope you do—if you don't, you have lost something, because I am what I am, and I shall never be anything else, and of all the joyous moments of my whole existence, the most joyful is when I meet you all.

G. B. D. That is first rate.

This sort of thing is of course not in the least evidential, and yet if I were asked to invent some scheme of salutation more natural and characteristic of Hodgson's personality I should not be able to improve upon it.

Returning now from this interpolation to the record of our both less solemn and less jovial English experience,—although another voice sitting was promised for next time, it did not turn out so, for at the next trial nothing happened at all, and the attempt had to be abandoned.

The record of the beginning of the next sitting shall be printed, in order to exhibit the manner of it.

[*Preliminary Note*—A sitting was attempted on Sunday, Nov. 18th, at Edgbaston, a voice-sitting being expected, but it was a failure: the trance would not come on. Mrs. Piper thought it was because she had taken coffee with breakfast.]

## SIXTH SITTING.

*Held at Mariemont, Edgbaston, on November 19th, 1906.*

*Present*—Mrs. Grove with Lady Lodge all the time, and O. J. L. as recorder part of the time.

(Hand raised. Cross in air.)

+ HAIL.

O. J. L. Hail, Emperor and Rector.

No light until now friend. We could not return before.

O. J. L. No, we failed to get at you.

[Nothing of what followed belongs to this part of the report, but to the Sandford and Marble portion, Chap. VIII.]

At the seventh sitting I introduced a stranger, J. H. M., after the trance had come on. The Report of this will appear separately, if at all. I only quote here the fragments of "Myers" or pseudo-"Myers."

## SEVENTH SITTING.

*Held at Mariemont, Edgbaston, on 21 November, 1906,  
beginning 11 a.m.*

*Present*—O. J. L. at first, then J. H. M.

[After preliminaries.]

I am Myers speaking now.

O. J. L. Oh Myers, may I ask you a question?

Certainly. I shall be glad if you will.

O. J. L. Does the word

Not too fast.

O. J. L. Does the word Mantovano convey anything to you?

Yes, you mean a word I gave to Mrs. V.

O. J. L. Well I do not think so.

*My own.* Much in little. Yes I used this before in my own writing.

[*Multum in parvo* was an attempted Piper-Verrall C.-C. of date 1901; but it had never been published, and Mrs. Verrall had forgotten all about it. The records have been looked up, however, and are now printed as Appendix 2 to this sitting. It looks as if Rector recollected this because of what seemed like a reminiscence in sound.—O. J. L.]

O. J. L. Most likely.

I did.

O. J. L. Well it was used by someone whom you greatly admired.

Yes, I understand this also. also.

Let me think this out and refer to it later.

O. J. L. Right. Mantovano is the word: do you get it?

Yes. I will certainly explain.

O. J. L. Good, you have the word clearly?

I believe I have. Explain once more.

(O. J. L. repeats word.)

Yes I have it, R., and he will understand shortly.

O. J. L. There is a friend outside; shall I ask him in?

I shall be glad to see him. presently.

Do you remember a friend of mine named Browning?

O. J. L. Yes, I do.

Will you ask him if he remembers a statement he made to me about a dream he had conceing concerning a fall.

O. J. L. Concerning a fall?

*fall* yes.

O. J. L. Well?

I believe it was Browning. I thought it very good.

O. J. L. I will ask him.

[Mr. Oscar Browning's letter in reply is appended. He had had a sitting or two with Mrs. Piper at Cambridge during her visit there in 1889.]

Can I do anything for you? R.

O. J. L. When you are ready for the friend I will bring him in.

Oh yes, bring him in if you wish.

I do not wish more than one.

O. J. L. No, only one; may he come now?

Yes.

(J. H. M. now comes in and sits down.)

#### APPENDIX 1 TO NO. 7.

*Letter from Mr. Oscar Browning with reference to  
Sitting No. 7. (Sheet 125.)*

KING'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE,  
November 22nd, 1906.

MY DEAR LODGE,

I do not remember anything of the kind being talked about between Myers and myself, although it is possible that it may be so, as I have sometimes dreamt of falling or even flying. About four years ago Hodgson wrote to me that Myers had been asking after me and wanted to know what I was doing. Hodgson said that he must mention something known to both of us and he talked about a battle in the centre of Africa, of which I have no recollection whatever. It is rather curious if Myers has mentioned me because, although the connection between him, Sidgwick, and myself was very close indeed, it is scarcely at all known to the external world, at least I never see any allusions to it.

I am having a meeting of the Cambridge Psychological Society in my rooms this evening, the first after six years.

Believe me,

Ever yours,

(Signed) OSCAR BROWNING.

APPENDIX 2 TO SITTING NO. 7.

MULTUM IN PARVO.

Clearly there is nothing of importance here, but the curious reminiscence of *multum in parvo* aroused apparently by the word Mantovano demands an explanation of the hitherto unpublished cross-correspondence in which these words occurred.

On the 13th February, 1901, Mrs. Piper, at Boston, in the presence of Dr. R. Hodgson, wrote thus (Rector communicating):

At last. At last we meet.

R. H. Articles?

(Hand assents.)

R. H. Whose?

S.

(Articles of H. S. presented.)

A wondrous change. A life ideal

I have found at last—go slow—

I have found. It is worth the struggle—keep on do not  
get weary—the imperfections are in the material not  
here. *Multum in parvo.*

R. H. *Multum in?*

Sounds like *parvo*. It is not so easy to reach you as one  
might think. Nora.

R. H. Yes, I understand. You mean Mrs. Sidgwick.

I do. But you shall know me as I am. It is better so.  
Good morning. H. Sidgwick.

On the 22nd April, 1901, at 9.45 p.m. in Dr. Verrall's study at Cambridge, Mrs. Verrall wrote thus :

Verax quod dixi hesterno die.

Tu autem non comprehensa deformasti illud. Cur non credis?  
Omnia plana credenti.

(Here I went to the drawing-room, as A.W.V., who  
was in the study, moved and disturbed me.)

multum in parvo capax omnium [sic] sermo deest anarith-  
metos ἔσται ταῦτα. . . .

which being translated is :

What I said yesterday is true. But you, not being understood,  
spoilt its shape. Why do you not believe? All is plain  
to the believer.

Much in little—capable of all [*i.e.* holding all] words fail—  
unnumbered. This is it. . . .

On this matter the following comments are made by Mrs. Verrall :

(1.) *Comprehensa* is perhaps intended to mean "having understood," not "being understood." The Latin past participle passive seems to be occasionally used in my early script after the fashion of a Greek middle participle, *i.e.* with an active sense.

(2.) The script of April 22 goes on to refer to (*a*) the "gate of Cancer," (*b*) a lost paper, (*c*) the importance of "superposition" as a help to interpretation [Notes on these points will be found in *Proc.* Vols. XX. pp. 39, 195-8, 289; XXI. 377 *et foll.*], and is signed with three forms of the Greek *sigma* (*s*).

(3.) The first automatic writing obtained by Mrs. Verrall was on March 5, 1901; previous attempts, between Jan. 23 and Feb. 13, and again on March 3, having produced only disconnected words and some Greek letters. Thus a clear cross-correspondence between Mrs. Piper's trance and Mrs. Verrall's writing was obtained within 7 weeks of the inception of Mrs. Verrall's automatic script.

## EIGHTH SITTING.

At the Eighth Sitting on 23 Nov. 1906 (present: O. J. L. alone), "Isaac Thompson" wrote a good deal, but the following came from Hodgson<sub>p</sub>.

I am Hodgson, but I cannot take Rector's place to-day. However I will make a poor attempt to speak through him.

O. J. L. Very glad to see you.

Here's ditto. Do I understand that Mrs. Piper is in England?

O. J. L. Yes, she is, and is staying in my house.

Capital. If I were in the body it would not be so. However I am glad it is so.

O. J. L. She is here, well and happy, with Alta and Minerva.

Good, first rate. I am glad. Will you take a message to Billie Newbold for me, safe?

O. J. L. Yes, I will send it through William James.

He asked me about the name of a poem; it was in Hindustan, and meant love.

O. J. L. Meant what? Is that "love?"

Correct. Do you remember a place in England where Gurney and I went to see a medium, and a long walk we had soon after midnight?

O. J. L. A long what?

Walked home.

O. J. L. Oh, a long walk after midnight.

I cannot recall her name, but I told you about it.

O. J. L. Do you *mean* Gurney?

Yes, I do, and I have never mentioned it to anyone except possibly Pid.

O. J. L. Very well. [J. G. P. does not recall this.]

Do you remember it?

O. J. L. I do not.

Do you wish me to take a message for you?

Ask slowly; remember we cannot hear as well as you can.

I am so glad to be on this side.

O. J. L. Well, Hodgson, I do want to ask you something. You know when I am talking to you I am talking to the hand; but I want to know whether it is through the hand you hear. Suppose I stopped up your medium's ears with cotton wool, would it make any difference? Would the message still come?

I think it would, try it.

O. J. L. Very well, I will another time.

First rate, I permit it; first rate.

But after all I did not try the experiment; for it is exceedingly difficult to secure complete deafness by plugging the ears—even with putty. Moreover the necessary manipulation of the medium's head during trance seemed rather repellent. It is an experiment worth trying, however, if we could be sure of a clear result. If I could have been sure of a crucial test I would have had it done; but hyperaesthesia would have to be allowed for in the positive direction—possibly also inhibitory suggestion in the negative,—and on the whole I felt that no definite deduction could be made, whatever the result. Nevertheless the experiment ought to be made by some competent person.

After this came some private matter which is omitted, and there was more talk about London arrangements and choice of room suitable for the sittings there; but nothing of permanent interest.

The ninth and eleventh sittings were entirely occupied with the second and third visits of Prof. J. H. Muirhead.

At the tenth a lady was introduced.

At the twelfth Mrs. Grove sat with Lady Lodge but without me. Nothing from the S.P.R. group came at any of these.

## THIRTEENTH SITTING.

*Edgbaston, December 3, 1906, at 11.10 a.m.*

*Present—O. J. L. only.*

(After preliminaries and a considerable amount of communication about J. H. M.)

Any further tests that I can give?

O. J. L. I should like to speak to either Myers or Hodgson.

Yes, all right, I will call them. +  
Prudens will be here in a moment.

(Scrawl.)

Hello, Hello, Lodge. How are you on that side?

O. J. L. Hullo, Hodgson, I want to ask you something.

Fire away at me, I am in the witness box.

O. J. L. Well, you told me to give a message to "Billie Newbold."

Right.

O. J. L. About the title of a Hindustan poem, but you did not tell me anything in Hindustani. That is, I expect, what he wanted.

No, I beg your pardon; he asked me to translate into English the name of a poem I wrote, now in his possession.

O. J. L. And you said it meant 'love.'

Yes, I do say so, and that is correct.

O. J. L. Very well; and is that all I am to say to him?

Yes, about that. But you will please tell him that he is not to feel disturbed about that Medium's message: it is all rot. He will understand about it; i.e., his going to the bottom with his wife; i.e., going to the bottom of the sea. U.D.

O. J. L. Yes, I supposed so.

Lodge, do you remember a medium I went to see long ago with Gurney, and we walked home late at night, and the laugh we had about it? I told you about it, and you ought to remember it.

O. J. L. I am afraid I do not.

[This probably refers to an incident he tried to recall to my recollection at a previous sitting. I begin to have some recollection of walking through the semi-underground passage at Berkeley Square with Gurney and Hodgson, but whether it is a case of true or false memory I am not sure. The medium may have been Eglinton, to whom I went many times fruitlessly with Gurney; but I had not recollected any connexion of Hodgson with that particular series of attempts. On referring to the *Journal S.P.R.*, Vol. 2, p. 290, where these experiments are recorded, however, I see that it may quite well have been possible. See also page 491 of the same volume.]

I left a posthumous letter with W. J.  
In it I said . . . .

[This is kept back for the present, for evidential reasons.]

I will refer to it again.

O. J. L. Yes, we will not be in a hurry.

Did you ask Piddington about the church?  
He said something to me through Mrs. Holland about church.

O. J. L. Very well, that is a C.-C. message.

Yes, have you heard about the others yet?

O. J. L. No, but they will all be recorded, and collated in due time.

O. J. L. Very well, it is getting time to stop now.

Myers has had very little opportunity or encouragement to prove his identity.

O. J. L. Yes, that is fairly true so far.

And now if the opportunity can be given him, no one on our side is more desirous of proving his identity than Myers. U.D.

O. J. L. Yes, I quite understand.

He understands, and wishes very much to communicate with a few of his real friends. R. It should be given him in any case, as he is intelligent, clear, and understands the necessity of so doing.

O. J. L. I think that this will be the last time in these surroundings for the present.

Yes, we doubt if we can return—again here, but hope for an opportunity somewhere while the light burns.

Now, friend, we are about to depart.

We cannot remain here; our utterances are fragmentary but they are earnest and sincere. This must be the case however until the veil is lifted, with all made clear to you. Your mind cannot help us. If you think of a thing seriously it cannot convey anything to us. We go, and may God be with and watch over you always.

+ Farewell R.

[The waking stage is reported in another connexion. See p. 276.]

This was the last of that particular set of Edgbaston sittings, and soon afterwards Mrs. Piper went to London.

After her return in May, three more sittings were held, from the records of which I again extract the writings of the S.P.R. group; and since the beginning after a break is usually rather interesting, I report the introductory portion also in this case.

## CHAPTER VII.

MESSAGES RECEIVED FROM THE MYERS AND HODGSON CONTROLS  
THROUGH MRS. PIPER. SPRING SERIES.

*First Sitting of the Second Series at Mariemont, Edgbaston,  
called No. 14,*

*Sunday, 19 May, 1907, beginning 10.50 a.m.*

*Present*—O. J. L., M. L., and Mrs. Grove.

[Hand raised. Cross in air.]

+ HAIL.

Once more we return to earth to greet you.

Peace and joy we bring. + R.

O. J. L. Welcome, Emperor and Rector.

[Excitement in hand.]

We are very glad to see you.

I just discovered who you were. R.

We bring some friends who are anxious  
to speak with the lady. Is she present.

O. J. L. Yes, she is.

MRS. G. Yes, I am here.

Mr. Myers speaks first

My good friend I am delighted to see you  
once more and assure you that I live.

Oh what joy and delight when we meet again.

I know all is well with you, therefore

I will tell you I have sent and  
succeeded [?] in making Mrs. V. understand.

O. J. L. What is that word?

And — succeeded

O. J. L. Good.

Expectancy, tranquility, and *cloud*.

O. J. L. That word is cloud ?

Yes.

O. J. L. Lonely as a cloud.

Yes, quite.

Give her my love and tell her this  
being my first opportunity to  
acknowledge the fact that the word

(O. J. L. reads 'she would'.)

the word did appear.

O. J. L. Right.

I am working on Church and hope to  
get it through soon

(O. J. L. read 'writing'.)

working on the word.

She gave it me to reproduce there.

Would you like to say anything now ?

If not, others would like to speak.

O. J. L. Thank you, Myers, I only want to say that I think what  
you did about Browning Hope and a Star, was very fine.

I am glad to have succeeded in making  
it clear to Rector, but I *did* have a  
time of it in making him understand my meaning.  
I will step aside for a few minutes  
and will see you before the light goes out.

O. J. L. Thank you. Very good.

Remember life is everlasting. Myers.

[Signature not unlike his. But for the most part the style  
of all this communication is more appropriate to  
"Rector" than to "Myers."]

(Then much communication for Mrs. G.; and at the end  
the following from the Hodgson control:)

Hong Kong Nut will come out later.

O. J. L. What is that after Hong Kong?

Nut. Hong Kong nut will come out later through Mrs. V and I think will be fine. N u t.

That is one of my test words.

I am glad to see you, and sorry to say goodbye.

O. J. L. Yes, it is about time to stop.

Adio. R. H.

[Writing changes, becomes more like Myers's and the style also.]

Good-bye for the present, old fellow.

I am happier than you can ever know.

My love always.

(Then Rector concludes.)

We cease now, and may the blessings of God rest on you both.

+ Farewell R.

[Scrawl.]

[Time—12-50.]

On this I have only to say that Hong Kong Nut was the subject of a C.-C. experiment, selected by Hodgson<sub>P</sub>, which, however, like many others, to the best of my knowledge, did not succeed. They are possibly of the same class as those dream inspirations which when analysed turn out to be rubbish, though they impress the sleeper at the time with a sense of great importance.

#### SITTING No. 15.

At the fifteenth sitting on 27 May, 1907, the following was received:—

I have been trying to get another message through Mrs. Verrall. Myers.

O. J. L. That will be very good.

Wait for it.

Lodge, do you realise the joy I experience meeting you to-day?

O. J. L. Yes, Myers, I think so. Delighted to see you.

I wish you could speak to me.

Tell Piddington I understand his desires and will do all in my power to continue to reach him.

O. J. L. Good.

I did give Dwarf. (Not read at first.) Dwarf.

O. J. L. Oh, "dwarf."

Yes, P. will understand.

O. J. L. Piddington will understand. [See *Proc.*, Vol. 22, p. 87.]

Do you understand Plotinus? (Not read at first.)

Do you understand Plotinus?

O. J. L. "Plotinus"? [Evidently I had not been told about Mrs. Verrall's Greek message then.]

Yes.

O. J. L. I know something about Plotinus, yes.

This is my answer to the Greek message.

O. J. L. Do you wish to translate to me Piddington's Latin message?

Yes, you have long since been trying to assimilate ideas.

O. J. L. Cannot read all that.

[I thought at the time that this was a sentence addressed to me; whereas I now realise that it was the beginning of a translation.—O. J. L.]

You have long since been trying to assimilate ideas, but I wish you to give through Mrs. Verrall a proof such proof of the survival of bodily death, in such a way as to make such a prove conclusively *conclusively* the survival of Bodily death.

O. J. L. Would you tell me the Latin again?

Yes; assimilate ideas, one with another, one with another.

But what I ask is for you to give that proof of the survival of bodily death, and in such a way as to make it conclusive. He [not read] He He wished me to give a message through Mrs. Verrall and this light concerning the *same* subject.

O. J. L. Yes, I know, cross-correspondence.

Yes, and this was his message to me in Latin.

O. J. L. Very well, thank you.

You will find it is correct in the main.

He suggested Browning to me.

O. J. L. Yes.

In the passage Prefissias.

O. J. L. Perficias?

Yes. Yes. Appreciate (so read.)

Apparirat Appariat.

O. J. L. Oh, I see, Appariat; very well.

illud etc. (O. J. L. reads.)

Yes; from the last sentence I got instead of a fourth sound came a star. Sound.

O. J. L. Yes, I know.

[The date on which I read the poem "Abt Vogler" to the Piper family, as reported in Vol. 22, p. 416, was May 29,—*i.e.* two days after this.]

It was the last sentence in Latin which suggested it to my mind.

Jam dudam commitis. ('Jam' was read at first 'I am.')

Jam didam commitis (so read).

O. J. L. Is it not dedam?

Dudam. Jam dudam. (Plainly written. O. J. L. reads dudam.) Yes. This is only a few of the words to his message (corrected) of his message. I have it now completed. Anything more?

O. J. L. Is Myers still there?

I am answering your question friend.

O. J. L. I was not sure it was you; I thought it was Rector.

The evidential part of this sitting is the reference to some of the cross-correspondences, which, although largely a repetition of what had been said in London, were now expressed perhaps, in places,

more clearly and distinctly than at first. At any rate they are reported for whatever they turn out to be worth. I had no previous knowledge of any of the words of the Latin message (see Vol. 22, page 313).

## SITTING No. 16.

Now I come to the last sitting of the series, No. 16, on 2 June, 1907, from which I will quote the appropriate portion.

Myers will open first this day.

He says when messages come from him he understands that the language is not always as he would speak it, but it gathers so much on the way when it is being transmitted it sometimes loses its natural tone. Understand?

O. J. L. Yes, I gathered that.

However if he can succeed at all in making his thought appear clear he will be extremely [?] grateful and pleased. I speak these words for him as he helped me to do so. R.  
(Writing gets smaller.)

Good morning, my friend, I am delighted to see you again. You must not be disappointed if I do not succeed in replying to [a sentence I had given him] at once, but I am working over it, as I understand it and will answer as soon as I can get it clearly.

O. J. L. Yes, very well.

I have succeeded in getting another word through Mrs. V.  
It is Montin. [Doubtless meant for mountain.]

O. J. L. Montin?

Yes; one of my test words. I also note Lake LAKE.

O. J. L. Lake?

Yes. Laburnum and Rose leaf.

All this has much meaning, as you will understand later.

O. J. L. Very well, I shall keep a careful record of all this.

I travelled, not footsore or heavy laden.

(O. J. L. reads it.)

Yes, look for this also.

to find light. (Read by O. J. L.)

Yes; these I propose to work on until they appear through Mrs. V.

O. J. L. Yes, you will send them through Mrs. Verrall.

Yes. Have you understood her recent notes?

O. J. L. Those I have heard of seem very good.

I wish you would follow me now for a moment.

O. J. L. Quite right.

Remember when Piddington gave me his message, the special point in it was for me to give definite proof through both lights. [At first read 'other' instead of 'both'.]

The first thought I had was to repeat a few words or lines of Browning's poem, but in order to make it still more de finite

(Written as two words, and then some talk between the controls: appearing thus:)

All right, I will. I am sorry. Rector.

Yes definite I registered a star and the lines which I quoted to you before.

O. J. L. Is that word 'before'?

He says I speak too fast for him. R. I will wait.

which I quoted to you before

were the most appropriate I could find.

I believe you will understand this to be conclusive, that I fully understand and have fairly well translated his message.

Any inquiry?

O. J. L. No, I do not think of anything now.

I am working over several other things.

Have you understood about wandering, etc.

(O. J. L. thought of 'wandering lonely' as a cloud, but thought it safer to say "no," which he did.)

Lonely etc.

I think part of it has appeared. Will you reply?

O. J. L. I understand about *autos ouranos* etc. It is considered about the best thing you have done.

Really? I thought of Tennyson directly she gave me her words.

Socratese [*sic*] and the original aspect.

Do you realise how difficult it is to receive your words and translate them clearly to Rector, who understands nothing of what I am trying to tell him?

Wait, friend, and do not lose your patience.

(Then messages came from other controls, and soon afterwards the series terminated.)

[For the meaning of all this, reference must be made to Mr. Piddington's analysis near the end of *Proc.*, Vol. 22].

*End of present report on the Myers and other S.P.R. controls.*

## CHAPTER VIII.

### OTHER MESSAGES RECEIVED THROUGH MRS. PIPER.

#### THE JOSEPH MARBLE SERIES.

A CURIOUS, and withal distinctly evidential, series of communications was obtained, partly in my presence and partly without me, by a lady known to me and to a few other members of the S.P.R., whom I will call Mrs. Rupert Grove. There are several reasons for concealing identity: one is that people still alive would resent publication, and another is that it would tend to spoil some possible future evidence which at present remains in the form of prediction as yet unfulfilled.

Mrs. Grove herself is an intelligent lady of middle age, open minded as to the genuineness of psychical phenomena of all kinds, but in her own judgment tending towards scepticism, which it requires frequently renewed experience to counteract. Such renewal of experience, from

time to time, she has had through her husband, who has been more or less familiar with such things for years. But his attitude to them is unimportant, since he does not enter into this series except by incidental mention. He knew Mr. Marble slightly, since he also had lived for some years in the same neighbourhood; but he had at that time no knowledge of the great and affectionate intimacy between Mr. Marble and his future wife. He is still living, and I think I am right in assuming that he knows about it now and has learnt not to resent it. Nevertheless the possibility that he might dislike it is another reason for anonymity. And, after all, names in this case are of no importance, since none of the people primarily concerned is of any public notoriety or importance.

I shall begin with a statement written down by Mrs. Grove on the 14th June, 1907, and kept by me till the present time.

*Statement by Mrs. Grove, made 14th June, 1907,  
with reference to earlier incidents.*

Mr. Joseph Marble and his sister, Mrs. Kate Sandford, were neighbours of each other and also neighbours and old friends of my mother, near Ashton; and he had a small 'works' not far from Stalybridge. Both were well-read, clear-headed, somewhat sceptical people. They knew me better than any one else, and were interested in everything that concerned me. In fact there was a strong and very deep affection between us, unknown to any one else. Some years after my marriage, when I had gained a little experience of psychical matters through a few visits to a medium in 1896, I often spoke to them separately, but especially to him, on the subject, trying to make him realize and see things as I was beginning with a good deal of hesitation to see them; but without success. He listened as he would have listened to anything I told him, but more with amusement than acceptance.

Mrs. Sandford was equally incredulous, and said, rather distinctly, that she did not like such things. So I never really expected to get communications purporting to come from them.

Nevertheless, in two sittings with Mrs. Thompson, during the Spring of 1900, about three years after Mr. Marble's death, I did try for something of the kind, by taking with me an object that had belonged to him. And communications seemed to come from Mr. Marble almost the whole time: giving many facts that could not be known by anyone else. His sister (a widow) was then alive.

The communications included a short piece of writing, in which among other things he wrote—very naturally—“I never thought I should attempt in so rubbishy a manner to demonstrate the truth of your own strange belief, but I live, I live, etc.” (See p. 263.)

The communications just received through Mrs. Piper from him and his sister are in many ways quite appropriate to their individuality. Mrs. Sandford went by the name of Aunt Kitty among her nieces (his daughters,—the ablest of whom is named Peggy), with whom I was on affectionate terms.

The family still retains the old incredulity and strong repugnance to anything spiritistic, but the two deceased members of it seem most anxious to make up for their scepticism by giving a carefully considered kind of proof, which if it comes off (but this seems at present past belief) will be to me most wonderful and satisfying.

ALICE F. GROVE.

Here follow the original notes of two voice-sittings with Mrs. Thompson at Hampstead; together with a contemporary letter from Mr. Myers, to whom they were sent to see if he wanted to include them with his own extensive series.

The only part kept back is a portion of the writing done by the entranced Mrs. Thompson during one of the sittings.

*Mrs. Grove's first Sitting with Mrs. Thompson, in 1900.*

(Notes by the sitter are in square brackets.)

(Control “Nelly” speaking.) There’s Mr. Myers. Yes I’m very happy to get things for other people.

(I gave the medium a Scotch plaid tie to hold which had belonged to my deceased friend Mr. Marble.)

What makes me say Stalybridge?

Mrs. G. Good.

I dont know where it is, a horribly smoky place, as bad as Dudley Port. A stout good tempered influence with this, easy comfortable jolly. A sort of Scotch name associated with it. I dont mean because of the pattern.

(Touching locket I was wearing that my father gave my mother.)

You know the old gentleman belonging to that locket.  
He knows all about the Baltie Sea. [He was a sailor.]

(I gave a letter written by the same deceased friend.)

It is written by the man that wore the tie. [True.]  
seems a separation between tie and letter  
not the same influence. [?]

This gentleman has whiskers at the side, no beard. [True.]

Have you really got 2 or 3 fathers?

because it seems as if you had, besides Mr. Grove.

He keeps saying 15, not the one with the whiskers.

The one with the whiskers wears a felt hat—he doesnt like a  
top hat—Mrs. Cartwright<sup>1</sup> is helping him, he cant talk very  
well—she is helping to smooth it out. He was one that  
didnt like other people knowing his affairs. [He was very  
reserved.]

He wants you to send your love to him—to help him.

He says he hasn't been dead as long as the old Gentleman that  
gave the locket. [Certainly, since this latter has been dead  
many years.]

Who is the Lady crying because he is dead. Is it your sister?  
She says it is her Joe. [This is what his wife always called  
him.]

There is a great mistake about this man dying, he is like in  
the prime of life. [He was over 60, but a strong looking  
man.]

It is not an outside death, its inside. His stomach is all  
doubled up. [It was in fact appendicitis.]

He ought to have gone on breathing and breathing a lot more  
and got better. [He was thought to have pneumonia,  
so I presume that breathing was difficult.] Its as if  
he wants to cough; cant breathe very well.—Joseph  
Limestone.

[The real name is Marble: but unfortunately the letter came  
partly open while in Mrs. Thompson's hands, and his  
name *may* have been seen. Also it said in the letter that  
he found it difficult to believe. She did not *appear* to  
be reading it at all. *A. F. G.*]

<sup>1</sup> For "Mrs. Cartwright," see *Proceedings S.P.R.*, Vol. 18, p. 126.

You know, Alice, it seems as if he says he always doubted about people coming to talk when they were dead, but he knows now it is true.

He seems as though he was a mixed up sort of relation, a kind of brother in law. [No relation.]

He says he promised he would tell you if it was true. He wants to come because you and Rupert didn't think it was the truth, and he wants carefully to demonstrate it to you.

(Another short digression about my brooch.)

Mr. Limestone says the boys used to come over where he lived, to stay. [Yes, some cousins. He did not care for them.]

Mrs. Grove darling do you know that gentleman is getting quite happy. He says he had Pneumonia.

[He was treated for Pneumonia, but it turned out to be Appendicitis.]

He says your little girls used to hang on each side of him.

[This is quite possible.]

Have you got the ring he gave you?

I can't understand the relationship, because there is such a bond of love between you as doesn't exist between ordinary people.

Beloved Alice, that's what he says—he wants you to comfort someone that's left crying for him—he wants you to tell them that it was a sort of shock—he didn't seem to be ill long. [His illness did not last 3 days.]

In spite of all he loves he doesn't want to come back.

He's waiting for Alice.

He says there is no separation of love in Heaven.

Does *he* mind?

but you did so straightforwardly tell him [*i.e.* Mr. Grove].

My poor little woman, how sorry I was for you

He says he told you not to wear a bonnet, he always liked to see you in a hat. [True.]

You will let him kiss you now, you used to screw yourself up from him. He said he ought to have been more patient. He can see the truth of your heart now—it hurt his feelings—He often wanted to make you presents, and you wouldn't have them. He said sometimes you were your own self and other times you weren't.

But he says neither of you wronged any one else.

What a masculine voice he has, a voice he would be known by anywhere—not ordinary. [True.]

He says, when he sees you, he would rather some one else were here and he was in some one else's place.

He says you were nicest to him in the train—it was the only time you were yourself—He says he gave you a lot of trouble, he caused you a lot, but it's all smooth and straight now. He didn't know at the time.

He says what troubles him most is for your sake—you had so much to bear—It seems selfishness that he should have caused you so much trouble.

He seemed to be doing something he ought not.

It seems as though he doesn't like to tell me. Perhaps he can write it. [All this is entirely intelligible and correct. The hand of the medium now writes matter fairly appropriate, with his real surname, Marble, written in full and correctly.]

Who is that with his teeth so even and square, bright and regular, and his ear such a nice ear? [Had nice teeth, and had a good ear lying flat to the head.]

He says you have his photograph but have put it away.

[True.]

Why did I take it so hard? The knowledge of all we were to each other ought to keep me till we meet and are united.

Mrs. G. Then what about my Rupert?

Oh! there are no jealousies and no relationships, but souls united. He is sure Rupert won't be cross at souls united. He seems to say "Alice love me just this once," and seems to be trembling and trembling.

It seems to commence by your going in the train.

(Mrs. G. asks for the name of a special place.) [Not obtained.]

He says tell him anything but that.

Oh God—but he does not believe in God does he? [In a Piper Sitting, six years later; he is represented as saying, through Rector, “I do believe in God now.”]

What is that in his throat?—You see how large it is there, [he had a large ‘Adam’s apple’] and a turn down collar. They don’t know anything of this at his house and he doesn’t want them to.

What made him die so quickly? looks as if something was doubled up inside his stomach. Do you know what a passionate love on one side and a sisterly love on the other—that’s what it is. He hasn’t any patience with Platonic affection.

*Second Sitting of Mrs. Grove with Mrs. Thompson  
on the following day.*

[After preliminaries.]

Where is his brother?

(Mrs. G. asks ‘Nelly’ to find out if he remembers the School of Art.)

Have you been painting a picture, Mrs. Grove? because he sees you with a pinafore on painting—he used to watch you painting.

[True, and also true that I had been recently painting a picture.]

Mrs. G. Can you tell me what the picture was? [Really a portrait of him from a photograph.]

(Long silence)—You seem to be copying off another.

There are a lot of suicides connected with this gentleman.

[His brother committed suicide by shooting himself, and he knew that I knew this fact.]

Well, there is a poison that doubles up the inside, but he is afraid of distressing you; but it is written up.

[If this implies that Mr. Marble also committed suicide, it is untrue.]

All the Elliotts know him. He only loved one Elliott; [Elliott was my former name] but you mustn't be jealous—he once loved an Alice Elliott—You're not cross are you?—He didn't marry her.

(In answer to questions if he remembered where he went with her.)

He went away to some pictures by rivers with Alice Elliott. You won't be cross will you, but you know his heart seems to go out to her more than to anyone else. [Nelly never seemed to know my former name, or to suspect that this really referred to me.]

What's an Agnostic? Tell her I am an Agnostic. [True.] He says what the devil shall I do when I can't think— He says in one more year he'll come and tell you. He says he is not in the same house 'Nelly' is in. When he is there, which he hopes to be soon, he can talk to her without getting in a muddle.

[This is probably intended to signify that he is not yet at the same stage of progression as the reporting control.]

(The medium now took a pencil and began to write. The writing consisted of unintelligible questions at first. Then)

“Why remind me of this however, I am happy and have been for you you all and am now happy.

I cannot think you are my Alice or you would not say you forget it, how am I to believe you are my Alice I cannot see you any more than you can see me. There are the sketches I gave you. They are in my house or yours.”

[I do not remember having received any sketches from Mr. Marble.]

(Writing continued.) “My dear Alice tis not that I am unwilling, but I am now though not then convinced that we are both best to leave our loves. This life has brought me the joy and happiness I so often sought but sought in vain. I was so deuced selfish in my love but now I see it is better left alone—and try my dear

Alice to forget me as you used to pretend so well to do. Why did you treat me so coldly. You little thought how grieved it made me—I have suffered for the wrong I would have done to others but now it is best for me not to communicate in this or any other way. I love you still but only by giving you this proof in our case is best left alone—for one year. Remember in one year I will give you all the proof, nay more, but dearest dont ask me now. I never thought I should attempt in so rubbishy a manner to demonstrate the truth of your own strange belief.

but I live I live, and that is sufficient for now, and more, much more, than anything I ever thought of.

I will not try to say more, surely one year will not grieve you to wait. etc.”

[It becomes illegible and I cannot read it quite to the end. The whole of the above is extremely appropriate.]

(Then follow several irrelevant things written, and then ‘Nelly’ said:)

Who is that dear old lady called Annie?—wears a Honiton lace cap,—used to wear a little black silk apron with lace round it. She sees you have been communicating with some one and thinks you had better not give her love to Rupert. She is very high, nearly as high as the bright Lady.

[I do not know for whom this is intended—it might be a particular Aunt, but her name was not Annie or Anne.]

She asks you not to communicate

She thinks we shall have to educate him a bit first as he is rather anti-everything. [This phrase is distinctly characteristic of Mr. Marble.]

#### NOTES BY O. J. L.

All this J. M. business is extraordinarily good. It is really more life-like than the subsequent quieter Piper impersonation, some six or seven years later. At that time, however, the attempt to give evidence, here foreshadowed, is really made: and the Control shows some knowledge of what was said *here*, e.g. by writing that

“he does believe in God now.” (Cf. p. 261 just above.) If it be true that any J. M. material comes, or has come, through Mrs. Verrall, or other strangers, it will be excellent. At present telepathy from the sitter is the least strained hypothesis that will account for it. No more normal explanation than that will serve.

The substitution on one occasion of ‘Mr. Limestone’ for Mr. Marble is characteristic of the ‘Nelly’ control, and recalls the substitution of ‘Happyfield’ for Merrifield, as reported in Vol. 17, p. 208. These small things are of interest as tending to throw light on the mechanism of the process; at least in this instance. But just as people differ in power of visualising and other methods of reminiscence, so each case of automatism should be studied as likely to possess individual features.

These materials were sent to Mr. Myers in the year 1900, who replied as follows:—

CAMBRIDGE,  
May 30/0 [1900].

MY DEAR LODGE,

With many thanks for enclosed, I think it need not be typewritten in my series. A sentence from Mrs. Grove’s letter—as to general impression—will suffice, and I think we will now wait and see what the ‘spirits’ suggest of themselves after a year. Mrs. T. had another somewhat disturbing impression of this ‘spirit,’ which, as she thought, roused her from the trance at my last sitting with van Eeden.—He said something about returning in a year, in a tone which rather roused her opposition. We had better just wait and let matters develop themselves—no need to say anything about the matter as yet.

F. W. H. M.

After this the same Control sent occasional messages through other mediums, to whom Mrs. Grove occasionally went anonymously, hoping to get some more evidence. These communications are hardly worth reporting; but as no clue of any kind was given, they seemed beyond chance, since they clearly had reference to the same personality and incidents. But of course they were—like most of this series—well within the scope of telepathy. The few incidents outside the scope of telepathy remain for the future to verify. These were obtained through Mrs. Piper—from whose script on this subject

I now extract portions; but for evidential reasons it is necessary to withhold the not yet verified portions for subsequent publication. They are all carefully kept. In the interim, between 1900 and 1906, Mrs. Kate Sandford, sister of Mr. Joseph Marble, had died in her own house.

The main difference between the communications received through Mrs. Thompson, as reported above, and the communications which follow, obtained through Mrs. Piper, lies in the fact that one was conversational and therefore easy, whereas the other was hampered by the difficulty of deciphering a more or less illegible script. Even when a skilled reader is present it is not easy, but to a sitter who is comparatively a novice at the work the difficulty is extreme. For part of Mrs. Grove's time I was present and assisted with the reading, but the presence of an outside person is naturally perturbing, and hence the opportunity for referring to intimate matters was not so complete as during the previous voice sittings with Mrs. Thompson alone. Another difference seems to be due to the fact that at the later date communication begins not directly with Mr. Marble himself but with his now deceased sister; and the presence of this additional communicator exerted another restraining influence—not only on the other side, so to speak, but even I thought on Mrs. Grove.

Anxiety to communicate in an evidential manner if possible, and genuine affection, were manifested now as strongly as before; but the tone was somewhat more sedate, and more what may be called 'religious.' Probably most of this is due to the intervention of Rector, but it is represented as indicating some progress in the communicator himself.

In Mrs. Grove's opinion, the communicator seemed the same person in the main, and not more different in detail than the different circumstances might reasonably be held to justify.

Let it be remembered then that the remaining communications are obtained, not as heretofore through Mrs. Thompson by the voice, but through Mrs. Piper by writing.

*Sitting of Mrs. Grove with Mrs. Piper in November, 1906.*

The first appearance of anything in connexion with Mr. Joseph Marble or his sister Mrs. Kate Sandford—frequently known as Aunt Kitty though she was no relation—occurred in the midst of other

matter, when Mrs. Grove was present and had handed in a brown tie belonging to the late Mr. Marble, thus:—

Who is Kate? Sends her dearest love. All is well, and hopes it is with you. Wants you to remember her as she was glad she came over.

(Feeling shawl worn by sitter.)

She made it. She gave it to you.

MRS. G. Yes, she did. [It was the last thing that Mrs. Sandford had made; she had given it to Mrs. G., who happened now accidentally to have it on.]

Wants you to keep it always.

There is the same influence about these two, (tie and shawl) they are connected, and yet they are not. I will get it clear. She does love you so. She thinks as much of you as of anyone now in the body. Do you remember her father?

MRS. G. No.

He came a long time ago.

Lawrence, no Lorenz; no, I cannot get it. A lady whom she knew who nursed her in the body. [A lady companion used to live with Mrs. Sandford in her last years; but the name was not at all like Lawrence.] She was with her when she passed out. This is a companion. These two influences, this is the sister, and this is the brother.

MRS. G. Right.

She (feeling shawl) was not far from your mother's surroundings.

MRS. G. True. [They all lived near together.]

Kate's is an excellent influence. This object (brown tie) is not quite what I like.

The influence of the body is not quite so clear. A dimmer light.

Thy presence attracts both.

This (brown tie) influence is a little puzzling.

I think I might get this another time clearer.

I will speak to him myself.

Give me these when I return.

I often get best results by speaking to someone on our side and then speaking directly I return.

MRS. G. All right; Kate will help you.

The next sitting was held specially for Mrs. Grove, and the subject was developed during most of the time. It would, however, be tedious to quote it all, for some of the incidents mentioned could not be recalled by the sitter, and others were given only vaguely. I take the beginning, and then a bit out of the middle: the beginning of Mr. Marble's appearance, as a communicator through Mrs. Piper, being perforce included. It is very hazy and confused at first, but, as soon as it is properly established, this impersonation will be recognised as fairly consistent with the hitherto unpublished representation through Mrs. Thompson recorded above, and obtained six and a half years previously. The opening words of the following record purport to be from Mrs. Sandford:—

I am well and happy in this life, so is my brother Martin who greets you with great love. [This name Martin seems to be merely a muddle of Rector's.]

Kate and Martin [?] are both here to greet you. He asks me to remind you of a ring which you had a long time ago.

MRS. G. I am glad to meet Kate again, but I do not know Martin. Speak to me.

MRS. G. I have the ring on my finger now.

I wish I could speak to you as I feel. I think of the days that are gone and the joy I had in life.

Have you seen mother since I came over or do you understand anything about her? Jane.

MRS. G. No I don't understand.

She came to this life many years ago.

MRS. G. I don't know anything about her.

All right. Speak. Don't let me get confused—that sign. No one could recall better than myself that ring (not read) but myself would remember that ring.

MRS. G. No. [A ring given by Mr. Marble to Mrs. G., long ago, was on her finger, as said above.]

I am really near you now, and so glad to have found my way here. [This purports to be Mr. Marble communicating.]

MRS. G. Can you quote to me a line of Rossetti's that you said to me—a sort of farewell poem?

I am not sure about that, but I will try my very best to refresh my memory with it, and repeat it if possible here. Do you remember Halstead Hall?

MRS. G. No: no I do not.

Hall Hall Hall.

O. J. L. (Thinking to help matters on) Hell Hall?

No No No friend, Halstead Hall where I used to . . . .  
[illegible] in part of the writing.

Did those lines go like this,

“All day for day drift far apart”?

MRS. G. No, those are not the lines.

Not quite right friend.

Our lives apart.

MRS. G. No.

I do not recall the exact poem, but don't trouble about it: it will all be clear in time, and I will give it you. I certainly will. [It was never given. Mrs. G. herself quoted it later.] Do you remember anything about Hall?

MRS. G. A hall we used to pass in walking, where the Jeffersons lived?

(Excitement in hand) Not far from that hall.

MRS. G. Do you mean Casford Hall?

Yes I do. I told Rector again and again.

Halsford Hall. M.

There is something on his mind. R.

which he is anxious to recall with the lady present.

Dance.

MRS. G. Yes yes.

Together at Hall, at Hall. Not so?

MRS. G. No, not there [but if he meant another hall it would be right].

No, but we stopped at Hall on our way and sat.

MRS. G. I don't recollect.

Think a moment friend, he is surely right.

Think a moment.

MRS. G. I cannot remember it.

(And so on with other ineffective reminiscences for about five or ten minutes more, then)

Do you remember Singing? [or *possibly* a portmanteau attempt at Sunday morning.]

MRS. G. Singing? Yes, very badly.

I remember *well*. Sunday ming [clearly meant for either evening or morning].

Repeat. Not singing. I was going to progress and go on in this life. He thinks she does not hear him. R.

[Note by Mrs. G. I did not understand the writing at the time. It says "Sunday morning," a time when we always saw each other. It must have seemed cruel not to understand. I thought he referred to "singing," so he goes to that at last.]

MRS. G. I want you to say something that I may know it is you.

Oh yes. Yes, you used to sing occasionally sing when I came to your house. You sang evening evening the last time I heard you.

O. J. L. (Again putting in his oar) Very likely.

Yes you did.

I think, friend, you had better leave the lady to speak.

O. J. L. Shall I go away?

I think so, friend.

O. J. L. May I bring a friend two days hence?

You may bring him.

O. J. L. Farewell then, Rector.

God be with you.

(Mrs. G. was now left alone with Lady Lodge, and almost at once the conditions improved. Lady L. kept a record of what was said, as O. J. L. had done, and tried to assist in reading the script.)

Yes I am Martin Wright. [This name, if correctly deciphered, appears meaningless.]

Joe (illegible: might be Johnson).

MRS. G. Yes, that is right [meaning that the Christian name was given correctly].

No, I do not know.

Read me. M. Yes I am Marb

Now do you understand?

MRS. G. Yes, right, what next?

le. Yes, I am he. I am Marbl I am so glad and so very happy to see you again.

I never shall cease to love you, never, *never*, shall cease to love NEVER.

I am now nearer you than ever before, and yet progressing all the time.

MRS. G. I must progress too.

Yes, you must; but you are growing better every year; yes, every year.

Dear Kate, she loves you too, and she longs to help you in that life. Ask her to do so.

MRS. G. How shall I get her to do this? Do you mean pray?

Yes, and she will always hear you. So shall I.

I see and know when you think of me.

Do you remember you said you could not in that life?

You do understand now so much better.

MRS. G. Yes, I do, but I did not understand then.

It hurt me then, but I understand it all now.

I never loved more.

I see the ring I gave you. I do so well.

I was attracted to it, and how could I help coming back to you?

I could not help coming.

I did not wish to help it.

I longed to return, to return. Do you understand?

MRS. G. Yes, I do.

I tried, Alice, to love many times— a good many times, but could not, but I could not.

[This is intelligible also, but the explanation would be long.]

At a much later sitting Mrs. Grove again sat, and again had the shawl with her. Messages came from Kate Sandford, the sister of Joseph Marble.

MRS. G. Is Kate here?

Yes I am here dear. Joe feels so bad to think that he could not understand what you said better. He says he does understand you about the last dance at his house, and going home with you.

I understand also all that.

I never knew when I was in the body. . . . [This is true. She did not know of the terms of affection we were on. Nor indeed did anyone.]

I am Kate, Joe's sister. I see my object very clearly [namely the shawl she made] and it helps me so.

MRS. G. Can you tell me whom you have met in your world?

[This question was intended to extract a reference to her husband, who long pre-deceased her; but, instead, a curious introduction of a deceased friend, well known to both, occurs.—*O. J. L.*]

Do you remember a friend of mine named Weston?

MRS. G. No I do not.

Do you remember Bet Best Weston, Alice?

MRS. G. Yes quite well; lots of them, the Wests.

Do you? I have seen her and her father, also Best.

MRS. G. Is it a gentleman or a lady?

Don't you remember him? A gentleman. He asked me the other day if I had really spoken to you. I told him I had tried to do so; and he said, ask her if she remembers me at all.

MRS. G. Yes, well. Can he give his Christian name?

He will. Jim.

MRS. G. I remember you well.

Jim West. [This was exactly the name he always went by: he died young. He was a very intimate friend.]

MRS. G. I am glad to speak to you.

I do not forget you if you forget me.

MRS. G. Do you remember a dance and supper, and what you promised to give me?

It was I who remembered you first; do not hurry me. I will recall anything you wish if you give me time. I am so glad to see you, etc.

[Then came reminiscences of a fan with crests stuck on it, and of a journey; but nothing sufficiently clear and precise—at least to strangers—to be worth quoting as evidence. The unexpected but quite distinct appearance of the personality at all was the curious thing.—*O. J. L.*]

*Extracts from further sittings of Mrs. Grove with Mrs. Piper.*

After this Mrs. Grove had a sitting without my presence, and the following is a small part of the record. She kept a copy of all her own remarks, and I have read it.—*O. J. L.*

We are surrounded by your friends.

They long to reach you friend of Earth, and unburden their minds.

The first to greet you is Kitty, Kitty.

[This is Mrs. Kate Sandford, commonly called "Aunt Kitty," sister of Mr. Joseph Marble.]

MRS. G. Ah, at last the right name. Why did you call yourself Kate before?

Because I did it for Rector's understanding.

I am with you dear Alice. I see and understand all your enquiry, so does Joe. . . .

Alice he loves you dearly, etc.

(Then he was represented as saying,)

Have you any idea of my joy at meeting you?

I feel it must mean much to me as life goes on.

With you in the body this privilege of speaking to you is everything to me. It helps me to free my mind. And my sister has been so patient and kind to me. She has helped me to find you dear, as she came to this life after I did. [Correct.]

Pray for me always, etc.

(Then some messages for identification, such as)

He used to go down to those buildings, his works, and mix the materials [to some extent specified] for the workmen.

He supervised it himself and used to judge of their work after they were completed. [This was all correct.]

(Then a communication about one of the late workmen, not yet verified.) [A great number of details were given, but there appears no means of verifying them at present, though an attempt has been made.—*O. J. L.*]

MRS. G. I am going home soon and will enquire.

Good I am glad. Bridge. Bridge.

He is spelling it out to me. Sounds like Stale Stale Bridge Stale.

MRS. G. Yes that's right.

Works at Bridge Staly.

Now dear I am not sure that I can give you further proofs of identity, because I am Marble, and I am serious and in earnest. I love you dearly. I always did, and my life would be a barren waste, he says a barren waste, without your prayers and love.

MRS. G. A barren waste? I thought you were happy.

Oh yes, I am absolutely happy.  
I understand so much better now.

MRS. G. What should I pray for?

For a re-union of our souls, for my peace, and for me to be able to reach you in this meagre and simple way.

MRS. G. Do you wish to come?

It has helped me more than you can ever realise; and if I do not speak again it will not injure me, as I have practically freed my mind, as I have practically freed my mind. It has been such a help to me and to Kitty also.

MRS. G. Dear 'Aunt Kitty.'

That sounds so natural to me.  
I love to hear it.  
Do you love me, and do you understand how blind I was?  
Forgive me.

MRS. G. You mean your incredulity; but you cannot make people believe.

Yes, but I was so stupid, I would not believe dear.  
Now I understand I am sorry I did not.

MRS. G. Does it make any difference?

Only I feel I hurt you dear.

MRS. G. Not much.

But I did not have the opportunity, did I really dear?

MRS. G. No.

It is time to close now. R.

The few opportunities afforded by later sittings were utilised for reiterated communications, intended to be evidential, regarding the present state of an old workman whom the Marble control wanted found and helped through the agency of his daughter Peggy, whom he correctly named. But hitherto it has been impossible to ascertain the facts or to get any co-operation from this source.

If verified in the future, this part may be extremely good, but at present it would be absurd to quote it. So—though carefully recorded and filed—it is left unreported. The mingled restraint and utterance of the Marble control, throughout, were exceedingly natural, and practically overcame the incredulity of the sitter—at any rate for the time.

*Experiment on the recognition of a Photograph of one of the Controls.*

The waking stages of the last sitting of the first Edgbaston series in December, 1906, and of the first of the second series in May, 1907,—with an interval between them of five months,—are worth recording because of an experiment I made in connexion with the likeness of a person supposed to have been communicating during the trance (in this case Mr. Marble): the point being to see whether there would be any recognition of a photograph by the automatist before her state had become entirely normal,—that is during the sort of period in which it is customarily possible dimly to remember dreams. This stage is referred to by Dr. Hodgson on page 401 of Vol. 13—where he calls it Mrs. Piper's subliminal stage, and says that it is a condition in which she frequently has visions of the distant or departing "communicators."

On the first occasion I waited rather a long time before trying the experiment,—something more than an hour, and the recognition was uncertain; but faint as it was, it seemed to be a residual effect of the trance; since it was not permanent, and by next day had entirely disappeared.

On the second occasion I tried directly after the waking-stage was complete; and then the recognition was immediate and certain. But in a few minutes it had become vague and dim, and before the end of the day it had again completely ceased.

The following is the complete contemporary record of Mrs. Piper's somnambulant utterances during the first of these two waking stages. The ejaculations happen to be foreign to the present case, since they refer to the concerns of a stranger who had recently had a sitting but who was now absent. Incidentally I may mention that the description now given of this sitter's deceased mother, who had been represented as communicating during the sitting, is correct and evidential.

Mr. Marble had also been represented as communicating during a portion of the same sitting, and that is why I tried the experiment

which in the sequel is described; though I tried it under better conditions after the waking stage of the next ensuing sitting, as subsequently reported.

*Waking Stage of No. 13.*

Myers, Myers. I made it what it is. I did it. I made it.  
 Light. William. Franklin. Mildred. My son.  
 Mr. Myers is in the light there.  
 A lot of people trying to get through.  
 He made it all it was.  
 (Looking at O. J. L.) A man in the body.  
 A line. A line goes from me to them.  
 What Myers said was,—I made it what it was.  
 I have more for you. Hewitt, Ewart, Hewitt. One, two, three.  
 Who is Mary, and Mary's son? William. Franklin. Franklin.  
 Franklin. Alexis. [These names, though not all correct, have a meaning in connexion with another sitter; and the following is a true description of his deceased mother.]  
 She is so beautiful. Hair parted in the middle, puffed out a little over ears.  
 Nose is not very long but straight.  
 Shuts her mouth like this, tight.  
 Short and full in cheeks.  
 Blue eyes with a little grey in them, and she had a little mark on cheek (touching right cheek not far from mouth.)  
 She was laughing away.—  
 Isn't that funny? I knew you were there, but I could not speak to you. You looked so small.  
 You grew so much larger. Hear that! it's gone.  
 I have got used to the room now.  
 I saw a circle, kept going round and round.  
 Very light. But it has gone. I do not like to come back here.  
 When the light shines in I see all sorts of things in the room.

*Sequel to No. 13.*

Sitting lasted from 11.10 to 1.10.

After lunch I took eleven photographs of men, and asked Mrs. Piper if she had ever seen any of them. She looked over them,

hesitating on the one representing Mr. Joseph Marble for some time, and then picked that out and said she had seen that man somewhere, but she could not remember where. Nothing was said by me during the process, of course.

Next day, in the evening, I tested Mrs. Piper again with another set of photographs of men, partly the same and partly different, but containing among others the critical one. This time, however, it was looked at without comment and without interest, and no remembrance of the appearance seemed to persist. She remembered the fact of having recognised one before; but when asked to do it again, she picked out, after much hesitation, a different one as a possibility, and said that she thought it had been found in America that the memory evaporated in time, and that it was strongest within an hour of the sitting. The test made the day before had been made about an hour and a half after the sitting.

And this is the record of the second of the two waking-stages, five months later: the 'Joe' here referred to is Mr. Marble, who had been represented as communicating during the sitting:—

*Waking Stage of No. 14.*

All right. I will. Do not like it.

It must be a house. Blacker one.

Black one. I do not like it. Do not want you.

I want the other place. You look funny.

I wonder. Mrs. Heath says he wants letter to Edith.

Likely to be better. All the time from now on.

Mr. Myers would help Joe get matters clear.

Help Joe make it completely clear. I do not know what I had to do with it. Something help persuade Mr.

Ridgeway (?) to grasp the idea of it.

You *are* ugly to say the least. I never.

I would not look like you. I do not like it at all.

If you looked like Mr. Myers you would not look so black.

Fine looking man, his name is Joe.

Mr. Hodgson keeps pushing him in the front row. Foreground.

What is the difference between [some name not heard] and you. Are you alive.

(Yes.) There are others more alive than you are up there.

Head snap. I was all the time trying to find out who you were, and could not place you at all.

You looked so small. Then a veil came down.  
Flowers and things I saw. A gentleman tried to tell me  
something, and then I forgot it.

Another snap. I see you plainly.

I was so numb. I am not numb now. My hands were so  
heavy.

You do not tease me. Mr. Piddington used to tease me.  
He was a large man and then all of a sudden he went out.  
He was a nice looking man.

(A number of men's photographs were now placed in a  
row before her: she immediately pounced on one  
without the slightest hesitation.)

That is the man I saw. I saw him. That is the man I  
saw. I saw him up there: such a nice face. I could  
see him. I could see Mr. Hodgson pushing him up to  
the front.

[The selection was correct; the photograph was one of the  
person she calls Joe, *i.e.* of the late Mr. Joseph Marble.]

*Sequel to No. 14 an hour or so later.*

A sitting, was it not? Perhaps my going to London was a  
good thing for me.

When Mrs. Sidgwick said she was glad, I was very much  
astonished, because she does not say anything at all.  
Mr. Piddington told me he was a medium too.

(I now again put the photographs in front of her. She  
looked at them as if for the first time, and said)

I do not know the photographs.

(She then hesitated long over the right one, saying she had  
'seen him somewhere,' but finished up by saying)

No, I do not know.

*Comment.*

The result of this experiment, with other experiences relating to  
the description of the personal appearance of a person spoken of  
in the trance, has satisfied me that—whatever may be the cause—  
a visual likeness of the people supposed to be communicating in  
the trance is sometimes really impressed at the time upon the

subconscious mind of Mrs. Piper. A veridical dream impression seems to be caused in these cases; but like other dream impressions it fades. The visual impression is merely an extension of the impression of character and of speech, which is also impressed upon the same stratum of her subconsciousness, and is of a similarly evanescent character.

During trance undoubtedly her subconsciousness is thus, at least occasionally, in touch with a simulacrum or hallucinatory representation of a deceased person,—whatever be the cause—a telepathic impression received from the sitter perhaps, or as appears more likely, from the surviving influence of the deceased person.

That much is certain; and to deny that, is merely to refuse to be informed by facts of experience. But of what nature this evanescent but for a time vivid impression of appearance and character and personality really is, is a more difficult question, on which at present I do not feel competent to express an opinion. For what it is worth, however, my instinct leads me to judge that it is not solely due to a telepathic impulse from the sitter—in spite of the fact that the sympathy and understanding of the sitter is a great help, and indeed a determining cause why one set of impressions is produced and not a totally different set. Undoubtedly the existence of real interest and affection on the part of a person present is the awakening cause of any particular veridical impression. It is that which determines the selection out of the infinite multitude of other impressions which otherwise might equally well be produced. But although sympathy of this kind is the selective and determining cause, I do not feel that it is the creative or constructive cause. It appears to me that there is an agency or energy lying ready, which is capable of arousing in the subconsciousness of an entranced person, or of persons endowed with automatic faculty, a vast multitude of impressions—good bad and indifferent; and that out of this multitude of possible impressions some are selected with more or less discrimination as appropriate to a particular case,—the presence of a sitter being the detent or trigger which liberates or guides the energy in one direction and not in another.

*End of the present report on the Joseph Marble series.*

## CHAPTER IX.

## SUPPLEMENTARY REMARKS.

## PHINUIT.

IT was of some interest to me to see what the Controls of recent times had to say about the ancient Control calling itself Phinuit; and accordingly I asked questions in Sitting No. 11, of which the record stands as follows:—

O. J. L. May I ask a question? Does 'Phinuit' mean anything to you?

You mean Dr. Phinuit. Oh yes, we see him occasionally, friend; he is in another sphere of this life, no longer earth-bound, and he is very well and very happy.

O. J. L. He was a friend of mine. [By this I meant that during the old Piper sittings I was on friendly and even affectionate terms with this curious and not universally appreciated impersonator.]

Could you by any possibility be the friend on earth whom he called 'Captain'?

O. J. L. Yes indeed, that is me.

(Excitement in hand.)

Would you like to see and speak with him?

O. J. L. I should if it did him no harm.

Oh no harm in the least; he is beyond harm, friend; he has so progressed. He will no doubt be glad to return. We will speak with him and report his doings. This also.

O. J. L. Will you give him my love?

I will give him your love certainly with great pleasure. He is a much better spirit than he was thought to have been. He fell in with the wrong element to begin with. U.D. Wrong i.e. on the earthly side. I will see him and report at our next meeting. R.

And at the next sitting at which I was present the following came :—

We found Phinuit, and gave him your message. He sends his love in return and says if you would like to speak with him, really, he would endeavour to return to you through the light at our next meeting; and he says— he remembers you and your companion—with deepest affection and appreciation of his anxious efforts to tell of our world and its inhabitants — — —

O. J. L. Well, I do not know that it would be good for the machine to ask him to return; moreover I am not sure that we shall have another sitting here.

You must speak to + about his returning next time through the voice, which he would be glad to do himself. U.D.  
R.

O. J. L. Please thank him, but I do not know that there is any object in getting him to speak.

Oh yes. Well friend, we were about to say that he, Dr. Phinuit is not in the least anxious to return to earth again, as he had quite enough while he was there.

O. J. L. Very well then, please remember me to him kindly.

Yes, we certainly will do so.

I don't know whether it was wise thus to discourage a temporary return of Phinuit. The fact is, I felt it to be rather too much of a responsibility to interfere with the conditions of control; especially as the entry of Phinuit, in past times, had been usually accompanied with contortions and some slight apparent discomfort. The oncoming of the trance is now-a-days so placid that I thought it best to leave well alone; but I confess that it would have been interesting to see whether the Phinuit personality would have reappeared, with all its original peculiarities unchanged.

#### CONCLUDING OBSERVATIONS.

I have not reported all the sittings at which I was present—it would be tedious to do so. Those held with Prof. Muirhead are omitted because they were not specially good, and it is a tax upon the reader to introduce him unnecessarily to a further set of relatives.

The controls did not treat him from the Professorial point of view, but from the domestic, just as they used to in the Phinuit days. I need hardly point out how much more easy it would be to "get up" Professorial details than obscure family incidents. Those however are what are still attended to: so every series of sittings with a stranger involves trouble analogous to that which must be taken when beginning to read a new novel; and unless the novel is fairly good, the trouble is not worth while.

The sittings omitted do not appear to me to throw any additional light upon the procedure; and the question arises—what is the outcome of it all, so far as my own impression of the above series of facts is concerned.

On the whole, they tend to render certain the existence of some outside intelligence or control, distinct from the consciousness, and as far as I can judge from the subconsciousness also, of Mrs. Piper or other medium. And they tend to render probable the working hypothesis, on which I choose to proceed, that that version of the nature of the intelligences which they themselves present and favour is something like the truth. In other words I feel that we are in secondary or tertiary touch—at least occasionally—with some stratum of the surviving personality of the individuals who are represented as sending messages.

I call the touch secondary, because it is always through the medium and not direct; and I call it generally tertiary, because it represents itself as nearly always operating through an agency or medium on that side also—an agency which calls itself 'Rector' or 'Phinuit.' That these latter impersonations are really themselves individuals I do not venture either to assert or deny; but it is difficult or impossible to bring them to book, and an examination of their nature may be deferred: it is the impersonation of verifiable or terrestrially known individuals to which it behoves us in the first instance to pay attention.

Very well then, I feel bound to say that in the old days when conversing with the Gurney control through Mrs. Piper, as reported in Chapter II., I felt very much as if I were conversing under difficulties with Edmund Gurney. And he appeared to be in real 'control' for the time—so that lapses and uncertainties and occasional confusions, in his case, were rather rare.

But when the Myers and Hodgson controls now send messages through Mrs. Piper, as above reported, I have very little feeling of that kind. They seemed in my case rather shadowy, and so to

speaking uninteresting, communicators. It is true I did not give them much chance or encouragement, and under better treatment they flourished and blossomed as reported by Mr. Piddington; but if my opinion had to depend on my own Piper sittings alone, I should not be strongly impressed by these personalities.

When 'Isaac Thompson' was the communicator, however, I was favourably impressed on the whole, and consider that this part of the record strengthens rather than weakens the case not only for survival but for intelligent and affectionate intercourse. In particular I think that the sitting reported by Dr. Hodgson from America, when 'Isaac Thompson' appeared on the scene after his son had left for England, was specially good and dramatic (pp. 166, 7).

The "Myers" utterances which have impressed me most were those obtained at two sittings with Mrs. Thompson (then of Hampstead) soon after his decease,—as reported above in somewhat abbreviated form, in Chapter IV., which is perhaps one of the most notable portions of this whole document. It is of course to be admitted that few things—perhaps nothing—obtained through a medium so well acquainted with Mr. Myers as Mrs. Thompson was can be regarded as strictly evidential; but, in spite of that, the dramatic verisimilitude was very marked—especially in some of the omitted fragments.

There remains the Mrs. Grove case, at some of which I was present. This series, for several reasons, must be regarded as the most strictly *evidential* of all; and a decided unity of character and of message is preserved, no matter through what medium the communication comes. But the hypothesis of telepathy from the sitter, if stretched sufficiently, will cover all the reported portions: and in such a case this notion constitutes a difficulty which can hardly be avoided. At the same time I must say that I find this hypothesis not very probable,—it does not at all satisfy my mind as an explanation. On the whole the surviving and communicating intelligence hypothesis commends itself to me as the most likely.

Readers who happen to know that I myself am convinced of the fact of the survival of human personality beyond bodily death may be surprised at this critical attitude, since they may think such an attitude inconsistent with that belief. But the main question before us is whether the additional evidence now adduced strengthens the previous verdict in favour of the possibility of conscious communication. It is not easy to strengthen it, because it was already strong.

A careful analysis and examination of the facts both for and against the genuine activity of deceased communicators has been made by Dr. Hodgson, and will be found in his Report in *Proc.* Vol. 13, pages 357-412. He is led distinctly to countenance, and indeed to champion, a cautious and discriminating form of spiritistic theory,—not as a working hypothesis only, but as truly representing part of the facts. His experience was so large, and his critical faculty so awake, that such a conclusion of his is entitled to the gravest consideration. If I had to pronounce a prematurely decided opinion, my own view would agree with his.

The old series of sittings with Mrs. Piper convinced me of survival, for reasons which I should find it hard to formulate in any strict fashion, but that was their distinct effect. They also made me suspect—or more than suspect—that surviving intelligences were in some cases consciously communicating,—yes in some few cases consciously; though more usually the messages came in all probability from an unconscious stratum, being received by the medium in an inspirational manner analogous to psychometry.

This Report's usefulness, if it has any, must chiefly lie in the additional information to be gleaned from it regarding the process and the difficulties of conscious inter-communion between our own minds and whatever stratum of consciousness is operating on them from the other side. The hypothesis of surviving intelligence and personality,—not only surviving but anxious and able with difficulty to communicate,—is the simplest and most straightforward, and the only one that fits all the facts. But the process of communication is sophisticated by many influences, so that it is very difficult, perhaps at present impossible, to disentangle and exhibit clearly the part that each plays.

One thing that conspicuously suggests itself is that we are here made aware, through these trivial but illuminating facts, of a process which by religious people has always been recognised and insisted on, namely the direct interaction of incarnate with discarnate mind,—that is to say, an intercourse between mind and mind in more than one grade of existence, by means apart from, and independent of, the temporary mechanism of the body.

The facts indeed open the way to a perception of the influence of spirit generally, as a guiding force in human and terrestrial affairs,—active not under the exceptional circumstances of trance alone, but always and constantly and normally,—so uniformly active in fact that by ordinary people its agency is undetected and unperceived.

Most people are far too busy to attend: they are too thoroughly occupied with what for the time are certainly extremely important affairs. A race of inspired people would be hopelessly unpractical, though Society is usually grateful for the existence and utterance of a few individuals of this type.

The fact that these communications are obtained through sub-conscious agency is sometimes held to militate against their importance as a subject of study. But have not men of genius sometimes testified that brilliant ideas do surge up into their consciousness from some submerged stratum, at a time when they are incompletely awake to the things of this world? And ordinary people are aware that a brown study favours the conscious reception of something presumably akin to inspiration, by relegating ordinary experience to the background, and thereby enabling new and unfamiliar ideas to enter or germinate in the mind.

A trance, or any state of complete unconsciousness, renders the normal though obscure activity of an unfamiliar psychical region still more manifest. Not indeed to the patient,—who is unaware of the whole phenomenon, or remembers it only after the indistinct and temporary fashion of a dream,—but to an observer or experimenter, who is allowed to enlarge his experience and to receive impressions by deputy; thereby attaining, at second hand, some of the privileges of intuition or clairvoyance, or even of genius, while he himself remains in an ordinary and business-like condition. His experience in fact may be regarded as an undeserved, and therefore only moderately valuable, kind of vicarious inspiration.

## IV.

PSYCHICAL RESEARCH AND SURVIVAL AFTER  
BODILY DEATH.

BY PROFESSOR A. C. PIGOU.

§ 1. The question whether men and women survive bodily death contains three ambiguities. There is ambiguity in the term survive; ambiguity in the term man or woman; and ambiguity in the use of the plural "men and women."

The ambiguity connected with "survive" is philosophical. If any one asks whether cats survive immersion in water, it does not occur to us to bring to bear on that problem a metaphysical discussion concerning the reality of time; we assume, in fact, that time is real, and we mean by "surviving immersion" being alive *after* immersion. When, however, our question relates to men and women and bodily death the idealist philosopher enters the arena and claims that time, with all that therein is, is a purely subjective condition of human perception; that in reality there is no after and no before; that survival and death alike are appearance; that men and women, as spirit, neither survive nor die, but in some sense eternally are. This doctrine I do not propose to discuss here. To any one who accepts it the question of survival in the ordinary sense must seem trivial, if not meaningless. For my own part, I provisionally hold the opinion that time is real, and I address this paper only to persons who share that view.

The second ambiguity in our question concerns the term man or woman. In ordinary life this term carries with it an idea of physical bodies. From the present standpoint it is obvious that that idea must be eliminated. The thing about which debate should turn is, I suppose, what we somewhat vaguely term the conscious mind. But what, for our purpose,

is this entity? When we ask whether a seed survives burning, the answer may be different according as seed is understood to mean, on the one hand, a mere quantity of matter or, on the other hand, matter in a special form with special properties. We are in the same difficulty with regard to "conscious mind." The idea of absorption of the individual consciousness into a larger Whole, and its survival somehow in the Whole, is no less familiar than that of personal survival. This complication is the more serious, at least for me, on account of my complete inability to grasp or understand the notion of absorption of one conscious mind into another. I do not, however, wish to debate this complication. Perhaps for the present purpose we may so far compromise as to say that conscious mind survives if, after the death of a person, there is added to the Whole, whether absorbed in it or not, a conscious mind that has some sort of continuity in memory and quality with the person who has died. I am quite aware that this is exceedingly unsatisfactory and vague, but the difficulty seems to be inherent in the subject.

The remaining ambiguity, that involved in the use of the plural, "men and women," is obvious. "Men and women" may mean either "all men and women" or "any men and women." It seems to me plain that psychical research can never give a direct answer to the question whether *all* men and women survive death. A proof that some survive would give but slight warrant for the wider thesis. In what follows, therefore, I shall understand by "men and women" "any men and women." Do any men and women survive bodily death?

§ 2. The question thus framed and limited is believed by some persons to be answered affirmatively by an appeal to revelation or to the beneficence of God. In like manner it is believed by other persons to be answered negatively by legitimate inference from the science of physiology. I am not myself able to accept either of these lines of argument. The question of survival seems to me to be on a par with the question whether some entity that we are able to conceive exists in fact in the real world. The answer to this cannot be found by *à priori* but only by *à posteriori* study: it is a matter of evidence and probabilities of the sort commonly investigated by science.

§ 3. In recent publications of the Society for Psychical Research there is material that, in the opinion of several competent persons, makes it probable that Frederic Myers, Henry Sidgwick, and others have, in some sense, survived bodily death. This material it is the business of my paper to examine. Before, however, that task is attempted, it is necessary to see, so far as we can, how the problem stands apart from this new evidence. Let us suppose—what is approximately the case—that, apart from these *data*, there is no direct evidence whatever for the survival of any dead man or woman. Should we, in that case, say that it is an even chance whether people survive or not, or that survival is exceedingly improbable, or that there is no determinate probability about the matter—no alleviation whatever to our ignorance? I have no confident opinion on this difficult point. The interdependence of mind and brain in life as we know it does not, of course, logically imply that the two perish together, but it does, as it seems to me, make that event in some small measure probable. On the strength of this—the one relevant fact in our deep ignorance,—I am inclined to say that initially, and apart from the new evidence, survival is somewhat improbable. The hypotheses of survival and of non-survival do not start exactly on a level: the scales are inclined in favour of the latter.

§ 4. The evidence that psychical research has to offer is of two sorts: first, the provision of information unknown to any living person, but known to some person who is dead; secondly, the performance of some act not easily explained as the result of the agency of living persons, and claiming to be due to a dead person. Of these two sorts of evidence the former is at present practically non-existent. The tests prepared by means of sealed envelopes have not been successful: there is nothing substantial enough to afford the basis for an argument. With the second sort of evidence, however, the case is different. It again may conveniently be separated under two heads: first, the impression of individuality conveyed, to those who knew Myers and the other alleged controls when alive, by the general form and content of the automatic speech and script claiming to come from them; secondly, the cross-correspondences recently discovered between the script of

various automatists. The former sort of evidence I shall not consider here. What I have to say refers exclusively to the latter.

§ 5. The three volumes of the Society's *Proceedings* which deal with the automatic writing produced by Mrs. Holland, Mrs. Verrall, and Mrs. Piper under the alleged influence of various discarnate intelligences make a case for survival that is *prima facie* sufficiently strong to warrant careful study. The phenomena observed consist mainly of cross-correspondences between the contents of the scripts of two or more automatists—cross-correspondences announced in the script themselves and claiming to be the deliberate work of Myers, "Talbot Forbes," or some other "control." The cross-correspondences that have been discovered may be divided, according to Mr. Gerald Balfour's nomenclature, into two groups, *simple* correspondences and *complementary* correspondences.<sup>1</sup> An ideal simple correspondence would occur if an idea given through one automatist were transferred directly to another: an ideal complementary correspondence if ideas unmeaning individually, but significant in combination, were given through several automatists. In the concrete, of course, it may not always be easy to decide with which of these two groups any assigned correspondence should be classed. In the opinion, however, of Miss Johnson and other investigators there is a fair number of cases that are not marginal, but can be labelled definitely as belonging to the one or the other kind.

§ 6. The question whether the facts that have been obtained make it probable that Myers and the others really survive breaks up naturally into three parts: first, we have to decide how probable it is that there is any common cause operating on the different scripts and responsible for their correspondences; secondly, if there is such a cause, how probable it is that this cause is some discarnate mind; thirdly, if the cause is some discarnate mind, how probable it is that it is the mind of that deceased person with whom it claims to be identical. These questions I shall discuss in order.

§ 7. First: suppose that there are two novels written by two different people. Three things are possible: the plot and the language of each may have been fashioned by causes

<sup>1</sup> *The Hibbert Journal*, Jan. 1909, p. 247.

entirely independent of one another: they may have been fashioned by some independent and some common causes; or they may have been fashioned entirely by common causes. Let us imagine that the two novels are identical throughout word for word. We should then reason in this way: if they have been fashioned by independent causes, this result is extremely improbable. Hence, unless the existence of a common cause is also extraordinarily improbable *à priori*, such a cause has almost certainly been at work. The probability of this conclusion is not, except in a special case, measured by the improbability of the correspondence arising under a régime of independent causes; for its magnitude is affected by the *à priori* probability of the existence of a common cause. Still, in such a case as I have supposed, everybody would judge, and that rightly, that there was almost certainly a common cause in operation. The problem is, however, more complicated in the concrete. Let us imagine that the novels are not identical, but have some measure of resemblance. We know that there are some common causes affecting contemporary novelists in the same country:—they speak the same language; they live in the same atmosphere; they move among the same events;—and we wish to know whether the resemblance is sufficient to make it probable that any *further* common cause has been at work. To such a problem no precise answer can be given in general terms; we have to balance up in our minds the degree of observed resemblance, the importance of the known common causes, and the *à priori* probability of the existence of an unknown common cause, and having done this, to judge as best we may. This is the class of problem presented by the corresponding scripts of Mrs. Verrall, Mrs. Piper, and Mrs. Holland:—is the measure of correspondence sufficient to make probable the operation of some common cause over and above that provided by similarity of environment and interests? This is a question which everybody must answer for himself after a study of the scripts. Personally, I agree with the judgment formed by practically all those who have investigated the matter, that the presence of some special common cause is probable in a fairly high degree—the sort of degree in which I should judge it to be probable that there was a common

source to which both St. Luke and St. Matthew had access in writing their gospels.

§ 8. If so much be granted, we have next to ask how probable it is that this assumed common cause is the influence of a discarnate mind. I shall simplify the problem by excluding at once the hypothesis of conscious fraud or collusion between the various automatists concerned. This hypothesis is not, of course, impossible, but it is (as I think) in view of all the circumstances, so improbable as not to deserve serious consideration. We are, therefore, left with the alternative hypotheses of the influence through some supernormal channel of an incarnate mind or of the influence of a discarnate mind. It is not permitted, be it observed, at this point to turn round and declare that both these hypotheses are grotesque and impossible. Anybody who takes that view must have parted company with me earlier. If collusion and fraud are ruled out, to concede that some common cause is probable is practically equivalent to conceding that one of these causes is probable. What we have to do, therefore, is simply to consider the relative probability of supernormal incarnate and of discarnate agency.

§ 9. At this point we are confronted directly with a logical difficulty that has long been haunting the discussion. When we have to judge whether it is more probable that our gyp or our bedmaker's son is responsible for the abstraction of cigarettes, we in general start fair. We know that they are both agencies who might have performed the deed. But imagine this case. Suppose it to be certain that the cigarettes were taken either by the gyp or by the son of our bedmaker, but that it is *à priori* somewhat improbable that our bedmaker has a son. Suppose, furthermore, that our cigarettes are so carefully concealed and our gyp is of such mean intelligence that it is *à priori* very improbable he could discover them. In such a case as that, how are we to determine the relative final probability that our bedmaker has a son who took the cigarettes or that our gyp took them? That problem—it has its parallel in the speculations of physical science—is closely analogous to the one with which we are now dealing. The subliminal self corresponds to the gyp: a discarnate intelligence, Myers or another, to the hypothetical bedmaker's son.

The argument in favour of the discarnate intelligence endeavours to show that the subliminal consciousness is not sufficiently competent to bring about the effect that has in fact occurred. In such a discussion it seems almost impossible to lay down any canons of judgment. The gyp, since we know him to exist, has some initial advantage; the bedmaker's son may not exist at all, and, if he does exist, may, for all we know, be even less intelligent than the gyp, and less competent than he to discover where the cigarettes are concealed. On the other hand, a bedmaker's son, particularly a bedmaker's *discarnate* son, may possess powers of discovery and abstraction undreamt of in a gyp's philosophy. The only conclusion to which I can come is that, *if* the problem is presented in the general form in which I have stated it, no solution can be found.

§ 10. The actual problem which the new facts published by the Psychological Research Society present does not, however, seem to me so difficult as this. If the abstraction of cigarettes from places similar to that in which I had concealed mine could be shown to be an act of the same class as many acts which my gyp was known to perform, I should conclude at once that he was the *probable* culprit, and should certainly not, *on the evidence*, suspend judgment between him and a hypothetical and *à priori* somewhat improbable bedmaker's son. In like manner, if the subliminal consciousness can be shown to be responsible for the same class of phenomena as these recent correspondences, it is, and should be judged, the *probable* cause of them also. This conclusion would be in conformity with the recognised methods of science, and is, I think, logically correct. The new arguments for survival depend largely upon the thesis that the correspondences which have recently occurred are *not* paralleled by any known operations of the subliminal self. If the thesis is incorrect, the argument dissolves. I propose to contest the thesis.

§ 11. *Simple* correspondences between the impressions of two automatists are well known to occur under conditions which make it probable that the agent is the subliminal consciousness of one of the persons concerned. If proof of this is required, I may cite the experiments recently conducted *at a distance*, sometimes of 20, and sometimes of 400 miles between Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles. The experiments were not

concerned with automatic writing, but consisted in attempts on the part of Miss Miles to transfer impressions of objects to Miss Ramsden, Miss Miles arranging to concentrate attention on some object, and Miss Ramsden to sit for impressions at times previously arranged. Had it merely happened that this experiment partially succeeded in its direct object, that circumstance would not perhaps have much bearing on our present discussion. Curiously enough, however, as Miss Ramsden has observed, "those (impressions) which are the most surprisingly correct are some which were not *intentionally* transferred at all."<sup>1</sup> Miss Ramsden's impression would refer to something that had happened to Miss Miles in the course of the day, and not to the object of which she sought to transfer a picture at the time of the sitting. This circumstance seems to me to show that the subliminal self of one person is sometimes capable of influencing the perceptions of another apart from conscious will. Hence, the subliminal self of, say, Mrs. Verrall, *could* probably bring about a simple correspondence between her automatic script and that of some other scribe. In explaining the simple correspondences that have occurred by the hypothesis that this is what has in fact happened, we should not need to assign to the subliminal self any powers beyond those which we already have strong reason to believe that it sometimes possesses. If, therefore, we had to do only with simple correspondences, the proper conclusion, as I have already indicated, would be that the subliminal self of one of the automatists was *probably* responsible. The fact that the correspondences are claimed in the scripts themselves to be the work of discarnate intelligences is, in view of the frequency with which the subliminal consciousness is known to impersonate real or imaginary people, quite inadequate to rebut this conclusion.

§12. It is by no means my intention to suggest that those who have been responsible for the recent investigations have ignored this consideration. On the contrary, they have fully realized its importance, and, because they have realized this, have laid very little stress upon cases of simple correspondence. The weakness of such cases as evidence of the action of a discarnate mind is explicitly admitted by Miss

.. <sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., pp. 92-3.

Johnson in her report on *The automatic writing of Mrs. Holland*. "If," she writes, "we simply find the same idea expressed—even though in different forms—by both [of two automatists] it may most easily be explained by telepathy between them";<sup>1</sup>—or, as I should prefer to put it, by the agency of the subliminal self of one or both of them. The cases which, in the view of Miss Johnson, Mr. Piddington, and others, do possess evidential value are cases, not of simple, but of complementary correspondences. "The characteristic of these cases," Miss Johnson writes, "or at least of some of them, is that we do not get in the writing of one automatist anything like a mechanical verbatim reproduction of phrases in the other; we do not even get the same idea expressed in different ways. . . . What we get is a fragmentary utterance in one script, which seems to have no particular point or meaning, and another fragmentary utterance in the other, of an equally pointless character; but when we put the two together, we see that they supplement one another, and that there is apparently one coherent idea underlying both, but only partially expressed in each."<sup>2</sup> The question whether the production of those correspondences of this class which have hitherto been recorded is outside the powers that we know in other ways sometimes to belong to the subliminal self cannot be answered so easily as the analogous question concerning simple correspondences. Nevertheless, it can (as I think) be answered quite decidedly—in the negative.

§ 13. In the discussion of this problem there is some danger of confusion between the two questions, (1) whether the complementariness in complementary correspondences is *intentional*, and (2) to what agent the correspondences are probably due. The logical connection between these questions seems to me to be as follows. If it can be shown that the complementariness in any particular complementary correspondence is probably the result not of intention but of accident, the correspondence in question must be regarded, when we come to investigate the probable agent, as equivalent to a simple correspondence. The manufacture of simple correspondences does not, however, as has already been argued, lie outside the known powers of the subliminal consciousness.

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 375.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 375.

Therefore, to show that intention is probably absent in any set of complementary correspondences is equivalent to showing that the manufacture of these correspondences does not lie outside the said known powers. This sort of reasoning affords, I think, a convenient method of eliminating from the discussion a number of complementary correspondences in which the element of complementariness is small. It is a characteristic of thought-transference that the percipient often fails to get the word which the agent is endeavouring to transfer by a direct process. Something like the idea embodied in the word may come first, or something like the sound embodied in it, or something connected somehow with either the idea or the sound. In Miss Ramsden's and Miss Miles's experiments there are two cases of this sort. On one occasion, when Miss Miles attempted to transfer *Sphinx*, Miss Ramsden obtained, among other things, *Luxor in Egypt*:<sup>1</sup> on another occasion when *Bishop* was the object of the experiment, Miss Ramsden concluded in sequence "latme, Bishop Latimer, Archbishop."<sup>2</sup> The same characteristic is observable in numerous cases recorded in Mr. Piddington's study of Mrs. Piper, where the controls undertake to transfer a particular word from Mrs. Piper to Mrs. Verrall. The word is not given directly, but there is an evident groping towards it, attempts to get at it now along the route of sound, now along that of sense. In view of this quality in thought-transference we are entitled to claim that, if the subliminal self of, say, Mrs. Verrall, were trying to impress any given idea upon the automatic script both of Mrs. Verrall herself and of some other automatist, the correspondences actually achieved would often not be exact. The two scripts would, indeed, be orientated about the same idea; but they would be very far from identical. If we compare the word aimed at to the bull of a target, it is in a high degree probable that attempts to hit the bull would result in shots scattered widely round it. In other words, mildly complementary correspondences are likely to result from attempts at simple correspondences. The complementariness is probably not intentional, and its presence has no significance.

§ 14. I do not myself feel, however, when we come to

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 75.

more complicated cases, that this roundabout method of approach is the best. The question of intention is a secondary one. A more satisfactory method, as it seems to me, is to leave it aside altogether and to ask quite directly: "Do the complementary correspondences, the authorship of which is now under investigation, differ in any marked degree from other complementary correspondences that we have grounds for attributing to subliminal agency?" This is all that we need: for, if the answer is in the negative, we know, without delving behind the facts for explaining intentions, that the phenomena we are studying fall within the capacity of subliminal agents, and, therefore, on the principles here adopted, are probably due to them.

In order to a perfect application of this test, two conditions would be necessary, one of which, from the nature of the case, cannot be attained, while the other has not, as a matter of fact, been attained hitherto. The first condition is that we should know for certain that no discarnate intelligence had a hand in those complementary correspondences which we attribute to subliminal agency and use as a standard of comparison for the others. Now, it is evident that we can never know this for certain. In the case, to which I shall allude presently, in which Dr. Verrall endeavoured to impress three Greek words upon Mrs. Verrall's script, it is *possible* that the discarnate intelligence of Dr. A. T. Myers took part in the experiment, and that, but for his co-operation, the complementariness that occurred between the different scripts would not have come about. This is, no doubt, possible. I do not, however, attach much importance to such suggestions. We know that Dr. Verrall's subliminal consciousness and Mrs. Verrall's subliminal consciousness were agents; we have no evidential ground for believing that Dr. Myers was an agent at all, or that, if an agent, he was likely to be responsible for the complementary element in the scripts. I hold, therefore, that, *on the evidence*, the complementariness that emerged should be assigned, with a high measure of probability, to the action of the incarnate subliminal intelligences which we know to have been at work, and that the bare possibility of co-operation "from the other side" is not of material significance.

The second condition required to make our test perfect is.

that the complementariness which we have grounds for attributing to subliminal action should occur between the scripts of *different automatists*. If we had cases in which someone attempted to impress the same idea upon several different writers, the records of such cases would constitute an excellent standard with which to compare those complementary correspondences that claim to flow from a discarnate mind. Unfortunately, however, though experiments of this kind no doubt will be, they have not yet been, made. The best case that is available for our purpose is one in which the complementariness which occurs is between *different scripts of the same automatist*. I grant that the use of this case leaves room for the reply that the essential peculiarity of the Holland-Piper-Verrall cross-correspondences is just the fact that it is between the scripts of different automatists that complementariness occurs. Such a reply, however, seems unsound. If the subliminal consciousness can produce complementariness between the different scripts of one automatist, that seems to me to give strong ground for holding that it can produce at least an equal measure of complementariness between the scripts of different automatists. Indeed, if the complementariness arises in any measure out of a succession of attempts, that fall short of success in different ways, to bring some single idea to the surface, we should expect *à priori* somewhat greater diversity and more recondite complementariness when the attempts are made through several persons of different characteristics and environment than when they are made through one person only. Hence, though experiments with several automatists of the kind suggested above are much to be desired, it would seem that, meanwhile, the use, as a standard of comparison, of Dr. Verrall's experiment with one automatist is thoroughly well warranted. In short, the absence of the two conditions that I showed to be required in order to make our test *perfect* does not prevent that test from being very good.

§ 15. This then is the test proposed. In Mrs. Verrall's paper upon her own automatic writing, published in October, 1906, there is an account of an attempt made by Dr. Verrall to transfer telepathically to her automatic script the three Greek words  $\mu\omicron\nu\acute{\omicron}\pi\omega\lambda\omicron\nu$   $\epsilon\acute{\varsigma}$   $\acute{\alpha}\omega$ , "to the one-horse dawn," a phrase connected with an incident of his undergraduate days about

thirty years before.<sup>1</sup> The result of this experiment is traced by Mrs. Verrall in her script for six months following. We thus have a series of attempts—or, at least, it is extremely probable that we have—by the subliminal self of one or both of the persons concerned to reproduce a single definite idea in the script of one automatist. The test which I propose to apply to Mr. Piddington's and Miss Johnson's records is to see whether the degree of complementariness in the correspondences found in them is in any decided way more striking than that which appears in the different efforts of Mrs. Verrall's script to produce Dr. Verrall's words. If there is no decided difference it seems to me that the Holland-Piper-Verrall cross-correspondences are also *probably* the result of subliminal activities. I will first set out two cases of cross-correspondences from Miss Johnson's and Mr. Piddington's records, and will then make an analysis, on the same plan as theirs, of Mrs. Verrall's attempts at Dr. Verrall's Greek words.

The first case I shall take is that called in the records *Ave Roma Immortalis*. The reason I take it is that Miss Johnson writes in regard to it "‘Ave Roma Immortalis’ is the clearest case of what I regard as a typical cross-correspondence."<sup>2</sup> The case is quite simple. There is a picture in the Stanza d’Eliodoro in the Vatican which Miss Johnson describes as follows: "The picture is the well-known one in the Stanza d’Eliodoro in the Vatican. The Pope sits on a white palfrey, a cross-bearer riding on his left and cardinals on his right. Attila on a black horse is in the middle of the picture, with a standard-bearer in the background on his right and a group of mounted Huns beyond. St. Peter and St. Paul are descending from the sky, both bearing swords, and St. Peter also holding a large key or keys in his left hand. In the background is seen the city of Rome, with the Coliseum and aqueducts."<sup>3</sup>

The following passages occur in Mrs. Verrall's script:

*March 2*: "Primus inter pares ipse non nominis immemor. Cum eo frater etsi non sanguine animo consanguineus."

(First among his peers, himself not unmindful of his name; with him a brother related in feeling, though not in blood.)

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XX., p. 156.

<sup>2</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 387.

<sup>3</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 299.

*March 4:* "Pagan and Pope and Reformer all enemies as you think."

In Mrs. Holland's script of March 7 there occurs:

"Ave Roma immortalis. How could I make it any clearer without giving her the clue?"<sup>1</sup>

There are other details, but the above quotations give the essence of the process. This is well described by Miss Johnson in her comment. "A number of details of the picture, quite unintelligible to herself, were given by Mrs. Verrall, while a single *other* important detail, clinching the whole matter, was given by Mrs. Holland, accompanied by a remark implying that Mrs. Verrall had been purposely kept in the dark."<sup>2</sup>

I shall now set out a case from Mr. Piddington's records. The one I select is that dealing with Abt Vogler. I choose it because, since it has been summarised by Mrs. Verrall, I can use her words and need not make a summary of my own. She writes:

In the case of "Abt Vogler" we have a cross-correspondence of the complex type desired. The dates here are important. On January 2nd the delivery of the "Latin Message" was complete. On January 16th Mr. Piddington spoke to the Piper controls of the importance of cross-correspondences, and suggested the drawing of a triangle within a circle to show that a script formed part of a cross-correspondence. On January 23rd and 28th my script contained allusions to Hope, Star and Browning's *Abt Vogler*, and on February 3rd and 17th Miss Verrall's script alluded to star and Browning. On February 11th, before the completion of Miss Verrall's allusion, but after its beginning, the Piper controls announced as a cross-correspondence "Browning, Hope and Star," and on March 6th and thenceforward persistently they claimed that this particular cross-correspondence was "an answer to the Latin Message"; in other words, a cross-correspondence of the complex type.

Is this claim justified? Is something discoverable by putting the statements together that is not discoverable from any single one of them? I think this is so. Mrs. Piper describes the cross-

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., pp. 295-8. *Primus inter pares* is appropriate to the Pope. If we take the Pope as St. Peter, the brother in feeling might well be St. Paul. *Pagan and Pope* is appropriate to Attila and the Pope (cf. *Proceedings*, Vol. XXI., p. 300.)

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 387.

correspondence as "Browning Hope and Star." *Hope* appears in my script as a mis-quotation in a line of *Abt Vogler*, but does not appear in the poem at all. *Browning* and *Star* appear in both my script and my daughter's. The emphasis in my script among Browning's poems is plainly on *Abt Vogler*, but there is no indication in my script as to which, if either, of the lines in that poem which refer to a star underlies the general thought. The lines are:

Stanza IV.

"Not a point nor peak but found and fixed its wandering star."

Stanza VII.

"That out of three sounds he frame not a fourth sound but a star."

But, given that one of these two lines is to be indicated, Miss Verrall's script settles the point beyond dispute. The star is "the sign"; there is "heavenly harmony," "the diapason," "the mystic three," "above it all is the star." Thus, while my script determines the poem, my daughter's script determines the line. But her script alone does not determine the poem. It is only by combining her script with mine, and by interpreting them on the lines suggested by the three words of the Piper controls, that we see the point of this complex cross-correspondence, and find that the whole is something more than the sum of the parts.<sup>1</sup>

§ 16. I shall now analyse Mrs. Verrall's *different* attempts at Dr. Verrall's Greek words on a plan similar to the preceding. My point is to show that between these different attempts there is exactly the same kind of complementariness as between the different correspondences in the Piper case; that the isolated passages make no sense separately, but have meaning when properly combined. The words aimed at, it will be remembered, are *μονόπωλον ἐς ἄω*, meaning either "to the one-horse car of dawn" or, as Dr. Verrall thinks may be the case, "to the solitary dawn." They are contained in a passage from Euripides set for the Classical Tripos in 1873 when Dr. Verrall was a candidate. In April, 1901, Dr. Verrall wrote them down with a view to seeing whether they would appear in Mrs. Verrall's script. I now give the chief relevant passages. Mrs. Verrall wrote as follows:

July 4: Yellow is the colour of the dawn.

<sup>1</sup> *Journal S.P.R.*, January, 1909, pp. 29-30.

Sept. 2: Two syllables ἐς τὸ (following what seems like an attempt at ἐς on Aug. 9).

Sept. 11: *μονος μετα θεοῦ ουδε ἄλλου τινὸς.*  
(alone with God, and none other).

Sept. 18: *εις ιππος* (one horse).

Now, if we suppose these four passages to have occurred in the writings of separate automatists, we have all the conditions of a typical cross-correspondence. Separately they have no meaning, but properly fitted together, they combine into the full meaning of Dr. Verrall's words. This, however, is not all. On August 20, Mrs. Verrall wrote: "The long room with the many windows is near this hot room, he was outside." On Sept. 20: "There were others there, but he knew more than the rest." Here we have a further elaboration. Dr. Verrall's Greek words formed the subject of a conversation between him, Dr. A. T. Myers, and others on the steps of the Senate House after the examination. The two sentences *in combination* give the idea, wholly veiled in either of them singly, of a group on the steps of the Senate House, of whom Dr. Verrall "knew more than the rest." When they are combined, further, with the words already quoted we have this group identified with the party that discussed there the problem of the "one-horse dawn." I have kept for the last one passage of that recondite allusive type to which Mr. Piddington, in discussing his cross-correspondences, attributes especial importance. On Sept. 9, Mrs. Verrall wrote: "Find the herb moly, that will help—it is a clue." The bearing of this passage has most fortunately been discovered by the care and ingenuity of Mrs. Verrall. I quote her words: "In the spring of 1905, when I was writing this paper, and had ascertained that the passage of the *Orestes* was set in the last paper of the Classical Tripos of 1873, it occurred to me to look at the other papers set in that year, and I found that the subject for Latin Hexameters in the Tripos of 1873 was the passage from *Comus* ending

"And yet more med'cinal is it than that moly  
Which Hermes once to wise Ulysses gave."<sup>1</sup>

Could anything be more typical than this of the general manner of the cases recorded in Mr. Piddington's paper?

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings*, Vol. XX., p. 163 and pp. 387-90.

How effective it would have been if the allusion had been discovered in Mrs. Holland's script after, say, Mrs. Piper's had given the sentence about the room with many windows and Mrs. Verrall's *μονόπωλον ἐς ἄω!* All the characteristics of the best cross-correspondences seem to me to be produced in this experiment. Since, therefore, there are strong grounds for believing that the agent here was the subliminal consciousness of Mr. or of Mrs. Verrall, or of both together, there are also strong grounds for believing that the manufacture of cross-correspondences of the required type falls within the compass of incarnate mind. In view of this fact I conclude that the occurrence of these correspondences in other cases does not make probable the operation of any discarnate mind.

§ 17. This conclusion, of course, deprives of the greater part of its interest the third question which I distinguished at the beginning; if the cause of the correspondences is some discarnate mind, how probable is it that it is the mind of that deceased person with whom it claims to be identical. My answer to this question would be that the general practice of living men and women makes probable the proposition that a person announcing himself as Mr. A. really is that person. Since we have no ground for believing that discarnate intelligences are more likely than incarnate to adopt aliases, I, therefore, conclude that, if the personality acting through Mrs. Piper and purporting to be Frederic Myers is a discarnate intelligence at all, he probably is Frederic Myers. As I have said, however, the evidence seems to me to make it probable that this personality is not a discarnate intelligence, but is a product of the subliminal activity of some living person.

§ 18. This conclusion, it should be remembered, refers exclusively to the evidence of the cross-correspondences that have so far been recorded. The evidence that consists in what Mr. Dickinson calls the *vraisemblance* of the impersonations of Mrs. Piper's various controls has not been considered. Its value cannot, I think, easily be estimated except by intimate friends of the alleged controls who are prepared both to undertake a large number of sittings with Mrs. Piper, and also to study known cases of fictitious impersonations by secondary personalities. What the result of that kind of investigation will

be I do not venture to forecast. It may be that the manufacture of *vraisemblances* of the type that has been obtained will not be found to fall within those powers that we have evidence for assigning to the subliminal self. It may be, again, that new cross-correspondences will be recorded in the future that do not fall within those powers. If either of these things happens, we shall be confronted with a problem in the logic of probability the solution of which is not likely to be easily found.



# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Society for Psychical Research.

PART LIX.

NOVEMBER, 1909.

---

## PROCEEDINGS OF GENERAL MEETING.

THE 134th General Meeting of the Society was held in the Queen's (Small) Hall, Langham Place, London, W., on Friday, June 18th, 1909, at 3.30 p.m.; SIR OLIVER LODGE in the chair.

THE HON. EVERARD FEILDING read a paper on "Some Sittings with Eusapia Palladino," the full report of which sittings is printed below.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE TO THE "REPORT ON SITTINGS  
WITH EUSAPIA PALLADINO."

THE following paper contains an account by Mr. Feilding, Mr. Baggally and Mr. Hereward Carrington<sup>1</sup> of the results of their investigations at Naples of the well-known medium Eusapia Palladino. It seems necessary to introduce it with some explanation of the reasons which have induced the Council of the Society for Psychical Research to depart in this instance from its usual practice of not concerning itself with mediums who have been detected in trickery of a seemingly deliberate character, and have led it to send the three above-named gentlemen—all experienced investigators well acquainted with tricks practised at séances—to Naples to hold sittings with Eusapia. This explanation is the more needed as it is by no means the intention of the Council to change its general practice.

The reasons against employing fraudulent mediums are very obvious. It encourages a mischievous trade, the existence of which stands in the way of scientific investigation. If it is true, as alleged, that in the presence of specially endowed persons movements of objects and other physical phenomena are produced by forces unknown to science, it is of course possible and even probable that these forces may sometimes be manifested in the case of persons who are ready to simulate them when it suits their convenience to do so. Proved trickery does not exclude the possibility of genuine phenomena even in connexion with the trickster. But it reduces the value of evidence obtained through such a medium, since even if a competent investigator convinces himself that he has not been deceived by any conjurer's arts, it is difficult for him to produce the same conviction in others. Moreover, the prevalence

<sup>1</sup> Author of *The Physical Phenomena of Spiritualism*, a book giving a useful account of trick methods.

of proved trickery tends to discredit the whole subject and to deter honest persons who think they may have these special powers from lending themselves to investigation. And further, it tends to foster a belief, likely to fulfil itself through suggestion, that conditions which are favourable to fraud are those favourable to phenomena.

It is therefore of the utmost importance, in the interests of Psychological Research, that fraudulent mediumship should be strongly discouraged by making it clear that trickery leads to loss of employment. So long as the fees of investigators and of convinced spiritualists flow with unabated abundance into the pockets of mediums who have been detected in deliberate trickery, this trickery will also remain unabated.

It is for these reasons that those guiding the affairs of the Society for Psychological Research have as a rule abstained from employing mediums known to have resorted to deliberate trickery, and they believe that in this they have the approval of most of the members of the Society.

In the case of Eusapia Palladino, however, another consideration comes in, and has led the Council to decide that it would be advisable that some persons specially practised in the investigation of mediumistic physical phenomena, and who had themselves detected trickery in other cases, should carry out an investigation with her on behalf of the Society. When in 1894 and 1895 certain members of the Society had sittings with her privately, first at the île Roubaud and at Carqueiranne by invitation of Professor Richet, and afterwards at Cambridge, Eusapia had already been detected in what might legitimately be called fraud, though there was room for supposing that it might be occasional only. The Cambridge sittings proved, in the opinion of the sitters, that the deceptive methods adopted by her indicated skill and practice on her part, and at these sittings she also showed unwillingness to experiment under conditions dispensing with the need of continuous observation. Accordingly the investigation was dropped. On the other hand, however, those engaged in Psychological Research abroad have continued their investigations, and Eusapia has been observed by probably a larger number of scientific men than any other medium, and can produce a larger number of witnesses whose opinion would carry weight in other subjects, who have been

convinced that unknown forces do in certain cases operate in her presence. Some of the recorded phenomena, moreover, cannot be explained by her *detected* methods of trickery. In particular Sir Oliver Lodge has always strongly adhered to his view that this is true of some of the phenomena observed by him at the île Roubaud, and that, further, these were not the result of *any* trick. (The record of his investigations was printed at the time in the *Journal S.P.R.*, Vol. VI., pp. 306-336, and 346-347.) In these circumstances the Council came to the conclusion that as we do not maintain an obstinate attitude of incredulity, we should again make an attempt to collect material with a view to forming an independent judgment on the phenomena Eusapia presents. The results will be found in the following account of the séances recently held at Naples.

*Signed on behalf of the Council,*

ELEANOR MILDRED SIDGWICK  
(*President*).

REPORT ON A SERIES OF SITTINGS WITH EUSAPIA  
PALLADINO.

BY THE HON. EVERARD FEILDING, W. W. BAGGALLY, AND  
HEREWARD CARRINGTON.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
I. INTRODUCTION	
Preliminary - - - - -	310
Historical - - - - -	311
Object of the Present Investigation - - - - -	318
The Investigating Committee - - - - -	319
II. GENERAL ACCOUNT OF THE SITTINGS	
The Séance Room - - - - -	321
Conduct of the Séances - - - - -	323
The Control - - - - -	325
The Phenomena - - - - -	328
Conclusions - - - - -	340
III. DETAILED REPORT	
Measurements - - - - -	345
Séance I. - - - - -	346
„ II. - - - - -	358
„ III. - - - - -	375
„ IV. - - - - -	399
„ V. - - - - -	418
„ VI. - - - - -	440
„ VII. - - - - -	463
„ VIII. - - - - -	484
„ IX. - - - - -	505
The Bell Incident - - - - -	525
Séance X. - - - - -	527
„ XI. - - - - -	536

## IV. INDIVIDUAL CONCLUSIONS OF THE INVESTIGATORS

PAGE

Final Note by Hereward Carrington	-	-	-	-	-	555
„ W. W. Baggally	-	-	-	-	-	556
„ the Hon. Everard Feilding	-	-	-	-	-	566

## I.

## INTRODUCTION.

## PRELIMINARY.

OF all the problems with which psychological research is confronted there is none upon which opinion still remains more hopelessly divided,—not only among students of the reports of other people, but among actual experimenters themselves,—than on that of the reality or otherwise of what are now known as the “physical phenomena of spiritualism.” In all times, and from all countries, phenomena of this class are recorded, from the days of Aaron’s rod to those of the Rochester rappings, when this era of modern systematised spiritualism was inaugurated; since which the world has been flooded with claimants to every kind of unorthodox power over physical nature, which they are willing to display to all comers in return for a very moderate consideration. It may seem a remarkable thing that with all the wealth of opportunity for investigation that appears ready at hand no final answer to the question of what these pretensions amount to should yet have been reached.

It is understating the case to say that the vast majority of these modern wizards and witches are the merest charlatans—sometimes, indeed, using mechanical and scientific apparatus of extreme ingenuity,<sup>1</sup> but as a rule relying merely upon the simplest devices, with an insolent confidence in the avid simplicity of their dupes. Yet every now and then a personality arises whose claims to something beyond such manifest

<sup>1</sup>A good notion of the dimensions to which this conspiracy of fraud has attained in America can be obtained from David P. Abbott’s *Behind the Scenes with the Mediums* (London: Kegan Paul) and H. Carrington’s *Physical Phenomena of Spiritualism* (London: Werner Laurie).

imposture it has seemed impossible to dismiss thus curtly. Of such it would be possible to compile a fairly formidable list, but for present purposes it is sufficient to mention but two, D. D. Home and Eusapia Palladino, concerning whom a mass of material exists from authorities of competence and integrity, of such a kind as to place their case in a wholly different category. It may almost be said that by the evidence for the possession of supernormal faculty by these two persons, the whole controversy regarding the existence of some hitherto unascertained and unrecognised force affecting matter and apparently operating, whether directly or indirectly, through the organism of particular individuals, must be decided. If ultimately the evidence for its display by these "mediums" be judged invalid, there remains little to be said for the less well-attested claims of any others. If, on the other hand, the existence of a telekinetic force in them can be proved beyond reasonable doubt, a great impulse towards credibility is given to a number of historical phenomena which have hitherto failed to achieve it, less on account of the weight of evidence by which they were supported than of the inherent improbability of their occurrence. D. D. Home has passed away, a lasting marvel to those who witnessed the events of his career, and a still unsolved mystery to those who are familiar with them through the records only. Eusapia Palladino is, however, still active, and, owing to an increasing interest among men of science on the Continent in the strange phenomena alleged to take place in her presence, may be said to have reached the zenith of her fame.

#### HISTORICAL.

Without attempting a complete history of this remarkable woman, it may be useful to give a short outline of the events which have made her so interesting a figure in the discussion of this obscure question.

Eusapia was the daughter of a peasant, and was born in 1854 in the province of Bari. Her education was of the poorest, and even now she is unable to read, or to write more than her own name. According to her own account, her father having been killed by brigands, she was, after certain

vicissitudes, taken in a menial position into a family given to spiritualistic practices. Being called one day to make up the circle at a séance, certain new and surprising manifestations took place, and she was pronounced to be herself a "medium." She states that for many years she was merely frightened by these occurrences and sought to evade the importunity of people who constantly tried to induce her to attend séances. She eventually made the acquaintance of Cavaliere Ercole Chiaja of Naples, who, partly overcoming her prejudices, persuaded her to develop her "power." It was through this gentleman that Eusapia owed her first introduction to the scientific world, by the publication in 1888 of an open letter to Professor Lombroso stating that the writer had become convinced that certain phenomena took place in her presence contrary to all natural physical law, and inviting Lombroso to investigate the case for himself. Lombroso did so three years later, with the result that he was convinced of the non-fraudulent character of the phenomena. Professor Tamburini, however, who was associated with him in the experiments, did not consider that the evidence was sufficient to give conclusive proof of the production or transmission of force in modes other than those known to science, though he apparently admitted that it pointed strongly in that direction, and was prepared to grant the possibility, or even the probability, of Lombroso's view that cerebral movements might be transmitted by means of the ether to surrounding objects, and act upon them as force, without the intervention of muscular action (Lombroso, *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, 1891, p. 326, and 1892, p. 143; Tamburini, *Spiritismo e telepatia*, reviewed in *Proceedings S.P.R.*, Vol. IX., p. 224).

Lombroso's confession of faith had the effect of inducing another group of scientific men to undertake fresh experiments, and 17 sittings were held in 1892 in Milan by a committee consisting of Professor Schiaparelli, Director of the Astronomical Observatory of Milan; Professor Richet, Professor of Physiology in Paris; Carl du Prel, D.Ph. of Munich; Angelo Brofferio, Professor of Philosophy; three physicists, Professor Gerosa and Drs. Ermacora and Finzi, and M. Aksakoff, the well-known spiritualist (see *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, 1893, pp. 39-64). The phenomena were of the kind that have since

been so frequently described in connection with Eusapia; in full light, levitations of the table, movements of objects, and the alteration by as much as 21 lbs. of the medium's weight in a balance; and in darkness or semi-darkness, the appearance and contact of hands, etc. The Committee, with some reserve as to the frequently unsatisfactory nature of the holding of Eusapia's hands, came to the conclusion that none of the phenomena which were obtained in good light could have been produced by trickery, and that this was equally true of many of the others.

Referring to the appearance of a hand, they say, "It is impossible to count the number of times that that hand appeared and was touched by one of us; suffice it to say that doubt was no longer possible; it was, indeed, a living human hand which we saw and touched, while at the same time the bust and arms of the medium remained visible and her hands were held by those on either side of her."

Professor Richet did not sign the report, but preferred to issue a more cautious one of his own (*Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, 1893, pp. 1-31). He points out various unsatisfactory features of the control of the medium's hands, as well as the inconclusive nature of the experiments in the reduction of her weight. In regard to the hands that were seen and felt, he thinks that the only normal explanation of them (the hypothesis of an accomplice being apparently out of the question) was that Eusapia got one of her hands free, and he discusses in detail the way in which this might have been done by substitution. He gives, however, cases where substitution seems impossible, and says that they never detected it. M. Richet states his own conclusion as follows: "Absurd and unsatisfactory though they were, it seems to me very difficult to attribute the phenomena produced to deception, conscious or unconscious, or to a series of deceptions. Nevertheless, conclusive and indisputable proof that there was no fraud on Eusapia's part, or illusion on our part, is wanting. We must therefore renew our efforts to obtain such proof."<sup>1</sup>

A series of 40 sittings were held in Warsaw by Dr. Ochorowicz in 1893-1894, the reports of which were published in the

<sup>1</sup>A full discussion by Mr. Podmore of these Milan experiments will be found in *Proceedings S.P.R.*, Vol. IX., p. 218.

Polish newspapers and are summarised by de Krauz in the *Revue de l'Hypnotisme*, July-December, 1894. There were considerable differences of opinion as to the results among those who took part in the sittings. Out of twenty-three experimenters, ten, including Ochorowicz himself, were convinced of the supernormal character of the phenomena; seven, while expressing certain doubts as to the honesty of the medium and the method of experimentation, thought they could not all be due to an ordinary mechanical agency. Two, on the other hand, were inclined, with certain reservations, to deny the supernormal character of the manifestations, and three attributed them all to fraud. One declined to express any opinion at all, being dissatisfied with the method of experimentation. While certain observations of Dr. Reichmann, one of the three who denied the genuineness of any of the phenomena, irresistibly point to fraud on certain occasions; on certain others the correctness of his observation is strongly disputed by Dr. Ochorowicz. It appears that Dr. Reichmann detected, among other more occasional tricks, the substitution of hands or feet which afterwards played so prominent a part in the Cambridge experiments, as will be noticed later.

In 1894 Sir Oliver Lodge and Mr. Myers, on Professor Richet's invitation, took part in four sittings at the île Roubaud in the Mediterranean; Sir Oliver Lodge being given control of the séance room. A few weeks later, Professor and Mrs. Sidgwick, also as Professor Richet's guests, assisted at eight sittings, at six of which Sir Oliver Lodge was again present. A full report by him of the first series is printed in the *Journal S.P.R.*, Vol. VI. (pp. 306-336 and 346-7). Sir Oliver Lodge and Mr. Myers were convinced by these sittings of the supernormal character of some of the phenomena; and Professor and Mrs. Sidgwick, who did not witness the phenomena that most impressed Sir Oliver Lodge, expressed the opinion that if the medium's hands were, as they appeared to be, adequately controlled, there seemed no way of accounting for the phenomena except by supernormal means. At these sittings, some of which were held in darkness too great to admit of the hands being seen, no fraud was actually discovered.

In the *Journal S.P.R.* for March-April, 1895, Vol. VII.

(pp. 36-55), there appeared an analysis and criticism of Sir Oliver Lodge's report by Dr. Hodgson, who complained that a number of important points, chiefly relative to the conditions of control and, in particular, to the way the hands and feet of Eusapia were held, were omitted from the report, leaving the door open for various suppositions as to the way in which the phenomena might have been produced by normal means. As a result of this criticism it was felt that further experiment was necessary, and in the summer of 1895 Eusapia came to Cambridge, where she gave a series of twenty-one sittings.

Very early in the sittings suspicious circumstances were observed, especially in regard to the limitations imposed by Eusapia on the holding of her hands and feet, and the coincidence of the phenomena with the moment of least satisfactory holding. What was still more suspicious was the precautions apparently adopted by Eusapia to avoid any detection of fraud. She would not allow the sitters to feel about in the darkness with their hands, and any "grabbing" of the supposed materialised hand that performed the touches or movements of objects was strictly forbidden. After vainly attempting through the greater part of the sittings to obtain genuine phenomena under unimpeachable conditions, the investigators were obliged to turn their attention to ascertaining exactly what methods of fraud were used. Dr. Hodgson had been invited over from America to attend these sittings, and his observations, with those of other sitters, ended in convincing all those who had any prolonged experience of the sittings that the substitution of hands and feet described by Prof. Richet as possible, and already detected by Dr. Reichmann, constantly occurred and could be observed if attention was directed to it. At the end of the series, the investigators responsible for conducting it unanimously arrived at the conclusion that systematic fraud, of a kind that must have required long practice, had been used in many cases and was to be inferred in others, and that there was no adequate reason for concluding in favour of any supernatural agency having been at work during the course of the sittings. (See *Journal S.P.R.*, Vol. VII., pp. 131-5, and 148-159.)

None of the present writers had the advantage of being present at these Cambridge sittings, which appear to have differed markedly in certain respects from those which form the

subject of the present report. The chief points of difference lie in the condition of light and in the degree of control of her hands permitted by Eusapia. For the most part the séances appear to have taken place either in complete darkness or in light so poor as not to ensure the visibility of the medium's hands, while she seems never to have allowed her hands to be properly held. This, as will be seen later, also occurred at some of the Naples sittings, and our experience was that the sense of touch was so little to be trusted on the occasions when Eusapia refused to allow the complete control of her hands, that observation depending on it alone is quite useless. Had our own sittings been conducted throughout in these conditions it is quite certain that we should have felt ourselves unable to come to the conclusions at which in fact we arrived.

The net result of the Cambridge experiments was not to show any hitherto unsuspected method of trickery, but to show that certain already discovered methods, substitution of hands or feet in the dark, were far more frequently resorted to than the Continental observers had up to then ascertained.

The Cambridge series is, we believe, the only published negative series in the experience of Eusapia, though we have knowledge of at least one other series of 14 or 15 sittings in which the fraudulent devices already mentioned played an extremely prominent rôle. It should, however, be added that in these sittings, as in a certain proportion of those at Cambridge, opportunities for cheating were, for experimental purposes, deliberately given, of which the medium took suitable advantage.

It would be wearisome to attempt to review all the series of experiments undergone by Eusapia since the issue of the Cambridge report. The bibliography of the reports and discussions on her mediumship which have appeared between 1895 and 1907 cover 29 pages in Prof. Morselli's recent book. She had been dropped by this Society as a fraudulent medium, notwithstanding the fact that there appeared to be a few phenomena, even in the Cambridge sittings, for which the ascertained fraud could not account, to say nothing of the previous observations by Sir Oliver Lodge at the *île Roubaud*, and by numbers of other qualified experimenters. Continental observers were by no means satisfied that the Cambridge report could cover the whole ground of Eusapia's case, and

they renewed their investigations with increased energy. As a result, the opinion of practically all the scientific men and others (apart from the Cambridge investigators) who have given any attention by personal experiment to the subject, is that, after making every allowance for such fraud as she may occasionally permit herself to indulge in, Eusapia is nevertheless possessed of faculties of some supernormal kind. The most important contributions to the study of the case are perhaps M. Camille Flammarion's *Les forces naturelles inconnues*, in which, as part of a general discussion of alleged supernormal phenomena, an elaborate description of Eusapia's case is contained; the large work, in two volumes, *Psicologia e Spiritismo*, by Enrico Morselli, Professor of Pathology in the University of Genoa (reviewed in *Proceedings S.P.R.*, Vol. XXI., pp. 516-25); the report by M. Courtier, issued by the *Institut Général Psychologique* of Paris as the result of experiments extending over three years, and attended, among others, by Professor and Madame Curie, M. d'Arsonval, M. Henri Bergson, M. Ballet, M. Charpentier, M. Riehet, M. Branly, and M. de Youriévitich; and the report by Professor Bottazzi, Professor of Physiology in the University of Naples, of a series of sittings held in 1907 by himself and Professors Galcotti, de Amicis, Scarpa, Pansini, and Cardarelli, of which a *résumé* will be found in the *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, August-November, 1907.

Professor Morselli announces his belief in the possession by Eusapia of some supernormal power without any reserve whatever. In an article in the *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, April, 1907, after stating that for many years his state of mind regarding the existence of these phenomena was to believe that those who asserted that they were genuine were either deluded by gross fraud or were the victims of hallucination or of illusions of judgment, he says that he has now changed his belief: "I write with full consciousness of being in the right . . . that the phenomena of physical mediumship attributed to Eusapia are in the great majority of cases real, authentic, genuine; that in the now innumerable series of her 'spiritistic' manifestations there may be an admixture of some spurious phenomena, sometimes also naïve and puerile attempts at deception on her part, and illusions or errors of appreciation on the part of the sitters; but on the whole the phenomena produced

by Eusapia have for a calm scientist, an impartial observer, a competent student of psychology, an objective existence and a positive consistency equal to those attained by categories of facts judged by ordinary reasoning, and verified and accepted in accordance with the rules of the experimental method."

The report of the *Institut Général Psychologique* is more cautious, and no positive conclusions are attempted. They mention the practice of certain frauds, saying that it is difficult to indicate exactly the extent of them, and point out that of course such frauds, adequately proved, tend to throw suspicion upon everything. They state that the objectivity, at all events, of the phenomena has been proved by self-registering instruments; that movements and liftings of objects appear to take place by simple contact with the hands or the dress of the medium, and also without contact; that although muscular contractions on the part of the medium take place at the time of such movements, no direct mechanical action upon the object so moved was observed; that in the neighbourhood of the medium luminous phenomena were observed of which the character was undetermined: that forms of human appearance were seen and sensations of contact felt, in the production of some of which, however, fraud was ascertained, and that apparently the medium can from a distance discharge an electroscope and produce in objects molecular vibrations (raps and other sounds).<sup>1</sup>

The report of Prof. Bottazzi "*Dans les régions inexplorées de la biologie humaine*" in the *Annales* referred to above is of an absolutely positive character. It is lively reading, and, granting that the phenomena are genuine, is of much interest as a description of Eusapia's séances, and of the results attending the use of various scientific apparatus. But as the dull details of the actual control existing are not insisted on, it is of little help as a solution of the problem whether the phenomena in themselves were or were not fraudulent.

#### OBJECT OF THE PRESENT INVESTIGATION.

In the face of all these reports from scientific men of high standing and accustomed to experimental research, which,

<sup>1</sup> A full discussion of this report will be found in Count Solovovo's review below.

whether wholly favourable or not, at all events suggested that the case of Eusapia could not be lightly dismissed with the explanation that all the phenomena occurring in her presence were due to common fraud, it seemed desirable that this Society, one of whose objects is to investigate physical phenomena, should not maintain its attitude of aloofness on the mere ground that Eusapia was, on certain occasions, detected in trickery, and the Council accordingly, after some consideration, determined to reopen the case. A statement of their attitude in the matter is contained in the Note which prefaces the present Report.

Count Solovovo, in his review printed below, criticises the Paris report on the ground that while it proves the *objectivity* of the phenomena, sufficient regard was not paid to proving their *authenticity*. The phenomena themselves are elaborately described, but not the exact conditions under which they occurred. With certain exceptions, the same criticism may, indeed, be made of most of the reports which have hitherto appeared. The experimenters have been more solicitous of stating their conclusions than of assisting readers to form conclusions for themselves. We decided, therefore, to furnish as complete a record as possible of the conduct of our séances, and while it is true that a report consisting mainly, as does the present, of mere details of hand-holding, foot-holding, and conditions of light, is intolerably wearisome and unreadable, a report of this kind is necessary for those who are prepared to take the trouble of following at least a part of it with attention, if anything more than the mere *ipse dixit* of an observer as to the adequacy of the control is to be provided.

#### THE INVESTIGATING COMMITTEE.

As regards the *personnel* of the Committee appointed by the Council to undertake the investigation, it was felt that as the object of it was merely to attempt to determine whether the phenomena were due to trickery or not, the assistance of persons well versed in the available methods of trickery should be invoked.

Mr. Carrington has been for some time the investigator for the American Society for Psychical Research, and is the author

of a book, *The Physical Phenomena of Spiritualism* (London: Werner Laurie), in which is a detailed exposure of the tricks employed by fraudulent mediums, of which he has made a special study. For many years Mr. Carrington has been an amateur conjurer, and is able to reproduce almost any of the slate writing and other "tests" offered by the average "medium." In the course of his work for the American Society he has investigated many cases of poltergeists, physical phenomena, etc., etc., and in all the ten years of such work had never seen anything that he was unable to account for by trickery, which in many cases he could improve upon.

Mr. Baggally has similarly been for many years an investigator of the phenomena of spiritualism and has been specially interested in the physical phenomena. He, also, is an amateur conjurer of much experience. Notwithstanding the fact that he had investigated nearly all the mediums who have appeared upon the spiritualist horizon since the days of D. D. Home, he, like Mr. Carrington, had never yet met with what appeared to him a genuine example of any agency other than that of more or less easily discoverable trickery, and before the experiments with Eusapia, had come to an entirely negative conclusion as to the probability of any genuine physical phenomena.

Mr. Feilding, though not himself a conjurer, had had a reasonably extensive experience in the investigation of physical phenomena and the advantage of a fairly complete education at the hands of fraudulent mediums. While preserving an open mind as to the possibility of the existence of some hitherto unascertained force in nature whereby the manifestations testified to by so many observers of high standing were produced, the discovery of repeated fraud had produced in him an attitude of complete scepticism as regards the probability of his ever finding any examples of the exercise of such a force.



FIG. I.



## II.

## GENERAL ACCOUNT OF THE SITTINGS.

## THE SÉANCE ROOM.

On receipt of the Council's commission to hold further experiments with Eusapia, a wire was sent asking if she would consent to a series of séances, and an affirmative reply being received, two of us, F. and C.,<sup>1</sup> went to Naples. We chose adjoining rooms on the fifth floor of the Hotel Victoria, one of the principal hotels in Naples, and decided to hold the séances in F.'s room, of which a plan is given facing p. 346. F. and C. then visited Eusapia and made arrangements with her for a series of five séances, to be extended to ten if required. Enquiries were next made for an English shorthand writer, who was eventually, on the suggestion of Messrs. Thos. Cook & Son, discovered in the person of Mr. Albert Meeson, a gentleman in the employ of the American Express Co., and hitherto unknown to Eusapia.<sup>2</sup>

A group of electric lights of variable illuminating power was arranged and hung from the ceiling at a distance of 6 feet from the position of the medium's head.

As paraphernalia for the proposed séances, Eusapia desired us to procure a pair of black curtains and a small deal table. Alternatively, she offered to provide them herself. We accepted her offer expressly with a view to seeing if she would provide anything in the nature of a trick apparatus. The curtains, which were her own, proved to be of very thin black cashmere and concealed no mystery; while the table which she procured for us, and of which a photograph is given opposite, was on careful examination found to be an absolutely plain structure,

<sup>1</sup>From this point onwards the investigators, Messrs. Feilding, Carrington, and Baggally (who later joined the first two), are designated by their initials.

<sup>2</sup>We wish to take this occasion of expressing our acknowledgments to Mr. Meeson for his invaluable assistance in what proved a most laborious undertaking.

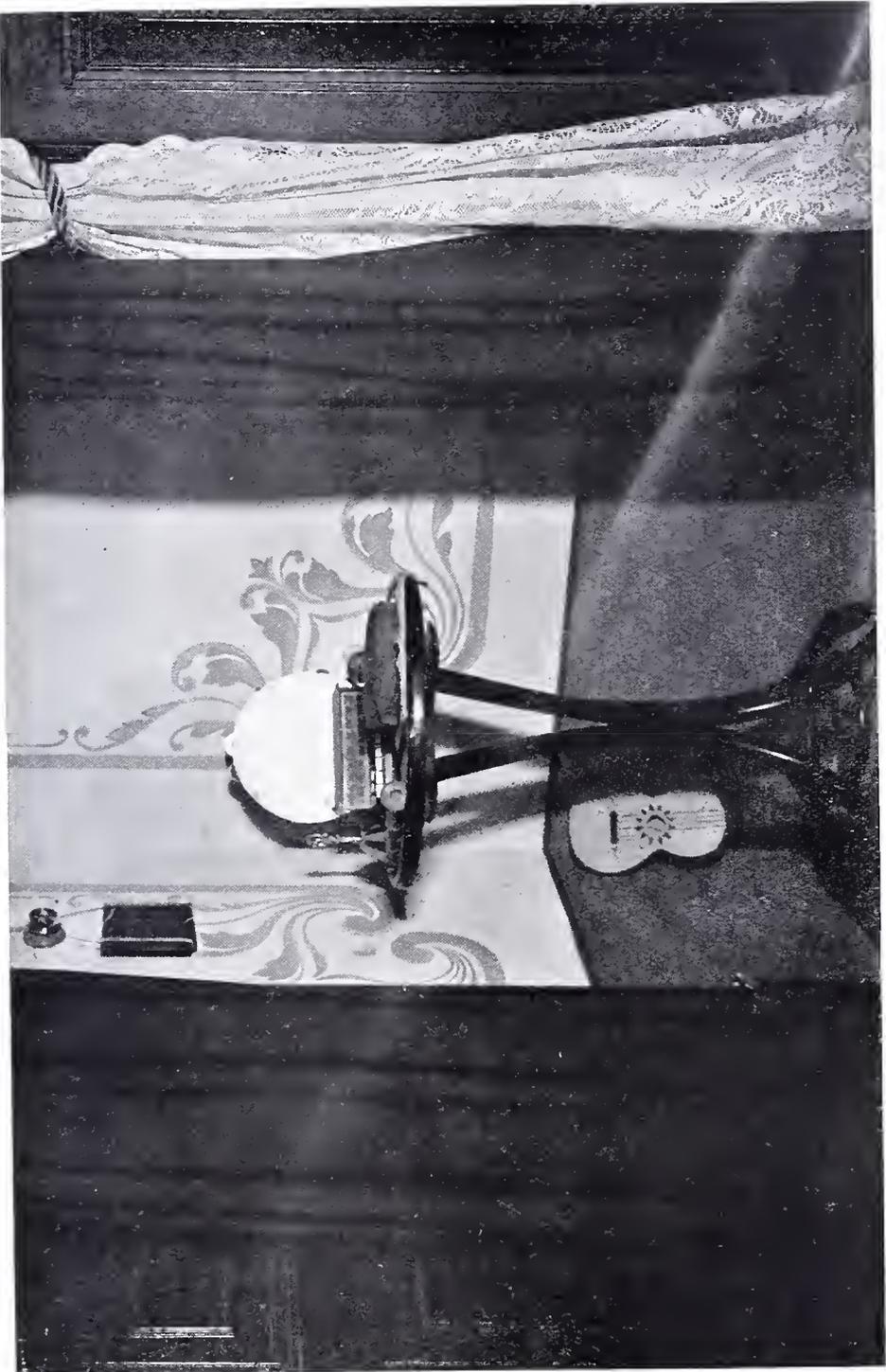
without rim, 2 ft.  $10\frac{3}{4}$  ins. (87 cm.) long by 1 ft.  $7\frac{1}{4}$  ins. (48 cm.) broad, and weighing  $10\frac{1}{2}$  lbs. (4.75 kilog.). The curtains were, at Eusapia's request, stretched across a corner of the séance room on a wire fastened to nails in the walls, so as to enclose a small triangular space, the depth from the angle of the walls to the middle of the curtains being 2 ft. 8 ins. (80 cm.), and the space so enclosed will be referred to throughout this report as the 'cabinet.'

Eusapia also requested us to procure various small objects to be placed inside the cabinet. We purchased accordingly a couple of tambourines, a guitar, a toy trumpet, a flageolet, a toy piano, and a tea bell. These objects were disposed about the cabinet, some on a small round table which we generally placed inside it, and some on the floor, leaning against the walls or against the small table (see Fig. II.).

The scene, in fact, was set according to Eusapia's usual habit; and if a criticism be made (a criticism the justice of which we are ourselves prepared partly to concede) that we did not in this setting or in the subsequent conduct of the experiments seek to introduce a variation from her accustomed procedure, our reply must be that our time in Naples was limited, and that after due consideration we preferred to adopt conditions to which the medium was used and in which therefore it was probable that effects would be produced, rather than impose others which might possibly impede the production of what we had gone to study. We conceived our function to be, not the scientific examination of the nature of the force involved in the production of possibly supernormal manifestations, but, by means of the technical experience in 'spiritualistic' conjuring possessed by two out of our number, to attempt to determine the preliminary question of whether the manifestations themselves were or were not merely attributable to *legerdemain*.

Rightly or wrongly, we believed, and still believe, that the simplest plan would be to allow matters to take their accustomed course, while adopting every precaution that occurred to us as necessary to the end we had in view. We felt that if, in a reasonable number of experiments, persons specially versed in conjuring tricks and already forewarned concerning, and familiar with, the particular tricks to be expected, were

FIG. II.





unable to discover them, it would not be presumptuous to claim as a probable consequence that some other agency must be involved.

#### CONDUCT OF THE SÉANCES.

Before the arrival of Eusapia, the room was examined, unnecessary furniture removed, the cabinet was prepared, the various objects put in position, and the curtains drawn together. One of us then went down to receive her. She came attended by her husband, who then left, and she came up to our rooms alone. The door was then locked, and she immediately took her place at the narrow end of the séance table, with her back to the curtains of the cabinet, the back of her chair being a foot or a foot and a half distant from them. One of us sat on each side of her, holding or held by her hand, with his foot under or on her foot, his leg generally pressing against the whole length of hers, often with his free hand across her knees, and very frequently with his two feet encircling her foot.

The degree of control permitted by her varied very much, and appeared to depend upon her mood. If she was in a good temper she would generally allow us to control her as we pleased, that is, to hold the whole of her hand, to tie her hands and her feet, or to encircle her feet with ours. If, as happened on two or three occasions, she was in a bad temper, she made difficulties about everything, complained of our suspicious attitude, allowed the poorest light, and was generally intractable. *We never found, however, that the adequacy of the control influenced unfavourably the production of the phenomena.* On the contrary, it was on the nights when she was in the best humour, and consequently when our precautions were most complete and the light the strongest, that the phenomena were the most numerous. On the other hand, when she seemed in bad health, or was in a bad humour or indisposed for the séance, she appeared to try to evade our control: she would not allow us to grasp her hands fully, but merely rested them on ours; she asked for the light to be reduced, and her movements were furtive and hard to follow. The phenomena on these occasions were rarer and of small account, *and we did not find that the reduction*

*of light, and the consequent increased facility for fraud had any effect in stimulating them.*

Her own condition varied greatly. She exhibited three stages of consciousness. During the continuance of the brighter light in which the séance generally opened she remained perfectly normal, and it was in this state as a rule that the levitations<sup>1</sup> of the séance table, which will be later described, took place. She would then gradually sink into a condition of half-trance, preluded as a rule by numerous yawns and amazing hiccoughs. In this state she still speaks and answers questions, though her manner is quieter than in her normal state, her speech oppressed and plaintive, and her eyes clouded. She professes to have no recollection of events that take place in this state. It is difficult to distinguish the exact moment of the beginning of this amnesic condition, but when questioned she stated that as a rule she remembers nothing after the light is reduced for the first time.

Of her third state, that of deep trance, we did not have many examples. It was, however, generally coincident with the more complex phenomena. *Ex hypothesi*, while in this state she is under the complete influence of her 'control,'<sup>2</sup> 'John King.' She speaks sometimes in a deep voice, refers to herself in the third person as 'my daughter' or 'the medium,' and addresses the sitters as 'thou.' She laughs occasionally in a raucous, almost diabolic manner, and her expression is at times fierce and forbidding. But as a rule she is apparently overwhelmed by sleep, throws herself often into the arms of her neighbours, remains entirely passive, and surrenders herself

<sup>1</sup>See footnote, p. 347. We use the word 'levitation' merely because it has, so to speak, become consecrated by practice in this sense. The word 'lifting' would be more correct. The Paris experiments, referred to above, show conclusively that the lifting of the table does not involve any modification of the laws of gravity, but that it is produced by some force having its *point d'appui* in the medium, whose weight as registered in a scale increases by the weight of the table at the moment of lifting. This is of course consistent with, though not necessarily demonstrative of, a fraudulent lifting by her hands or feet. The conclusion that the lifting is not produced by normal means can only be arrived at by observing that in fact no mechanical contact exists.

<sup>2</sup>The word 'control' is used in two senses, as meaning (1) the precautions prevailing at the moment as to the holding of the medium's hands and feet; (2) when printed in inverted commas, the entity, or whatever it may be, calling itself generally 'John King,' which purports to 'possess' her.

completely to their control. We did not attempt to make any physiological study of her condition in these varying stages, this having already been the subject of elaborate observation by many previous experimenters.

Of the two trance conditions it is that of half-trance which is the more complex, as it appears to exhibit the characteristics of a form of divided consciousness, namely, her own trance consciousness and that of the *soi-disant* 'control,' which cooperate, though by no means with complete agreement, in directing the proceedings. The former communicates through her own speech, the latter by means of an established code through tilts of the table. Thus, two tilts signify 'no'; three, 'yes'; four, 'talk'; five, 'less light'; seven, 'the séance is ended.' In the early stages of trance the directions for diminution of the light are usually given through tilts or levitations (sometimes apparently without contact) of the table. Eusapia herself frequently opposes these directions, but as a rule the table continues, by repeated series of five tilts, often of great violence, to demand a reduction of light to which she ultimately gives way. In the later stages of trance, when Eusapia is entirely under 'control,' the directions for less light are given by her verbally, as is always the case for an increase of light, for which there is apparently no accepted code of tilts.

#### THE CONTROL.

There appears to be no feature of Eusapia's séances upon which observers differ more than upon the question of the difficulty or otherwise of properly controlling the movements of her feet and hands. By comparing accounts it is evident that this must vary to a marked extent, not only as between individual séances, but as between series of experiments. We can, of course, only speak of our own experience. We can readily understand that if experimenters have had the misfortune of assisting only at what may be called her 'bad nights,' they would rise with a sense of profound dissatisfaction. Of such we had several examples, notably the third séance of our series. Eusapia was in a nervous, anxious mood, perpetually interrupting to ask if the control was satisfactory, and perpetually rendering it as difficult as possible

for us to make it so. The conditions were precisely those which seem to have chiefly prevailed at the Cambridge sittings. Her hands played about on the top of those of her controllers in a furtive and elusive manner, and the light during a considerable portion of the séance was extremely dim. It was, however, not so dim as to prevent C. from twice observing the substitution of hands which has occupied so large a space in the general discussion of Eusapia's mediumship. There was room to suppose that this trick was again resorted to in complete darkness in the fourth séance; and it was certainly performed once in the eleventh, when however the light was amply sufficient to foredoom it to failure, if her intention in performing it was fraudulent. (See note, Séance XI., 10.30-10.34 p.m.)

Whether fraudulent or not, the skill with which the substitution was performed was remarkable. The tactile sensation of continuity of contact was unbroken. On neither occasion in Séance III., when the substitution was performed, was F. aware of it, though it was immediately seen by C., on whose side the hand was released; while in Séance XI., though visible to F. from the other side of the table, the release was not *felt* either by him or by Mrs. H., who was controlling on the side on which it happened. It is therefore possible, if not probable, that substitution may have taken place on other occasions when the darkness was sufficient to prevent its being detected visually, that is, chiefly during Séances III., IV. and X.

We consider, however, that the conclusions to which we have come regarding the character of Eusapia's phenomena are in no way affected by this admission. These conclusions were formed as a result of séances in which, on account of the degree of light and of the adequacy of control, substitution of hands was not possible and,—unless our coincident sensations of both sight and touch were constantly hallucinatory,—certainly did not take place, and of such séances the bulk of our series of experiments was composed.

Our own experience, therefore, is that, whereas in certain conditions absolutely no reliance can be placed on the control of Eusapia and the phenomena obtained,—even when there is no direct evidence to show that they are fraudulent,—are wholly inconclusive and unsatisfactory: in other conditions the

control of her is not a matter of difficulty, nor can the phenomena observed therein be explained by any such method as substitution or release of hands or feet.

Of substitution of feet we discovered no instances. It is true that the method of controlling her feet preferred by Eusapia, namely the placing of her feet on those of her controllers, is in itself unsatisfactory. This method was, however, by no means invariable. Sometimes, though rarely, she allowed the controllers' feet to be placed on hers; sometimes she allowed both their feet wholly to encircle hers; sometimes she encircled the leg of one of the controllers tightly between her own or rested both her legs across his knees; and sometimes her feet were held beneath the table. Nearly always the controllers' knees pressed closely against the outside of her knees, so that her leg was felt and imprisoned from the knee to the foot, and very frequently (and whenever he wished) a controller's free hand was laid across her knees.

We notice in other reports references to Eusapia's insistence on the 'chain' being strictly maintained, that is, that all the sitters should join hands in a circle. During our séances, except during Séances IV., VIII., X. and XI., when our numbers were increased by the addition of persons whom we had invited, this was rarely done, and, except on a very few occasions, was not asked for. She never objected to our moving our free hands about as we wished, placing them on her knees, head or shoulders, or feeling about behind her, or passing them up and down the whole length of her arms and legs.

On certain occasions, as will be seen by reference to the *Remarks* on the various séances, she permitted us, and on others, invited us, to tie her hands to our own and to one another, and her feet to her chair or to ours. But as already stated, the occurrence of the phenomena appeared to depend entirely upon her own condition, to the 'psychic trim' in which she happened to be, and not at all upon the severity or laxity of the control or the degree of light permitted at the time, or upon the closeness of our attention.

Our observations on the above head are positive and are unaffected by those of other observers derived from less satisfactory conditions. It appears unquestionable that, given the

opportunity, Eusapia will seek to produce her manifestations normally, that is, by a substitution and momentary release of her hands, and that if unchecked, she will continue to do this for long periods together. It is also unquestionable that her skill in effecting this substitution is so great that in poor conditions of light it is practically impossible to rely upon mere tactile sensation to determine whether she has or has not resorted to it. Had our experiences been limited to our third, fourth and tenth séances we should undoubtedly, even though unable to demonstrate the fraudulent character of the phenomena or to explain the mode of their production, have remained wholly unconvinced that we were not the victims of some clever trick. We did not, however, willingly permit any imposture, and on the occasions when, in poor conditions of control, we detected a substitution, we notified her that we had done so. A general discussion of Eusapia's fraud and of the impossibility of considering it applicable to the phenomena on which we rely for our own conclusions will be found in C.'s and F.'s notes to Séance III. and F.'s supplementary note to the same séance; F.'s note to Séance V.; all the notes to Séance VI.; B.'s note to Séance VII.; F.'s note to Séance X.; and B.'s final note.

#### THE PHENOMENA.

These took place apparently according to a certain programme. At the earlier séances, phenomena of a simple kind only were produced. As the series progressed, new phenomena were added at almost every séance, some of the former manifestations being eliminated, so that the proceedings appeared to shift, as it were, along a kind of scale. The following brief analysis of the séances will show this gradual development, no regard, however, being paid to the quality of evidence regarding each class of phenomenon.

##### *Séance I.*

Movements and levitations of the séance table, with  
and without apparent contact.

Raps on the table.

Movements of the curtain.

*Séance II.*

Many levitations of, and raps on the séance table and movements of the curtain as before.  
Touches, apparently by invisible or unseen finger tips.  
Movements of objects inside the cabinet.  
Loud noises and raps inside the cabinet.  
Upsetting of table inside cabinet and transportation of it over medium's shoulder on to séance table.  
Plucking of guitar string inside cabinet.  
One appearance of a head from cabinet.

*Séance III.*

Very few levitations.  
Many movements of curtains.  
Touches, noises in cabinet, and movements of objects in cabinet.  
Movements and levitation of small table *outside* cabinet.  
Pulling of sleeve as if by fingers.

*Séance IV.*

At first very few levitations, more later.  
Other phenomena as in Séance III.  
Appearance of a white object (? a hand).  
Movement of a tambourine *outside* cabinet.

*Séance V.*

Only one complete levitation but many prolonged partial levitations.  
Movements of curtain as before, and of small table and objects inside and outside cabinet.  
Appearance of hand and head from cabinet.  
Production of a tangible hand felt through curtain.  
Production of cold breeze from medium's brow.

*Séance VI.*

No levitations.  
Bulging of medium's dress.  
Violent movements of the curtain.  
Several appearances of objects like heads, and of grey and white objects, from cabinet; also of a hand.  
Grasps by complete hand through curtain.

Loud bangs on séance table.

Gentle twanging of guitar.

Cold breeze as before.

*Séance VII.*

No levitations, and but few movements of table.

Prolonged bulging of dress.

Appearance of hand and arm from cabinet, and of other undefined objects.

Movements of objects outside cabinet, and loud bangs as before.

Appearance of hand bringing bell from cabinet.

Appearance of lights.

Grasp by a *visible* hand *outside* cabinet.

*Séance VIII.*

Some levitations and movements of table, and violent movements of curtain.

Series of transportation of objects from inside cabinet.

Many touches; and appearances of objects like heads and hands.

Untying of knots.

*Séance IX.*

Exuberant resumption of levitations of table.

Long continued movements of objects outside cabinet.

Touches, and grasps by complete hand through curtain.

[*Before Séance X.* Ringing of bell in séance room *before* arrival of medium. (See note 'Bell incident.')] ]

*Séance X.*

Almost blank; a few touches, grasps, levitations and bangs on table.

*Séance XI.*

General résumé of almost all preceding phenomena, levitations, bulging of dress, a light, movements of curtain, grasps of hand, appearances of head and other undefined objects, and movements of objects, outside cabinet.

Sensation of an arm inside cabinet.

Slow climbing of a stool up the curtain.

Touch *inside* cabinet.

Long continued touches through curtain.

Loud raps and serapings on internal door at considerable distance from medium.

Although it appears that the conditions under which our séances were held compared favourably as regards light and the general control permitted with many of those of former observers, the phenomena themselves were of the ordinary type. Not only did they present nothing exceptional, but many of the more remarkable phenomena described by Sir Oliver Lodge, by Prof. Morselli, and by M. Courtier in his report of the sittings held by the *Institut Général Psychologique* of Paris, and others, did not occur.

We proceed to a description of the various classes of phenomena, with references to the shorthand notes of each séance for examples which appear to us especially worthy of attention. Further descriptions of the more interesting cases will generally be found in the preliminary Remarks to the respective séances or in the notes at the end.

(1) *Movements and levitations of the séance table.*

A series of these movements generally occurred at the beginning and end of each séance, while occasional levitations occurred during its course. They were among the most frequent phenomena, and were produced in the strongest prevailing light, viz. a light in which we were able to read small print. As a rule the table began to rock in a manner explainable by the ordinary pressure of Eusapia's hands. It then tilted in a manner not so explainable, that is, in a direction away from the medium while her hands were resting lightly on the top, and finally it would leave the ground entirely and rise to a height of from six inches to two feet rapidly, remain there an appreciable time and then come down. Sometimes there would be slight contact of the medium's hands on the top, but very frequently no apparent contact whatever, her hands being held by us at a distance of a foot or two from the table, either in her lap or above the table. No precautions that we took hindered

these movements in the slightest. Eusapia had no hooks, either at her wrists or under the front of her bodice, and we could never discern the slightest movement of her knees or feet. We very often had our free hands on her knees, while her feet were controlled either by our feet or by one of us under the table, and were generally away from the table legs, an absolutely clear space being sometimes discernible between her and any part of the table. The total levitations in our series lasted as a maximum two or three seconds, though other observers have reported levitations lasting a much longer space of time.

Partial<sup>1</sup> levitations, on the other hand, when the table remained tilted at an angle on two legs, generally away from or sideways to the medium, were often of very much longer duration, half a minute or even a minute. Sometimes there would be slight contact, though of a kind insufficient to produce the effect normally, but often there was no ascertainable contact whatever, either with feet or hands. We would sometimes press the table down and it would rise again, as if suspended on elasties.

Sometimes there would be contact of her dress with the table leg, but we never were able to perceive that this form of contact had any mechanical importance. During certain sances, notably the first, second and ninth, the levitations followed one another with extreme rapidity so that our dictation of the circumstances of one to the shorthand writer was often interrupted by the occurrence of another and another. See *e.g.*

Séance I. 11.4, 11.43 and 11.44.

II. 10.54 to 11.11.

III. 10.52, 11.6 (table in stocks).

VIII. 10.18.

IX. 10.14 to 10.17, **10.23**<sup>2</sup> and **F.'s note**, 11.50<sup>2</sup>  
and B.'s Final note.

## (2) *Movements of curtains.*

The most frequent of the phenomena, as well as that most susceptible of satisfactory control, was movements of the cur-

<sup>1</sup> See footnote, p. 347.

<sup>2</sup> Phenomena to which special attention is directed are given in italics or block type.

tains hanging behind the medium. For these she generally, though not always, demanded a reduction of the light, but it still remained sufficient to enable every movement of the medium to be clearly seen, even from the further end of the table. She would generally hold out one of her hands towards the curtain, always held by or holding one of ours at a distance of about 8 or 12 inches from it, and the curtain would balloon out towards it in a bulge. Sometimes the same effect would be produced if one of us held our own hands towards the curtain at her request. The bulge was a round one, as if the curtains were pushed out from behind. If we made a sudden grab at the bulge, no resistance was encountered, and the bulge subsided as though one had pricked the surface of a balloon. There was no attachment to her hand, as we constantly verified by passing our hands between her and the curtain. Nor would any attachment produce the same effect, as the curtain was so thin that the point of attachment of any string would at once have been seen. Besides these bulges in response to her or our gestures, there were spontaneous movements of the curtain, often very violent, and frequently the whole curtain would be flung out with so much force that the bottom of it came right over to the further end of the table. This occurred notwithstanding that Eusapia herself was perfectly visible and motionless, both hands held and separately visible upon the table, her feet away from the curtain, in front of her, and under the table. See *e.g.*

Séance I. 12.5, 12.11.

II. 11.17, 11.30.

III. 10.6.

V. 10.37 etc., 10.57.

VI. 12.55, 2.0, *C's note and B's Final note referring to it.*

VII. *Passim.*

VIII. 11.0 etc., 11.15, 11.53 etc.

X. 11.6 etc.

XI. 10.11 to 10.18 and **F's note.**

(3) *Bulgings of the medium's dress.*

This is usually a frequent phenomenon at Eusapia's séances, though in our own series we did not have many examples.

A description of it will be found in B.'s note to Séance VII., which was the only séance at which we had an opportunity of careful observation of it, though it occurred casually at several other séances.

See Séance VII. 9.47 etc.

(4) *Raps.*

Of this, the simplest of all Eusapia's phenomena, there were many examples, but we did not succeed in getting it under what could be considered good evidential conditions until the eighth and last séances. Either the raps were produced while the medium's hands were resting on the table, or the exact position of her feet at the moment of their production was not determined, or the place where they sounded was uncertain. At the end of Séance XI., when the light had been turned up and the séance was thought to be ended, there occurred, in response to gestures by the medium, a series of raps on an internal door at a distance of 6 inches to 3 feet from her, which appeared to fulfil all the necessary conditions. See

Séance VIII. 11.19.

XI. 1.15, and B.'s Final note.

(5) *Bangs on the séance table.*

These bangs may be considered separately from the raps, the quality and quantity of the sound being absolutely different. Whereas the raps (except those which occurred in Séances VIII. and XI.) were seldom louder than if made by a gentle rap with a knuckle on the table, and were unaccompanied by any apparent movement on the part of the medium, the bangs sounded like a heavy crash with a wooden mallet, and were always accompanied by a sudden movement either of the medium's head or leg, though without any apparent contact with the table. See *e.g.*

Séance VI. 12.25.

VII. 11.1.

X. 11.11.

(6) *Noises inside the cabinet.*

These were of constant occurrence, and took various forms: sometimes a violent shaking of the small table inside the

cabinet causing all the objects upon it to clatter over; sometimes bangs upon some unascertained place within the cabinet; sometimes noisy rhythmical movements of one or other of the objects within, acting synchronously with a series of rhythmical gestures or pinches of the hand of one of the controllers outside. See *c.g.*

Séance II. 11.34 to 11.37.

III. 11.45, 11.50.

IV. 12.18 etc.

V. 10.52, 11.0 to 11.4.

VI. 11.50.

VIII. 11.43, 11.52, 12.17 etc.

(7) *Plucking of the guitar.*

Although this should be included under the previous heading it deserves special mention on account of its remarkable character. It may be numbered among the phenomena which impressed us most. See

Séance II. about 12.3, and C.'s and F.'s notes.

VI. C.'s note.

(8) *Transportations of the small table from the cabinet on to the séance table, and movements and levitations of it outside the curtain.*

After the levitations of the séance table and the movements of the curtain it often happened that the next manifestation of 'force' consisted of violent shakings of the small table inside the cabinet on which were placed various small objects as before stated. It was sometimes shaken with such vigour that the objects all fell off. On three or four occasions it then appeared over the medium's shoulder, as though lifted by some one within the cabinet, and landed upon the séance table horizontally, that is, with its top resting on our table and its legs pointing into the cabinet. It would then sometimes appear to hang in that position, for half a minute or a minute (possibly, though not apparently, supported by Eusapia's arm, or ours as we held her hand on the séance table), and try to climb on to the séance table. This it never succeeded

fully in doing and it eventually would fall back as if tired.  
See *c.g.*

Séance II. 11.42.

IV. 11.9, 11.13, 11.16 (conditions poor).

V. 11.26, 11.51.

After the small table had in the above manner got outside the curtain, it would frequently move about, sometimes approaching the medium, and sometimes receding from her, or be levitated when standing at a certain distance from her and without any apparent contact. See *c.g.*

Séance II. 11.55 and 12.1.

III. 11.50 etc., but see C.'s note at end of shorthand report.

V. 11.8, 11.22 to 11.36.

(9) *Transportations of other objects from the cabinet.*

After the fifth séance, in order to prevent the objects placed on the small table from being disturbed, we either did not put the table inside the cabinet at all or tied it firmly down to staples. In the latter case, it was twice violently shaken, lifted and let go with a bang, by some force which, considering the tightness of the fastening, must have been very considerable. The attention which apparently had hitherto been directed chiefly to the table was now diverted to the objects on it, and these were in turn transported by some unascertainable agency on to the séance table. See *c.g.*

Séance VII. 11.20.

VIII. 11.55, 11.59, 12.22 (see C.'s and F.'s notes),  
12.46, 12.50.

IX. 12.47.

XI. 12.15.

See also (15) below.

(10) *Touches as by invisible or unseen finger tips outside the curtain.*

These touches took place on our arms, shoulders, heads, etc. Although the light might be sufficient to see the medium's head and hands clearly, and we might be looking in the direction from which the touch came, whatever it was that produced the touches remained unseen. See *c.g.*

- Séance II. 11.44, 11.49, 12.0.  
 III. 11.41, 11.45.  
 VI. 11.41, 11.44.  
 VII. 11.17.  
 VIII. 11.38, 12.9.  
 IX. 10.47 to 10.57, 1.3, 1.5.  
 X. 12.11 to 12.20 (see B.'s note).  
 XI. 11.0, 11.21, 11.28.

(11) *Touches and grasps by a hand through the curtain.*

This was the next development of this class of phenomenon. The object which touched us was now apparently a material hand with living fingers, even the nails of which were on some occasions clearly felt. These touches occurred at times when we were absolutely certain that Eusapia's hands were held on the table in front of her. See *e.g.*

Séance V. 11.38 and C.'s note.

VI. 11.58, 12.11 to 12.17, 12.26, and C.'s and B.'s notes.

VIII. 12.50, 12.56.

IX. 12.38, 12.47 to 1.0.

XI. 11.2 to 11.9, 11.30.

On one occasion only was there a touch by a hand inside the curtain. See Séance XI. 12.56 and B.'s Final note.

(12) *Appearance of hands outside the curtain.*

The next development was that these hands became visible outside the curtain. They generally, though not always, appeared between the parting of the curtains over Eusapia's head. They were of different appearances, dead paper white, or of a natural colour. Sometimes they shot out rapidly and were imperfectly seen, sometimes they came with a slow deliberate motion, and sometimes carried objects with them. On one occasion a grasp was felt by a hand seen at the same time. See *e.g.*

Séance V. 11.10.

VI. 12.23.

VII. 11.20 and F.'s note, 12.9 (F.'s control not given), and B.'s note.

VIII. 1.5 and F.'s note.

(13) *Appearance of heads and objects more or less like heads.*

These 'heads' were of several different kinds. At one time they would appear like shadowy objects which shot out with extreme rapidity and silence from the side of the curtain, looking, from the position from which they were seen, like two-dimensional faces in profile, made of cobweb. At another, the appearance was as though the curtain had itself been formed into the likeness of a head with very pronounced features by being drawn tightly over a large hand with its fingers crooked to imitate a face. On other occasions they appeared like a square head at the end of a long stalk-like body, which shot out over the medium's head, turned sharply, approaching within a few inches of the sitter's face, and then shot back. Sometimes they looked like the medium's own arm, pivoted on her shoulder, and wrapped up in something black, producing the effect of folds (or, as we described them hurriedly at the time, 'warts'). The movement of these latter 'heads' was slow, and on the occasions when they appeared, they emerged from the side of the curtain, came right across the table (bringing the curtain also, as would be the case if they had really been the medium's arm), bowed two or three times with deliberation, and then retired. Their appearance was obviously suspicious, but the control existing at the time seemed adequate to exclude the possibility of her having freed her arm for their production. See *e.g.*

Séance II. About 11.52 (no control).

V. 11.18.

VI. 11.38, 12.30, 12.40.

VII. 12.5½ and F.'s note, 12.9 and B.'s note.

XI. 11.33, 11.34.

(14) *Appearance of other indefinable objects.*

In addition to these so-called heads there were other objects, black, white or grey, which appeared from the cabinet above the medium's head or at the side of the curtains. They were of different shapes, sometimes square, sometimes round, in the latter case looking like a white handkerchief rolled up, or a handful of white muslin. Here again the actual appearance was obviously suspicious. See *e.g.*

Séance VI. 11.41, 11.58, 12.6, 12.17, 12.20, 12.23.

VII. 10.57 (? hand and arm), 10.58, 11.7, 11.30, 11.32; 11.36 (control not given) and many other cases where, however, the control was not reported.

(15) *Transportation of objects from inside the curtain by a visible hand.*

There were only two instances of this, and they have already been included under (12).

Séance VII. 11.20 and F's note.

VIII. 1.5.

(16) *Movements of objects outside the curtain.*

Besides the levitation of the small table which took place after it had emerged from the cabinet, there were movements of other objects, chiefly of a small stool which stood about 3 feet to the left of the medium, having either stood there from the beginning of the séance, or placed there in the middle of it for the express purpose of seeing whether she could move it. It either jumped about where it stood, or approached the medium or receded from her in response to gestures made with her hand at a distance from it of several feet. In Séance XI. it was also seen to climb very slowly up the curtain from the floor to the level of her head, at a distance of about 3 feet from her body. There were also movements of a tambourine on the floor at a distance of 2 or 3 feet from the medium. Examination for an attachment of some kind was made in the intervals between movements of this kind, but none was found. See *e.g.*

Séance IV. 12.23 (control imperfectly noted).

IX. 10.30, 10.33, 10.37, 10.40, 11.45, 11.58, 1.5.

XI. 10.19, 10.23, 12.26.

(17) *Lights.*

Of these we had but few examples, but these few must be ranked among the more interesting phenomena. They were of three kinds, a steady blue-green light such as one might imagine to proceed from a self-luminous aquamarine, a yellow

light, and a small sparkling light like the spark between the poles of a battery and emitting a similar sound. See

Séance VII. 11.36, 11.37, 11.45, 11.46 and F.'s note.

XI. 10.55, 11.1.

(18) *Sensation of cold breeze issuing from a scar on medium's brow.*

Perhaps of all the phenomena, this, by reason of its very simplicity, appears one of the most preposterous. It has constantly been observed by other experimenters. See

Séance V. After 12.12.

VI. After termination of séance, see C.'s note.

(19) *Untying of knots.*

Apparently sudden and mysterious untyings of knots have also been reported by other experimenters. We had only one instance of this. Unlike most of the other phenomena, it occurred casually and unexpectedly, after the manner of a conjuring trick. We record its occurrence without further comment.

See Séance VIII. 1.5 and F.'s note.

#### CONCLUSIONS.

The evidence for the foregoing phenomena varies considerably both in quantity and quality, and we are of opinion that any attempt at an analysis dividing them into classes for which the evidence may be regarded as sufficient or insufficient would be of purely academic interest and of no real value.

It was only through constant repetition of the same phenomenon, in a good light and at moments when its occurrence was expected, and after finding that none of the precautions which we took had any influence in impeding it, that we gradually reached the conviction that some force was in play which was beyond the reach of ordinary control, and beyond the skill of the most skilful conjuror. But though we have come to that general conclusion, we find it exceedingly difficult to say to which particular phenomena, or even to which particular kind of phenomena, we have sufficiently strict evidence to apply it.

So while each of us could indicate, and in our various notes has indicated, cases of special evidential value to himself, we

hesitate to select either any particular individual phenomenon as providing absolute proof of some supernormal agency, or any individual class of phenomena as exhibiting more certainly its action.

We think there is no conceivable form of evidence which, if relating to one phenomenon only, would have convinced us, even as eye-witnesses, of its supernormal character. The mind confronted with an obviously absurd isolated fact merely rebels, as with us was (and remains) the case in, for example, the isolated instance of untying of knots reported in Séance VIII. Every possible and impossible form of doubt suggests itself under such circumstances. And to persons who were not eye-witnesses, the evidence regarding any special phenomenon will inevitably appear still less conclusive.

Thus our conclusions are based on the resultant impressions derived from the whole series, since we are unable to say to what special phenomena these conclusions extend, and we limit ourselves here to a statement of opinion, amounting in our own minds to certainty, that to explain Eusapia's manifestations some agency of a kind wholly different from mere physical dexterity on her part must be invoked.

The conditions in which the séances were held render absolutely inadmissible the supposition that there was any accomplice. There remains therefore, in our opinion, only one possible alternative to the hypothesis of some supernormal *physical* force, namely, the hypothesis that in some way we were collectively hallucinated.

The hallucination theory has been repeatedly suggested and has lately been urged with much ingenuity by Miss Johnson<sup>1</sup> as the probable interpretation of this class of phenomena, and especially of the phenomena occurring in the case of D. D. Home, which it would seem impossible to explain normally on any other hypothesis.

It appears to us that this hypothesis must involve the possession by Eusapia of some supernormal *psychical* force, acting upon our perceptions—without systematic suggestion, without preparation, irregular in its procedure, but invariably producing the same results—in such a way as constantly to

<sup>1</sup> See her paper on "The Education of the Sitter," in *Proceedings S.P.R.* Vol. XXI., pp. 483-511.

inhibit our power of deriving any accurate information through our ordinary channels of sense, visual or tactile.

The theory of hallucination in this case must apply to one or both of the following incidents: namely, the fact of the phenomenon itself, or the character of the control existing at the moment of its production; that is, either we imagined that the phenomenon took place when in fact it did not, *i.e.* the phenomenon was subjective, not objective; or we imagined that we both saw and felt Eusapia's hands in a particular place when in fact they were elsewhere; in other words, we were constantly 'glamoured.'

We think ourselves justified in discarding the first of these alternatives at once, without further discussion. The mere fact that, when such a phenomenon as the transportation of an object occurred, it was afterwards found in the place to which it had appeared to be moved is alone sufficient to show its inapplicability. Further, the flash-light photographs of M. de Fontenay and others, and the records of the self-registering instruments used by the *Institut Général Psychologique* or by Prof. Bottazzi, supply absolute proof of the objectivity of the phenomena,<sup>1</sup> although, of course, affording no evidence of their supernatural character.

There remains, then, the theory that we were hallucinated as to our control.

It is clearly insufficient to suppose that we were merely *deceived*, an explanation which, in unfavourable conditions of hand-holding and of light, would be more than plausible. The deception, in the conditions which prevailed at the bulk of our séances, must amount to a complete hallucination.

<sup>1</sup>One hears much of hallucination as a possible explanation of physical phenomena; but I can say that, after attending many séances, I have never seen a single trace of hallucination in any single instance. In some cases, I have seen *illusions* propagated, but never a full-blown hallucination. In many cases, hallucination has been urged as a possible explanation for facts which I knew and saw to be perfectly fraudulent. Fraud is always a far simpler and more rational hypothesis than hallucination; and I may say in this connection that I have never met a conjuror who believes in hallucination as an explanation of any conjuring or mediumistic trick, though his whole performance depends upon a series of illusions. I think that, on account of my long experience as an amateur conjuror and investigator of fraudulent mediumistic devices, my testimony should have some weight in this connection.—H. C.

This is undoubtedly the theory which will be held by the most serious of our critics, and it is the only one we think it worth while attempting to meet. To do so adequately is by its very nature impossible, just as it would be impossible for a person, by mere assertion, to meet a charge that he was not telling the truth. We can but attempt to show its improbability.

It would involve the assumption not only that each of us was subject to fully externalised hallucinations both of touch and of vision, but that we were *concurrently and concordantly* hallucinated. When, for example, at 1.0 a.m. in Séance XI., B. reports that he is holding both the medium's thumbs in different hands, and F. from the further end of the opposite side of the table shortly afterwards spontaneously reports a change of B.'s control and says that he now sees B. holding both her thumbs in his right hand, it would have to be supposed, first, that B. was hallucinated when he reported that he held both her thumbs in separate hands, and secondly, that F. was hallucinated when he reported the change of the thumbs to B.'s right hand, and that both remained collectively hallucinated during the continued touches on B.'s left hand by a hand within the curtain.

The hypothesis would imply, further, not only that we ourselves were subject to such hallucinations, but that the majority of all the other experimenters with Eusapia were similarly subject to them. Also, that such hallucinations could be induced without words on Eusapia's part, on persons who, while they had frequently assisted at performances at which professedly supernatural occurrences were to take place, had never yet been hallucinated into a belief in them.

We should again have to suppose that this state of 'be-glamourment' could co-exist with a degree of attention which was constantly being stimulated by the necessity of having to report momentary observations to the shorthand writer; that it was strong enough to prevail against an attitude, at all events in the earlier séances, of hostility, and in all of them, of suspicion; that while it was sufficiently effective to prevent us from observing the *modus operandi* of tricks performed in a reasonable light, requiring the greatest boldness of execution, and often continuing for a considerable space of time, it was not effective enough to preclude us from perfectly well noticing the machinery of substitution when no tricks

were performed whatever (Séances III. 10.28; XI. 10.30), or from contemporaneously speculating upon its performance in conditions of darkness, when illusions of sensation might, as we were well aware, easily take place. (Séances IV. 12.9; X. 12.11).

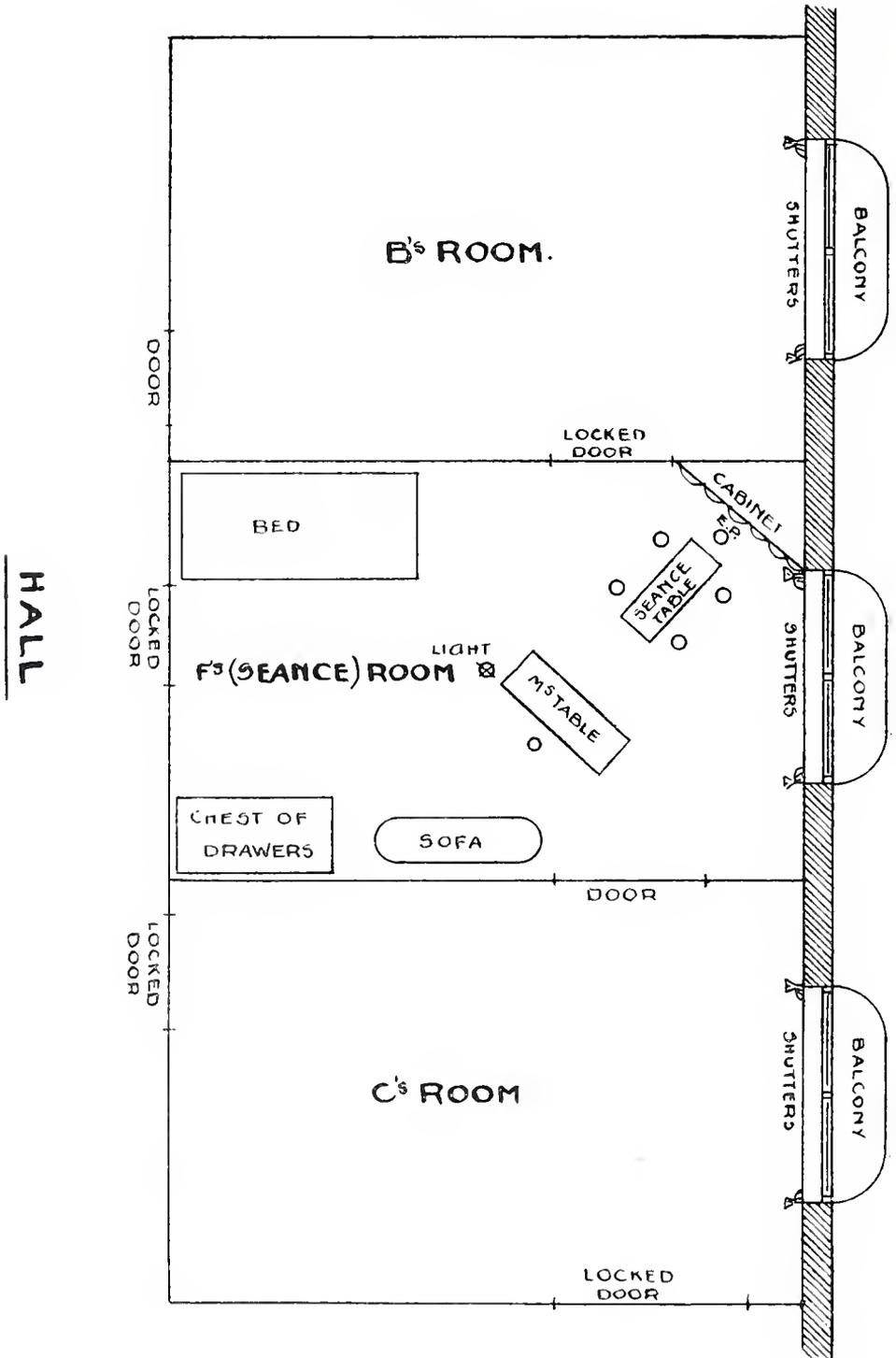
Finally, we must suppose that this abnormal condition of consciousness had supervened without any of the victims to it either being aware of any change in himself, or noticing it in the others. While familiar through experiment with the possibilities of hypnotic and other suggestion, whereby hallucinations even in the waking state may occasionally be produced, we believe that long continued and collective hallucinations of this kind, without either previous hypnosis or verbal suggestion, but purely spontaneous, are wholly outside those possibilities.

The question therefore seems reduced to a choice between two improbabilities. Either we were constantly thrown into a state of hallucination by means of a mysterious suggestive influence exercised by Eusapia, for the existence of which, either in her or in anybody else, there is otherwise, in our view, no evidence whatever; or, on the other hand, the ordinarily recognised laws of dynamics have to be enlarged by the assumption that there does actually exist some hitherto unascertained force liberated in her presence and for the existence of which, both in her and certain other persons, the body of evidence is, we think, not inconsiderable.

With great intellectual reluctance, though without much personal doubt as to its justice, we adopt the latter alternative. Making, then, a reservation for the possibility of some form of hallucinatory influence of such a kind as fundamentally to invalidate the trustworthiness of all evidence and for the existence of which we believe there is neither warrant nor parallel, we are of opinion that we have witnessed in the presence of Eusapia Palladino the action of some telekinetic force, the nature and origin of which we cannot attempt to specify, through which, without the introduction of either accomplices, apparatus, or mere manual dexterity, she is able to produce movements of, and percussive and other sounds in, objects at a distance from her and unconnected with her in any apparent physical manner, and also to produce matter, or the appearance of matter, without any determinable source of supply.



FIG. III.



## III.

## DETAILED REPORT.

## MEASUREMENTS.

- Room.*<sup>1</sup> Width, 11 ft. (3·35 m.).  
 „ Length, 16 ft. 5 ins. (5 m.).  
 „ Height, 12 ft. 4 ins. (3·75 m.).
- Cabinet.* 8 ft. 2½ ins. (2·5 m.) high.  
 „ 3 ft. (90 cm.) deep, side to medium's left.  
 „ 3 ft. 3½ ins. (1 m.) deep, side to medium's right.  
 „ 2 ft. 7 ins. (80 cm.) from centre of curtains to corner.
- E. P.'s Chair.* Seat, 1 ft. 6½ ins. (46 cm.) high.  
 Width, inside legs, 1 ft. 1½ ins. (34 cm.).  
 „ outside legs, 1 ft. 4 ins. (40 cm.).  
 Depth of seat, 1 ft. 3 ins. (38 cm.).  
 Height of back from floor, 2 ft. 10½ ins. (86 cm.).
- Séance Table.*  
 Height, 2 ft. 8 ins. (80 cm.).  
 Width, 1 ft. 7¼ ins. (48 cm.).  
 Between legs, small end, 1 ft. 4½ ins. (41 cm.).  
 Outside „ „ 1 ft. 7 ins. (48 cm.).  
 Length, 2 ft. 10¾ ins. (87 cm.).  
 Rim (flange), 3½ ins. (9 cm.).  
 Thickness of wood, ⅝ in. (1 cm.).  
 Depth of small rim, side, ⅓ in. (·5 cm.).  
 „ „ ends, ⅓ in. (·8 cm.).  
 Weight, 10 lbs. 8 oz. (4·75 kilog.).

---

Weight of small round table, 7 lbs. 8 oz. (3·4 kilog.)

Weight of clay with board, 3 lbs. 12 oz. (1·7 kilog.)

Weight of clay without board, 3 lbs. 3 oz. (1·45 kilog.)

<sup>1</sup>The door close to the cabinet (see plan of room, Fig. III.) was permanently locked and secured with tape. There was no connection between any of the windows, which were locked and shuttered. The séance room was on the fifth floor of the hotel. It will be observed that the séance room was sheltered on either side by B.'s and C.'s rooms, which prevented any access from the hotel. The floor was of tiles covered by heavy carpet.

NOTE.—In the case of each sitting, the Report gives (1) Remarks on the sitting, being a summary of what took place; (2) the *verbatim* contemporary shorthand report; (3) subsequent notes by the individual sitters, Feilding, Carrington, or Baggally. These notes were for the most part written within a day or two of the séance and are dated. They were written independently and supply a progressive record of the state of mind of the individual sitters and of the effect produced on them by the séances, as well as a more detailed description of specific occurrences.

In the shorthand reports, the descriptions of phenomena are printed in large type, and the descriptions of the control prevailing during each particular phenomenon in small type, while alterations in the general conditions, or casual occurrences, or remarks not specifically concerning the preceding phenomenon, are indicated by italics. In no case has the exact shorthand report been added to or altered, otherwise than grammatically, except as follows: when, on transcribing the shorthand notes, it was found that the interpretation of a passage describing either a phenomenon or the accompanying control was not clear, the passage has been omitted, with the result that the case is then *understated*, and the phenomenon in question is described under the general heading of “non-evidential.” The transcribing of the shorthand report was usually done the following day, and in the presence of the sitters. Any additions made by them either then or at a later date are enclosed in square brackets, initialled and dated. The description of each phenomenon is given in the exact words dictated by one of the sitters, usually, though not invariably, by the one to the medium’s left. Any dissent from, or amplification of, the description by any other sitter is also given. The condition of the light is given in black type in the margin.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE I.

*November 21st, 1908.*

The phenomena at this séance were of three kinds only, movements of the table, raps on the table, and bulging movements of the curtain, behind the medium, as though blown

out from within at a spot about on a level with her head. These movements or raps went on almost without intermission throughout, rendering proper description of them, as well as of the control, almost impossible. Various degrees of light prevailed, but these differences did not appear to have much effect upon the movements, which were about as frequent and strong in the good light as in the feeble. The séance began at 10.35 p.m. Five minutes afterwards the table began to tilt, sometimes in a way that could be explained by the ordinary pressure of the medium's hands, but often in a manner not thus explainable, either because her hands were off the table altogether, or because they were only touching it on the top in such a way as to be unable, normally, to produce the movement. A very large number of partial and complete levitations<sup>1</sup> took place under these conditions. As the light was ample during many of these, it was easy to see that no hook or other form of attachment was used, nor, notwithstanding close watch, could we ever detect the slightest trace of her using either her knees or her feet. At the beginning of the séance, the stenographer was in the adjoining room and, what with our difficulty in keeping pace with the phenomena, and his difficulty in hearing what we said, the shorthand notes of this portion proved so inadequate that they are not given in detail, only a few extracts being made. Even after the stenographer entered the séance room and took his place at another table, our inexperience as to the best and shortest way of describing our control, and his in recording it, resulted in the notes being very incomplete. From this point, however, they are given more or less in detail for what they are worth. Owing to all the details of control not having been stated, a reader who can judge of the conditions only

<sup>1</sup>Throughout the reports, the terms "complete" and "partial levitation" constantly recur. By "complete levitation," we mean the lifting of the table off all four legs simultaneously. A levitation of this kind was seldom less than 6 in. off the ground, and frequently a foot or more. By "partial levitation" we mean the raising of the table on to two, and sometimes on to only one, leg. In complete levitations the table generally went up horizontally, sometimes momentarily, but occasionally for several seconds. A partial levitation would often turn into a complete levitation—the table, after having been poised on one or two legs for a certain time at an angle, ultimately leaving the ground altogether and going up into the air, usually at the same angle.

from the actual records will naturally not be so impressed with the difficulty of supposing that these levitations were produced by hands or feet or some mechanical device as we were, both at the time and since. Special attention may be directed to the levitations occurring at 11.26, 11.43, and 11.44, which occurred in good light, sufficient to enable us to read from where we were seated. The levitation occurring under the time 11.58, though in poor light, is of interest.

Throughout the séance, Eusapia's hands were held by us, and her feet were controlled, sometimes by our feet on the top of hers, or hers on ours. It is evident that foot control of this kind is unsatisfactory in the case of long-continued observation of sparse phenomena. During this sitting, however, the levitations often followed one another with such rapidity that dictation of them was almost impossible, and notwithstanding that every kind of foot control was tried, such as encircling her feet separately between our feet and encircling the legs of the table with our legs, nothing seemed to impede them.

Of raps there were many examples. The medium generally held one of our hands in hers and made a gesture with it towards the table, and a rap, apparently on the top of the table, followed shortly after. The quality of these raps varied, but as one of her hands was generally on the table, and her feet were not in view, they could not be regarded as evidential.

The bulgings of the curtain behind the medium, though occurring at this séance in fairly poor light coming through the slightly open door from the next room, were very remarkable. The medium sat well in front of the curtain: her feet and hands were absolutely controlled. She would approach one of her hands, held by one of ours, to within about a foot of it, and the curtain would bulge out, sometimes gently, but sometimes with considerable force. The bulge was a round one, as though blown from within, and not in the least appearing as if any string or attachment were made to the outside. The coming out of the curtain happened generally as she approached her hand towards it, not as she withdrew it, as would be the case if there was an invisible attachment. During and between some of these movements C. passed his arm between Eusapia and the curtain, and along the floor,

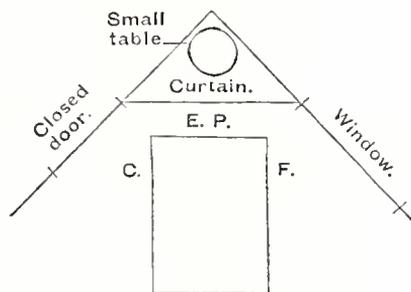
and found no attachment, and indeed, as the curtain was extremely thin, its movement, if any attachment had existed, would have been obviously due to such, and of a wholly different character from what actually occurred.

SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE I.

*November 21st, 1908.*

*Present—F., C., and M., shorthand writer.*

[Dictated] C. on right of medium and F. on left.<sup>1</sup> M., the stenographer, in the next room with the door open, clearly seeing the table. Incandescent electric 16-candle power lamp hanging two metres from medium's position at table, covered by three thicknesses of thin brown tissue paper. The light is sufficient when sitting at the side of the séance table to read small print in a Baedeker and in Graglia's *Pocket Italian Dictionary*, holding them at the ordinary distance from the face. Everything in the room is clearly visible; pattern of carpet and furniture covers, texture of skin of hands, etc.



**Light I.** = Electric light as described above.

**Light II.** = Square photographic lamp, with red linen sides, standing on stenographer's table. Also light coming from the next room, which was lit by an ordinary electric light, the door being ajar about 6 inches.

[No detailed contemporary note was made of the visibility of objects in this light except as appears casually in the shorthand notes.]

<sup>1</sup>Throughout the reports F. = Feilding, C. = Carrington, B. = Baggally, and M. = Meeson, the stenographer. Where special sitters were invited to attend individual séances, this is stated in the introductory note and the initials of their names are given in the shorthand Report.

**Light I.**

[The séance began at 10.35 p.m. Five minutes afterwards, the table began to tilt, sometimes in a way that could be explained by the ordinary pressure of the medium's hand, but often in a manner apparently not thus explainable. These tilts took place frequently away from the medium, while her hands were off the table and perfectly visible. They followed one another very rapidly, but, owing to our inexperience, we found it extremely difficult, in our first séance, to describe them and the accompanying control of the hands and feet properly. This difficulty was increased by the distance of the stenographer from ourselves. The result was that the shorthand notes proved so inadequate that they are not given in detail during the first part of the séance. Nov. 22/08.]

11.4 p.m. The table tilts towards C., then a complete levitation followed, both medium's hands being on the table, and both clearly visible.

C. Both feet being on our feet, my left hand being across both her knees.

F. I looked under the table and clearly saw that her knees and the table legs were not touching.

11.6 p.m. *F. I have taken off my right shoe.*

11.7 p.m. The table tilts and stands up on one leg away from medium. The medium stands up away from table, and the table stood up on its two legs away from her. The medium removed both her hands from the table.

C. Both of mine were also off the table.

F. My left hand only just touching table.

C. The table then appeared to give a little jump and raised itself about an inch from the ground, and then fell back.

F. I did not notice that it was actually off the ground at any time.

C. To me it appeared quite plain.

11.9 p.m. Three raps are heard.

F. The medium's hands were not touching the table. The raps appeared to sound on the top of the table.

C. I don't know where her heel was.

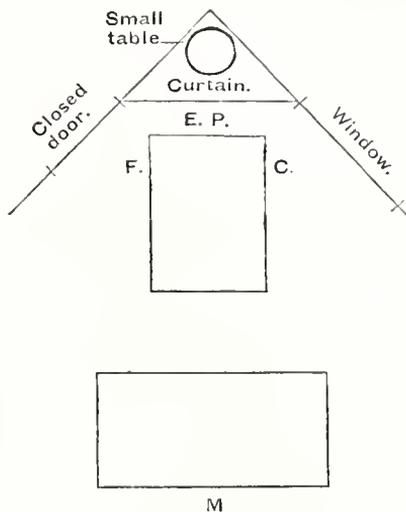
**[Light I.]**

11.10 p.m. The table stood up on the two legs nearest to medium.

C. It appeared to me as though she pressed heavily on it.

11.11 p.m. Further non-evidential tilts.<sup>1</sup>

11.15 p.m. *M.* enters séance room and sits at another table facing medium, at a distance of about 8 or 9 feet from her. *F.* and *C.* change places. Electric light in room put out, light in adjoining room still burning, the door ajar about six inches.

**Light II.**

*Nothing happens from this time till 11.22 p.m., when medium says that she feels tired and asks for the light to be turned up again, which is accordingly done.*

**Light I.**

11.23 p.m. Further non-evidential tilts.

<sup>1</sup>Under the heading "non-evidential" are comprised tilts which could be produced by the normal pressure of the medium's hands, *e.g.* towards or to either side of her, as well as such other tilts as are referred to in the head-note preceding the *Remarks* to this séance, of which, while at the time they appeared to be evidential, the description as given in the shorthand report seemed, on transcription, uncertain.

## [Light I.]

11.26 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

F. Nobody had a hand on the table. My left hand was on medium's right hand, and was completely raised in the air. Her right foot was on mine, and was away from the table.

C. I could see both her hands right off the table. My hand was on both her knees.

F. The table tilts on legs furthest from medium and makes rocking movements, there being no contact either with her, or C. or myself.

*11.34 p.m. F. Medium asks us to put our hands on her legs. My left foot without shoe is on her right. I can tell which foot it is and that her leg is not touching the table.*

*C. Her left foot is on my right.*

*F. I can see right down the right leg of the table.*

11.38 p.m. Medium makes gestures and raps follow.

11.39 p.m. More non-evidential tilts.

11.43 p.m. The table rocks violently.

F. I am certain that her right leg was not touching the table.

C. My right hand being across both her knees.

Complete levitation of the table.

F. I am certain that her right leg is not touching the table; my right leg was curled round the table leg. I can see right down the right leg of the table. The medium removed her hands and mine from the table, which rose right up into the air about two seconds after the hands had left. My right hand had been pulled up by her about two feet above the table before it started. [My left hand was on her right knee. F., Nov. 22/08.]

C. Her left foot was on my right foot. My right hand was held by the medium beneath the table in her lap about one foot from the table.

M. notes: "I could see table in the air with nobody touching it."

C. Medium's left foot was continuously on my right.

**[Light I.]**

11.44 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

F. My hand was on the table. Medium's right hand on top of mine and not touching the table.

C. Medium's left foot did not leave my right. My right hand was across both her knees. I am sure that at that time medium's leg did not come into contact with the leg of the table.

F. There was no possibility of her touching the leg of the table. The table was lifted completely into the air off all four feet.

C. The medium's left hand grasped my right hand firmly and was over mine, mine being between hers and the table.

F. My left foot was pressing strongly on hers.

*11.46 p.m. Medium asks for less light. Light turned out, and photographic lamp re-lit on M.'s table. [A candle lamp with red linen sides. Some light also came in from the next room of which the door was slightly ajar. F., Jan. 25/09.]*

**Light II.**

*11.49 p.m. Medium asks for thorough control, as she is going to try and make raps in the middle of the table. She says "If you feel movements of my knee, don't mind, as it helps."*

*11.51 p.m. But nothing happens.*

Further tilts.

11.56 p.m. F. Medium holds my right hand towards the left curtain with hers and makes two slow movements which are reciprocated by movements of the curtain.

F. My right leg was curled round the table leg, between it and her right leg which touches the outside of my leg, my foot against her heel.

*C. Medium takes my right hand and lifts it right off the table.*

F. Medium grasps my left hand in hers, and lifts it towards the curtain about two feet above the table, and the curtain bulges out about two feet.

11.57 p.m. C. My right hand is across both knees of medium and I can see it clearly.

## [Light II.]

11.58 p.m. *F. She squeezes my left hand hard.*

F. Table tilts to the right. Complete levitation of the table. The table goes right up into the air. I was able to stoop and put my left [? right] hand under the right table leg which I saw the whole length of. Complete levitation off all four legs, the medium's hands being right away from table.

C. My right hand was across both her knees. Her leg was away from the table, which, however, was touched by her skirt, but not in such a way as to be able to effect the results. While the table was up she grasped my right hand with her left and put it on the table, and I pressed and she pressed on the top of mine very hard, downwards. [The table resisted our pressure for several seconds, before falling back. C., Dec. 8/08.]

12.1 a.m. Table has resumed its position, and starts tipping to medium's right. She says "Pay attention."

*C. This leg of the table is at least six inches from her skirt.*

12.2 a.m. Two or three gestures with left hand produce raps.

C. I can feel the vibration of the table after the gestures under my left hand, which is on the table.

F. My hand is on the table and medium's hand on it. The raps do not appear to come from the medium's hand but are like a distant thump as if an echo.

12.3 a.m. More tilts of the table.

12.5 a.m. C. Medium, holding my right hand and raising it in the air, makes movements towards the curtain which, after three movements, bulges out and brushes against me.

F. My left knee is pressing against hers. She is holding my right hand in hers. Her knees and hands are perfectly visible. I can see the curtain come out.

C. Table also moves.

Medium calls our attention to her skirt bulging out on her left side.

[I touched this bulging part, but felt no solid substance underneath her skirt, which immediately receded and did not again bulge out. C., Nov. 22/08.]

## [Light II.]

12.8 a.m. *We can clearly see outline of medium.*

C. *My right knee pressing against her left. My right hand in her left about 18 inches from the curtain.*

F. *Her right foot is on my left.*

12.9 a.m. *Medium asks us to get nearer the curtain.*

C. The curtain blows clearly out.

F. The curtain again blows out about two feet.

12.10 a.m. *Medium calls attention to a light on the floor.*

C. *Can I touch it?*

*Medium says, "Later."*

Medium makes three movements towards curtain, which blows out.

F. The light remains good, the whole of the medium being visible.

12.11 a.m. Medium raises C.'s hand towards curtain and says "Vieni, vieni." The curtain blows out towards C.

C. I touched the curtain with my right hand while it was blowing out and found no material resistance. [Between the bulgings I felt along the carpet and between the medium and curtain to see that there was no attachment. C., Nov. 22/08.]

F. Medium takes both our hands in both of hers and holds them towards the curtain which blows out at least  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet, and stops out a considerable time.

12.14 a.m. *Medium now asks to rest.*

12.15 a.m. As C. was bending down to ascertain the cause of the previously described light [which turned out to be a reflection from the next room on a patent leather shoe. Nov. 22/08], the curtains bulged out and brushed against his head.

C. I was holding medium's left hand in my left. The medium was leaning forward over the table.

F. Her right hand was over mine.

## [Light II.]

12.16 a.m. Table rocks violently, there being no contact at all.

12.18 to 12.23 a.m. Various tilts of a non-evidential character.

12.24 a.m. Table tilts from medium on one leg, followed by complete levitation.

C. Both medium's hands are off the table. No contact at any point except the left leg of the table, which was slightly touching her skirt, but not sufficiently to have any effect.

F. The whole of the table went right up into the air. All hands were off the table. Her right leg is still immovable against mine. I still keep my right leg between her right leg and the leg of the table.

C. She was pressing down on my right hand. I was pressing down on the table very hard. Her left hand was holding my right on the table. I feel sure that there was no contact between her leg and the leg of the table. [At first sight this would seem a contradiction, since I stated (1) that both the medium's hands were off the table, and (2) that our hands were on the table, pressing strongly. There is no contradiction, however. As the table was being levitated, the medium lifted my hand off the table, with hers; but, *while the table was still in the air*, she placed my hand on the table, asked me to press, and pressed herself. Our united force must have exerted a considerable pressure, but the table continued to stay in the air for one or two seconds after we had pressed in this manner. C., Dec. 7/08.]

12.25 a.m. Complete levitation of the table again.

C. No contact on this side. My right leg is curled between the medium's leg and the leg of the table.

F. It is not possible for her right leg to touch the leg of the table.

C. My right leg is between her leg and the leg of the table. Both knees are clearly visible.

12.26½ a.m. F. Medium grasps my right hand. She makes gestures with her right hand about six inches above the table. She continues pulling my right hand and makes gestures of pushing at the table, and the table moves. There was no possibility of contact in any way.

## [Light II.]

12.27 a.m. Complete levitation of the table.

F. She pulled my right hand about two feet above the table, and the table followed it.

C. My knee was between her leg and the leg of the table, my hand across both her knees.

F. My right leg was between her leg and the leg of the table.

*12.30 a.m. Seven raps tell us to end the séance and the lights are turned up.*

## NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

It must not be thought that we are not painfully conscious of the shortcomings of the report of this first séance. On re-reading the notes after a lapse of a few days, it is mortifying to find in how many cases the control, especially of the feet, is not stated. Having frequently criticized the reports of others, we set out with the intention of supplying a record which would be proof against the attacks of absent critics; and we have failed egregiously. The séance was, in fact, far more remarkable than the report suggests. The light, which, while the electric light in the séance room was lit, was sufficient to enable us to see everything with almost as much clearness as in an ordinary well-shaded sitting-room, was at all times sufficient to show the medium's face and hands with perfect distinctness. Notwithstanding the frequent lapses in our description of the control, we were, in fact, at no time conscious of the slightest suspicion of its adequacy. The movements of the table or curtain were almost continuous. It was not as if Eusapia waited for a favourable moment of inattention on our part to produce a phenomenon, but the phenomena happened, and went on happening, in spite of our best efforts to prevent them. It is unthinkable to us that for two hours two reasonably intelligent and active men, both fairly well posted in the tricks of mediums, elosely clinging with arms and legs about this elderly lady, could be baffled by mere methods of substitution of feet or hands, for which they were constantly on the look-out. The shorthand report has given us so much trouble that though it was written out as well as possible in long-hand the day after the séance, we have delayed till to-day typing it in its final form. It is therefore in the light of the fraud practised in the third séance that we are able still to look back

with astonishment on the first, and record our unchanged impression of its remarkable character.

E. F. Nov. 29th, 1908.

NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

There is little I can add to F.'s note, with which I wholly concur. The weak point of the séance, of course (to outsiders, not to ourselves), is the frequent lapse of recorded control of one hand or one foot. This was due partly to our inexperience of this particular kind of dictation and to the rapidity with which, on occasion, the phenomena succeeded one another. We would dictate an account of a phenomenon and, say, the control on one side, when another phenomenon occurred and prevented the opposite sitter from giving his control. When several phenomena thus occurred in rapid succession the control was almost invariably the same for all, so that, by reading the record, and piecing together the various controls of hands and feet as stated, a correct idea may be gained of the degree of its efficacy. I need only add that the control in this first séance struck me throughout as almost perfect, while the light, during the greater part of the time, was so good that we could clearly see both the medium's hands, and we should almost have been content not to hold them at all, so clear was her every movement.

H. C. Dec. 7th, 1908.

REMARKS ON SÉANCE II.

*November 23rd, 1908.*

In the second séance the programme of phenomena was somewhat enlarged. Besides a very large number of levitations of the table and raps upon it, there were touches by invisible or unseen finger tips, or what felt like such, on both F. and C., while there were also, as before, many movements of the curtain. There were, further, movements of the objects behind the curtain; noises and raps behind the curtain; the plucking of the string of the guitar on the floor in the corner of the cabinet; the upsetting of the small table in the cabinet, and the transportation of it over the medium's shoulder half on to the séance table; and the appearance to C. of the

silhouette of a kind of head which shot out to a distance of about two feet from the curtains.

As a result of practice with the shorthand writer during the day, the descriptions of the control, though still in many important cases inadequate, were not only much better given, but better recorded, so that the shorthand report gives a fairly accurate summary of the proceedings. The same difficulty of keeping pace with the phenomena was, however, experienced as at the first séance, for occasionally they followed each other so rapidly that the description of one was interrupted by the happening of another and then another. Perhaps the most remarkable thing about this séance was the number and interest of the phenomena which occurred in the bright No. 1 light, a sixteen candle power lamp shaded with three thicknesses of tissue paper, and which was strong enough not only to enable us to see every object all over the room, but even to read, at our places at the table, small print. The sitting began in this light, and the table almost immediately started tilting with contact, and raps were produced in it while the medium knelt in her chair, with her feet away from the table, and only touching the table with one hand. We were not afterwards able to imitate these raps, but, owing to the contact of the medium's hand with the table, felt unable to come to any conclusion as to their origin.

Aware of the objections to the character of the foot control at the previous séance, we asked the medium if she would allow her feet to be tied. She made no objection, and they were accordingly secured round the ankles to the legs and rung of her chair, leaving her a play of about four inches. There then followed a series of tilts of a remarkable character, sometimes without contact of the medium's hands, and no apparent contact of her feet; sometimes with a hand resting on the table, but in such a way as could not account normally for the particular movement. Her body was always motionless during these tilts, a clear space of generally about 6 inches being visible between her chest and the table. Under the conditions of light in which these tilts and the subsequent complete levitations occurred, any hook or attachment to her body would have become

immediately visible. Nor was there, so far as we were able to see, any action of her knees or feet. It is true that the fastening of her ankles was not close enough to prevent her from getting her feet under the legs, and raising the table at one corner or another by ankle movement, and so producing a very easily detectable "partial levitation." We were, however, of course, specially and constantly on the watch for action of this kind. The hands of one or other of us were frequently over both her knees, and during a great part of the séance F.'s leg was completely between hers and the leg of the table.

Occasionally, when the table was tilted or entirely levitated, it resisted considerable pressure downwards by C.—see shorthand notes at 10.45 p.m. and 10.58 p.m. Sometimes the table would start upwards while the medium's hands, holding or held in ours, were on the table; but sometimes she would pull our hands high above the table, or one above and the other below on her lap, and then the table would rise a second or so later—see shorthand notes at 11.0, 11.1 and 11.13 p.m. Total levitations alternated with partial ones—see shorthand notes at 10.58, 11.0 and 11.5 (three in rapid succession) and 11.11 p.m. (two).

It was not till after successive diminutions of light had been made that movements of the curtain occurred. These reached a climax in the whole of one of the curtains blowing right over the full length of the table (11.30 p.m.), after which noises took place in the cabinet under what appeared to be perfect conditions of control.

At 11.42 the small table in the cabinet was lifted up and came over Eusapia's left shoulder, with the curtain enveloping it, on to the séance table and remained hanging there, its top on the séance table and its legs downwards at an angle of about 45°, over Eusapia's and C.'s joined hands. C. felt it pushing against his hand as though it were trying to climb further up on to the séance table, and eventually it fell back on to the ground, where it lay horizontally, its legs pointing outwards. At a later period of the séance (11.55 p.m.) in a poor light, though sufficient for both C. and F. to see it from their places, it began to retire back into the cabinet towards the corner, away from Eusapia, in a series of little jumps, a

movement which it continued to make after Eusapia had directed the electric light to be turned up again.

At 11.44 p.m. there commenced a short series of touches on both sitters given in different places in immediate response to requests, the medium's head being visible, her hands visible and held, and her feet tied. Whatever it was that produced the touches remained, however, unseen.

The appearance, at about 11.52 p.m., of a square head on a long neck which shot apparently from the curtain between Eusapia and C., cannot, perhaps, be considered in itself as evidential, as F. had ceased to control the medium's right hand while engaged in releasing the fastening of her right foot. It was, however, the first of many subsequent similar appearances which occurred while the control was adequate, and is of interest on that account.

After more noises in the cabinet synchronising with muscular tensions of the medium's hand (11.55 to 12.0 p.m.) Eusapia asked for more light, and the electric light of the séance room was turned up as at the beginning of the sitting.

Then followed a series of manifestations which must be regarded as amongst the most remarkable that occurred throughout the séances, on account of the excellence of the light and the absolute ease with which every movement of the medium could be followed. Eusapia sat about a foot away from the curtain, which was withdrawn in such a way that on different sides of it C. and F. could see right into the cabinet. The shorthand notes and F. and C.'s notes thereto should be referred to.

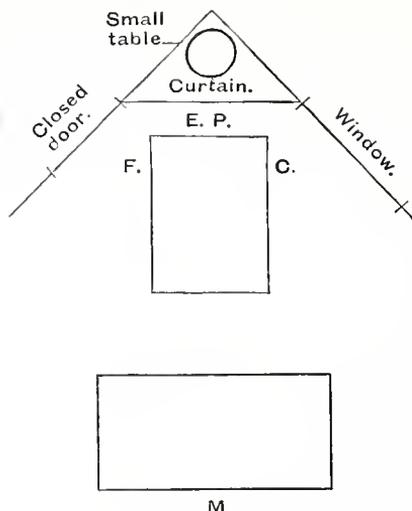
#### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE II.

*November 23rd, 1908.*

*The condition of séance room was the same as at the last séance. Present, F. and C.; and M., shorthand writer, seated at another table in séance room.*

*The séance began at 10.12 p.m.*

*Light at commencement: Incandescent electric light in the centre of room, shaded as before. Bright light in the next room and the door open. Light enough to read small print at our places at the table.*



### Light I.

Various non-evidential tilts take place.

10.20 p.m. *F.* asks medium if she will try and get a rap whilst standing away from the table. She assents and kneels on her chair, her feet away from the table.

10.21 p.m. Two movements of her left hand above the table at a distance of about 6 inches result in two raps in the wood of the table following about one second after the movements.

*F.* Her right hand is apparently motionless on the table.

10.23 p.m. *F.* Medium tapped three times on the table and then put the tips of her fingers touching the table between mine [my hand being flat on the table with fingers outstretched, *F.*, Feb. 6/09] whereupon about five seconds afterwards three creaks imitating the rhythm of the taps followed, but entirely different in the quality of the sound.

[Subsequently we ascertained that these creaks could be obtained by considerable muscular pressure. At the same time we must admit that no such pressure was apparently exercised by the medium. *F.* and *C.*, Nov. 24/08.]

*F.* The creaks were evidently made under my hand.

10.23 to 10.36 p.m. Time occupied in tying up medium's legs. At her request, each ankle was tied to the nearest leg of her chair by means of a rope passed once round her ankle and tied, then

## [Light I.]

*attached to the leg and rung of her chair, leaving her a play of about four inches.*

10.37 p.m. The table raised itself on the two legs furthest from her.

F. Her right hand was on my left hand and my little finger was over the edge of the table so that she could not have lifted the table with her wrist.

C. Her left hand was over my right, mine being between hers and the table. [No effort was perceived by either of us. F. and C., Nov. 24/08.]

10.38 p.m. The table is going up in the air at the present moment. The table again raised itself away from her.

F. Her hands are absolutely on the top of our hands, and not touching the top of the table at all.

F. Now it has done the same thing again.

F. My left hand is on her knees, which are motionless. My left foot is touching her right foot and is between it and the leg of the table.

C. Her left foot is on my right foot, and my right knee pressing against her left knee.

10.44 p.m. The table again raised itself on two legs away from her, her hands barely touching it and the fingers being on our hands.

F. My left hand still on her knees, my foot as before.

10.45 p.m. F. With only her left hand resting flat on the top of the table, the table tilts to the right. C. is trying to press it down.

C. I was strongly pressing downward with my right hand.

F. Her right hand was on my shoulder at the time.

[Foot control not mentioned, but remembered by us to be as before. F. and C., Nov. 24/08.]

10.47 p.m. Medium makes three raps with her fingers on the top of the table, and three faint raps follow, apparently in the wood of the table, about two seconds afterwards.

## [Light I.]

10.48 p.m. Medium squeezed both our hands tightly, our hands being between hers and the table, and the table raised itself from her.

F. My left hand was on her knees, my left foot between her foot and the table leg.

10.49 p.m. The table has again raised itself away from her, her hands being flat on the top of it, partly resting on our hands.

10.54 p.m. *F. I have changed the control from my left foot to my right. My right foot is now between hers and the leg of the table.*

10.58 p.m. The table tilts on the two right legs.

C. The medium's left hand is held in mine over the table, her left foot being pressed on my right, and my right knee being in contact with her left knee.

F. Her right hand was on my shoulder.

F. The table was then completely levitated, and both C. and she afterwards pressed on C.'s side of the table, which went up in spite of their pressure.

C. I pressed strongly.

11.0 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

C. The medium's left hand pulled up my right about four inches above the table, her left foot pressing against my right foot, my right knee pressing against her left knee.

F. The medium's right hand was partly on mine, the wrist just touching the top of the table, my left hand across both her knees, my right foot touching her right foot and being between it and the table leg. My face was within six inches of the edge of the table.

11.1 p.m. The table tilts on the two legs furthest from medium, both her hands being clearly visible and about a foot away from the table, and her fists being clenched in a line with her waist.

C. The control of the feet being the same as before, except that my right hand was then also grasping her thigh.

## [Light I.]

F. My left hand was across both her knees.

[The medium sat well back in her chair and her body was at least nine inches from the table. We clearly remember the conditions of this striking phenomenon. F. and C., Nov. 24/08].

11.5 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

F. The table lifted about six inches, only C.'s left hand and my right were on the table, clasped across the middle of it.

Another complete levitation of the table.

F. Nobody's hands are on the table, it goes up all by itself.

Another complete levitation of the table.

C. All hands being off the table. Her right hand was free but perfectly visible, and about six inches off the table.

11.10 p.m. *F. asks medium to attempt levitation whilst standing up; she agrees, but presently says that she cannot stand any longer. She reseats herself.*

11.11 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

C. Both hands of the medium were about eight inches above the table. I can clearly feel her left foot across my right; the leg of the table was not in contact with her skirt.

Another complete levitation of the table.

F. My left hand was underneath the bottom of the right leg of the table. There was no contact between her and the leg of the table. Her right hand was off the table altogether.

C. There were nine inches between her body and the table.

11.13 p.m. Partial levitation of the table.

F. She removed her hands entirely from the table about two feet, and the table went up on the two legs furthest from her, about one foot.

Immediately afterwards she repeated the same, taking our hands in her lap, whereupon the table again lifted up and wriggled about without anybody touching it.

F. My hand was on her right hand all the time.

C. My right hand was on her left hand.

## [Light I.]

F. I could see right down the leg of the table.

[We could clearly distinguish her two hands. F. and C., Nov. 24/08.]

**Light II.**

11.17 p.m. *Electric light in room turned out, electric light in next room burning, the door partly open; also photographic lamp for M.*

[We could clearly see across the room and distinguish every feature of the medium and her two hands. F. and C., Nov. 24/08.]  
M. notes: "The medium's head is clearly visible to me, at a distance of about 9 feet."

11.17 p.m. The left curtain has blown out.

C. The medium's left hand was on my right, her left foot on my right foot. The phenomenon took place on her left side.

F. The medium was holding my left hand on her lap, and it is visible to me. Her head is visible.

The curtain again blows out.

C. With her left hand the medium held my right towards the curtain which blew out towards it.

This has happened again.

F. My control is the same as before, my hand in her lap with hers, and her right foot on mine.

11.19 p.m. Partial levitation of the table.

C. The medium grasped my right hand in her left hand and raised it above the table and the table then tilted on the two legs furthest from her. Her left foot was on mine.

F. Her right hand was off the table, my left hand was on her knee. My right leg was curled right round the leg of the table, and was between her leg and the table.

[In three or four of the above levitations, it will be noticed that no description was given by me of my foot control. In these cases I was not satisfied with the control, feeling the pressure of a *heel* rather than a whole foot across my instep, which was invariably the case when I stated "I feel the medium's foot on mine." At such

**[Light II.]**

times I felt the *whole* of the medium's foot, and there was no possibility of substituting one foot for two. At the same time we must record the fact that subsequent experiment showed us that it was impossible for us to levitate the table with the one free foot unless contact with the hands was also allowed. Besides which it must be recorded that our hands were on her knees, and the light good. C., Nov. 24/08.] [Further, it must be remembered that the medium's feet were tied to the legs of her chair, with only four inches play, so that substitution of feet was impossible. F., Feb. 8/09.]

**Light III.**

11.23 p.m. *Light further lessened by closing the door more, only red photographic lamp and feeble light coming through crack in door remaining.*

C. *I can clearly see the medium's eyebrows, her lips, the difference in the white and brown of her hair.*

M. notes: "*The three heads just visible to me,*" his distance from the medium being then about twelve feet.

C. The table rises three times on the two legs furthest from me.

F. With violence.

C. Her left foot is on my right, her left hand on my right hand which rests on her left knee.

F. She was holding my left hand in her right hand, and I could feel her thumb and knew it was her right hand.

[Though not stated, she held my hand in her lap; both hands were clearly visible. F., Nov. 25/08.]

11.26 to 11.31 p.m. Various tilting phenomena of interest took place which the medium asked us not to take the trouble to record owing to the poorness of the light.

**Light IV.**

11.30 p.m. *Still less light, the door into the next room being further closed.*

M. notes: "*I cannot see the heads.*"

H. "*John, are you there?*"

Three raps follow on the table.

## [Light IV.]

C. The left curtain has blown right out on to the table.

C. My right hand was under the table firmly holding the medium's left hand.

F. I have hold of her right hand continuously in her lap.

*11.34 p.m. F. The medium kicks with her right foot violently on mine.*

*C. She kicks me with her left foot also. Her left hand raises my right hand towards the curtain.*

Objects in the cabinet rattle on the table inside the curtain.

*11.35 p.m. F. Medium asks me to put my left arm on her shoulder. Her right arm is round my neck.*

*11.36 p.m. C. With her left hand medium is holding my right hand on the table.*

11.37 p.m. The objects in the cabinet have fallen over on the table inside it.

C. She grasped my right hand firmly in her left hand at the time this was going on, and pressed on my right foot with her left.

F. I was holding her right hand on the table with my left, and the tips of both her feet under the table with my right hand.

C. My left hand was holding her head and I was holding her left hand in my right.

11.42 p.m. The small table in the cabinet has been lifted up on to the séanee table, behind the curtain, several objects remaining upon the top.

F. I could see that her head was motionless.

C. My right hand was held in her left hand on the séanee table. Her left foot was on my right.

F. Her right hand was in my left hand. I was holding both her toes in my right hand.

C. The small table from the cabinet is pushing against me with considerable force, the objects being still on it.

[The table was pushed out on to the séanee table at an angle of about 45 degrees, still covered by the left-hand eurtain, which thus prevented the objects from falling off. The four feet of the

## [Light IV.]

table were about two feet from the ground, and the table remained in this position for at least one minute, pressing strongly against my hand which had been raised from the table still holding the medium's, and apparently making efforts to climb on to the séance table. C., Nov. 24/08.] [After which it fell back to the ground. F., Feb. 6/09.]

C. My right arm is under the curtain, my hand being held by the medium's left hand. The curtain has remained on the séance table, covering our two arms, with several small objects inside, these having fallen off the top of the small table.

11.44 p.m. C. *Medium grasped my right hand and passed it through the opening of the curtain.*

F. *Both her feet are on mine.*

F. *"John, will you touch me?"*

F. I was immediately touched on my left forearm in reply to my request.

F. I am holding her right hand continuously.

C. Her left hand held mine on the top of the table.

F. I could see her face.

C. So could I.

F. *asks "John" to touch C.*

C. I am touched through the curtain on my right arm.

C. Her hand is holding mine on the top of the table. I could see her face.

F. I could see her right hand in mine and her face.

11.49 p.m. F. *asks "John" whether he can touch C. on the head. The medium asks F. to rest his head against hers.*

F. *Our two heads are touching.*

C. I am touched on the head as if by a hand through the curtain.

C. While this was going on the medium held my hand in hers and I could feel her forearm with my arm pressed against it. The distance between her hand and the touch was about two feet.

F. Her head was resting against mine. Her right hand was in mine.

## [Light IV.]

C. The curtain blows right out over the table.

*Medium asks that her feet should be untied as they are hurting her. Up to this point, they have remained tied by the rope.*

*[Finding it impossible to untie the knots, I cut the rope from the right leg. F., Nov. 25/08.]*

*[The releasing of the feet was interrupted by the sudden appearance of the phenomenon next mentioned, and the left foot remained tied till the end of the séance. F., Feb. 8/09.]*

C. I can see a square object coming right out in front of my face for about a second and disappear immediately.

[The object seen by me was quite black and about five inches square, and appeared to be the silhouette of a man's head, small in size and very square in shape and having a long neck. This occurred when F. was kneeling down cutting the rope on her right side, and had consequently let go of her right hand. C., Nov. 25/08.] [I looked up immediately C. spoke, and her right arm was resting on the table and against my shoulder. F., Nov. 25/08.] [The head appeared to be about six inches from my face, and was between my head and the medium's. C., Dec. 1/08.]

C. The left hand was held by me, the right hand was not controlled.

11.55 p.m. C. The small table is walking into the cabinet [*i.e.* away from the medium. F., July 11/09].

F. I have her right leg securely.

C. The medium is holding my right hand in her left hand on the table, and I can clearly see her face.

F. Her right hand is in mine and visible, on the table.

F. My right leg is in contact with her right knee.

C. Her left foot is on my right foot, my right knee pressing against her left knee.

11.56 p.m. F. The medium, whilst holding my left hand makes three gestures, and noises in the cabinet follow each gesture.

C. She [is holding my right hand in her left hand.

F. Now she presses my hand three times and three noises are heard simultaneously in the cabinet, on the tambourine.

## [Light IV.]

12.00 p.m. C. I hear movements in the cabinet.

C. I am touched as if by a hand through the curtain.

C. My right hand holds her left hand firmly on the table.

F. Her right hand is in mine all the time, her face close to mine and visible.

[The touch was on my right side. C., Nov. 25/08.]

12.1 a.m. *Medium asks for more light; electric light turned up.*

## Light I.

F. *She makes three movements with her right hand.*

C. The small table moves away from her in the cabinet, whilst I am looking at it. I can clearly see the whole table, which moves about a foot.

[The table was lying on its side on the floor, the curtain being accidentally drawn to one side sufficiently for us both to see into the cabinet. F. and C., Nov. 25/08.]

M. notes: "I see this also."

[While I was looking at the small table in the cabinet (the curtains having been accidentally parted, allowing me to see the whole table) it made a series of little jumps in a direction *away* from the medium, and back into the cabinet. I could see that there was no contact between the medium's foot and the table, while a thread, if pulled, would have had the effect of pulling the table in the opposite direction, *i.e.* towards the medium. About six or seven little jumps of this kind were made, bringing the small table again right into the cabinet. The light was particularly good, at this time, and I could clearly see the whole of the table as it was moving. C., Dec. 7/08.]

F. I can see between her and the place where the table was, over her knee [between the two curtains].

F. I was looking into the cabinet over her knee. She pinched my hand and the table in the cabinet wriggled about.

C. I also can see the table moving about in the cabinet.

A note is struck on the string of the guitar.

## [Light I.]

[Eusapia had tapped three times on the palm of my hand with her right hand, the first two taps were followed by raps in the cabinet, and the third by the plucking of the guitar string. Thereupon she laughed diabolically. F., Nov. 25/08.]

[The guitar was a metre behind the back of the medium's chair, and the small table was between medium and guitar,—the guitar standing upside down in the corner, on the floor. F. and C., Nov. 25/08.]

[In re-reading this description we notice that the foot-control is omitted. Owing to the excellence of the light, however, we could clearly see that her feet were not employed. There was a clear space of about a foot between the back of her chair and the curtain, and her knees and feet were towards the séance table. F. and C., Dec. 6/08.]

C. The small table moves forward a foot while we are looking at it.

C. Both her hands are clearly visible, the light good, the feet held as before.

*[At this point the medium discovered that the cabinet curtain was accidentally drawn to one side allowing me to see into the cabinet. She thereupon reached up and replaced the curtain in its proper position. C., Nov. 25/08.]*

*F. The medium says that she wants to touch the small table in the cabinet.*

*She raises it from the floor and puts it upside down and closes the curtains.*

*C. Her feet are about two feet in front of the curtains.*

*[Her chair was now turned slightly to the left. F., Dec. 1/08.]*

12.5 a.m. Medium makes six gestures and large movements of the left curtain take place.

F. Her right hand was on my shoulder, the left hand holding C.'s wrist.

12.12 a.m. *F. asks "John" to touch him, "John" replies by tilts of the séance table.*

12.13 a.m. *Medium says that she is tired.*

## [Light I.]

*F.* tells "John" that the medium is tired and asks him whether the séance shall end. The medium says, "say 'Yes' John," but "John" tilts "No, No."

C. Medium holds my right hand in her left hand, and makes three taps on my right hand with her right hand; three taps are heard in the cabinet apparently on the wood of the small table corresponding with these taps.

F. Absolute control of feet.

12.15 a.m. *F.* She takes up curtain and draws it to C's right hand, holding C's right hand in her left hand on the table. Her right hand supports her head. She lets curtain fall back.

F. The curtains part in the middle and I can see right into the cabinet.

[They were drawn gently apart, just as though some invisible person within were looking out. F., Dec. 1/08.]

12.18 a.m. Four complete levitations of the table.

Both her hands being clearly visible and six inches above the table.

F. My right leg is curled right round between her leg and the leg of the table.

C. Her left foot being on my right, pressing very strongly.

*Medium* again says that she is tired, and "John," on *F.* asking him if the séance may now end, tilts three times, meaning "Yes."

## NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

So many remarkable phenomena took place at this séance, in good light and under what appeared to us excellent conditions of control, that little need be said, save to record the fact that we both felt, at its conclusion, that at least some of the phenomena were undoubted. The plucking of the guitar string alone, under the conditions prevailing, appeared to us practically convincing. It must be remembered that, at this time, the light was excellent, allowing us clearly to see the whole body of the medium, and to read small print. Her head and her two hands were plainly visible; her feet controlled; in addition to which there was a space of about

a foot between her body and the cabinet curtains. Further, the small table was lying on the floor in the cabinet, forming a sort of "fence" between Eusapia and the guitar. The guitar was upside down, in the corner, and at least four feet from the medium. Yet, under these conditions, a string was clearly and forcibly plucked on the guitar. We were absolutely positive at the time, and remain so still, that Eusapia could not have reached the guitar by any normal means.

H. C., Dec. 7th, 1908.

#### NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

In preparing the report for press I perceive that I wrote no contemporary note to this séance. I think I shirked it. My mind was not prepared to accept the phenomena which occurred, and yet I was unable to suggest any loophole for fraud in the production of any of them. Re-reading the shorthand report after this lapse of time, and studying it critically, I can appreciate what an absolutely different impression it must make on the mind of any one not present, who is naturally justified in doubting whether, when some obvious precaution is not mentioned in the report, it may not perhaps have been neglected.

This séance, although the phenomena were less complicated than those at later séances, ranks in my memory as among the most remarkable of the whole series. We were still fresh at the game, still alertly suspicious of every movement of Eusapia; somewhat annoyed, to speak frankly, at our failure to detect any fraud at the first séance, and determined to get even with her. We tied her feet, and then presently forgot that we had tied them, and to judge by C.'s somewhat elaborate note at 11.19, did not even remember it the next day. This attitude of suspicion must be read, therefore, into the report, which of itself, as a complete record of events, is very imperfect.

As it is inevitable that critics will talk of excited and emotional witnesses, I should like to state that throughout the whole series of séances it was only on two occasions that I experienced the slightest emotional thrill. The cause of the second of these occasions was the phenomenon occurring at 12.11 a.m. in the sixth séance; while the cause of the first was the plucking of the guitar string during the séance under consideration. The matter itself was simple enough, yet it was precisely one of the things which one knew could not happen, but which did.

E. F., Feb. 9th, 1909.



FIG. IV.



## REMARKS ON SÉANCE III.

*November 26th, 1908.*

For this séance we had prepared an apparatus, referred to in the report as the "stocks," with a view to preventing the fraudulent use of the medium's feet in levitating the table. A reproduction of a photograph of this apparatus is given opposite. It consisted of two wooden tubes, shaped like inverted cones, into which were inserted the legs of the table at the end at which the medium sat. The tubes were joined, at the bottom, by a board which rested flat on the floor, and at the top, by another board so placed as to go over the medium's knees when she sat at the table. The lower board extended on each side so as to enable one leg of the chair of the sitter on either side of the medium to be placed upon it. The conical shape of the tubes permitted the table to tilt fairly freely. It is evident that as the medium could not get her feet under the legs of the table, nor her knees either against the legs or, owing to the upper board, against the top of the table, it was impossible for her to levitate it fraudulently with her feet or knees, except in one way, viz. by sitting very low in her chair, thrusting her legs far under the knee-board of the stocks, and kicking upwards in the middle of the table. This would involve a form of acrobatic contortion which would not only have been very obvious, but was of a kind to which the robust physique of the medium certainly did not appear to lend itself. While, however, effectively eliminating leg action, the stocks, we found, facilitated that of the hands, since a direct pull at the front of the table caused its legs to slide along the sloping sides of the conical tubes and produced a bad imitation of a total levitation.

A change was made in the lighting arrangements by the fitting up of a group of four electric lamps hanging in the same position as the original lamp. By means of a commutator standing on the shorthand writer's table, the light could be successively reduced from the ordinary light of the room down to a rather faint glow.

The programme of phenomena at this séance consisted of levitations of the séance table; movements of the curtains; touchings and pullings of the sitters as if by an unseen hand

coming from behind the curtain ; movements of objects inside the cabinet, including the upsetting of the small table within it, and levitations of the small table while standing outside the curtain.

Owing to the poor light that prevailed during a great part of the séance the conditions were not nearly so satisfactory as those of the first two séances. Further, during the darkness, the medium twice effected the substitution of hands detected at the Cambridge sittings and elsewhere. A discussion of this apparently fraudulent action will be found in the notes following the shorthand report.

Levitations of the table were far fewer than at the previous séances, the table remaining motionless for long periods together. Whether or not this was due, as at the time we supposed it was, to the use of the stocks, it is impossible to say. It may, however, be remarked that at several of the later séances, though no stocks were used, there were scarcely any movements whatever of the table, the phenomena appearing merely to have progressed to another part of the programme.

At this séance the most frequent phenomena were movements of the curtain, which began after about a quarter of an hour, in the faintest of the four lamps, which, however, was still bright enough to enable us to see the grain in the wood of the table. These movements followed one another rapidly from 10.3 till 10.13, when the light was turned out, leaving only the photographic lamp on the stenographer's table. After a few more movements of the curtain the light was further reduced, at 10.24, by shading the photographic lamp on to the stenographer's book, leaving the faintest possible illumination, just enough to distinguish the whereabouts of the medium's face.

Just after 10.27 she made the substitution of hands already referred to. This was immediately detected and protested against. After touches on F.'s side and hand, the medium gave warning that something was going to happen, and asked for careful control. The table was then completely levitated (10.52) under what appeared to be unimpeachable conditions. Owing, however, to the state of suspicion into which we had been thrown by the fraud referred to above, and to the poor light, we were not at the time impressed. The upsetting of the small table within the cabinet, at 10.55, must be regarded as non-evidential owing to the

shorthand report omitting to state whether the control had been relaxed during the moment of rest immediately preceding it.

At 10.56 C. was pulled on the sleeve at a time when both hands are accounted for separately, while the light was sufficient for the head to be clearly distinguishable. At 11.2 the medium asked for No. 4 light to be turned up again, and shortly afterwards asked for her feet to be held under the table by F., M. taking his place meanwhile. Two complete levitations of the table immediately followed. At the time we attributed her wish for a change merely to a hope that she would find M. a less experienced controller.

At 11.30 the medium, apparently realizing our dissatisfaction, asked for her hands to be tied to those of the sitters on either side of her. Further movements of the curtain and, after the light had been further increased to the No. 3 lamp, touches on the sitters continued unchecked, and at 11.45 there occurred an outburst of phenomena of various kinds at once, accompanied by the typical muscular contractions which we began to notice that the medium usually exhibited either shortly before or at the moment of production of her strongest manifestations. These contractions consist of strong pressure of her hands on those of the sitters, or of spasmodic movements of her feet and legs, accompanied by those of the sitters under the table in front of her. The effect is as though muscular pressure produced a discharge of some kind of energy which took effect on objects at a distance from her. We have never been able to trace any normal physical connection between these movements and the phenomena which are precipitated by them.

At 11.50 the small table from the cabinet emerged and attempted to climb first on to C.'s chair and then on to the séance table; but the control is inadequately stated in the report, though a note made by the shorthand writer shows that the conditions of light were sufficient for him to see the position of the medium's hands as well as her feet under the table. A series of movements of the small table followed, including several levitations, but the control of the medium's left foot was felt by C. at the time to be unsatisfactory. His note, as well as F.'s, on this subject should be referred to.

It seems possible, in the light of subsequent experience, that the unsatisfactory impression made upon us by this séance was

due chiefly to the attitude of extreme hostility into which we had been thrown by what we believed to be the fraudulent conduct of the medium in the early part of the séance, and to the fact that the light was so much less good than at the previous séances.

No deliberate conscious fraud was proved, and the utmost that can be said is that, taken by itself, the séance must be regarded as inconclusive.

### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE III.

*November 26th, 1908.*

*Present—F., C., and M., shorthand writer.*

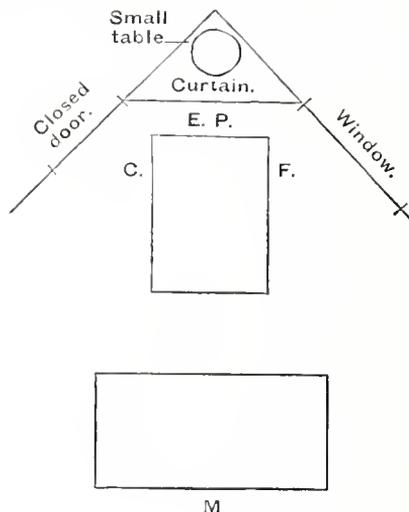
*A group of four clear glass electric lights has been arranged in the same position as the single burner in the previous séances, and by means of a commutator, the light can be varied through lamps of 110, 150, 220 and 240 volts, the current being 110 volts. These lights will be referred to throughout the séance as Nos. 1, 2, 3 and 4.*

*Also, a new photographic lamp with cylindrical red glass shade has been provided, throwing a more brilliant light in all directions.*

*The séance table is placed in the "Stocks" apparatus (see photograph, p. 375).*

#### Light I.

9.49 p.m. Séance commenced. F. on left of medium, C. on right.



**[Light I.]**

*M.*, the shorthand writer, sits at another table, being himself about three feet distant from the end of the séance table furthest from the medium.

*F.* and *C.*'s chair-legs are placed on the lower board of stools.

9.54 p.m. Medium taps three times on the table, three raps in the wood of the table follow, her hands being apparently quite motionless on the table.

9.55 p.m. Medium taps three times on the table and three raps reply.

[We did not care to interrupt the proceedings in order to control the raps. *F.* and *C.*, Nov. 25/08.]

**Light II.**

9.56 p.m. *Light No. 2*, and light from next room through crack of door ajar about three inches.

**Light III.**

9.57 p.m. *Light No. 3*, also photographic lamp; door shut.

*F.* I have asked medium to try and make me feel some raps on my hand, and she replies that there is too much light.

Light now lowered to lamp *No. 4*, photographic lamp shaded so as to throw light only on to *M.*'s book.

**Light IV.**

*C.* The light is still sufficiently good to enable us to see the whole of the medium's body clearly.

*F.* And the grain in the wood of the table.

*M.* notes: "I can see the three figures perfectly, except black of clothes."

*C.* The medium removes our two hands from the table and places them on the board running above her knees, her hands being between this board and the table.

10.00 p.m. *F.* Her left foot is on my right foot.

*C.* Her right foot is on my left foot.

## [Light IV.]

10.2 p.m. F. *My right hand is now over hers.*

C. *Mine is under hers. Medium asks whether control is good.*

10.3 p.m. F. *The medium is holding my right hand out towards the curtain.*

C. *With her right hand she grasps mine under the table.*

F. She made a gesture towards the curtain and nothing happened; she then made another and the curtain jumped out.

10.6 p.m. F. She holds my right hand again towards the curtain, and after two or three movements apparently of something inside the curtain, the curtain comes out towards my hand.

[It looked as though a hand were moving about inside the curtain, which eventually pushed it out. F., Nov. 27/08.]

F. She holds my hand again towards the curtain, and after a moment the curtain comes out about six to eight inches.

[Whenever the medium holds our hands towards the curtains, it is always about in a line with her head, and the spot on which the curtain bulges out is just opposite. Usually about a foot intervenes between her hand and the curtain. F., Nov. 27/08.]

10.7 p.m. *Medium asks for careful control.*

10.9 p.m. F. She holds both our hands up in the air in both of hers and makes a big gesture and—nothing happens. She makes a second gesture and the curtain moves on my side.

10.10 p.m. F. The curtain blows out again.

C. The curtain blew out about two feet. She is holding my left hand on the table with her right, which is clearly visible.

F. She has mine upon hers all the time.

C. The table tilts up away from her, with her right hand only on it.

F. I am holding her left hand.

C. The curtain blows out a foot, my left hand held out by her towards it while she makes a pulling movement.

## [Light IV.]

*F.* She asks me to make gestures by myself.

*C.* The medium's hands are clearly visible, although not touching ours.

*F.* She asked me to make a motion towards the curtain with my hand free. I did so, and the curtain moved. She then took hold of my wrist and the curtain came out and touched me.

10.11 p.m. *F.* asks "John" to touch him.

*F.* The curtain is coming right out.

*F.* "John, touch me."

*C.* The table tilts up to the left, her right hand being about two inches above the table.

10.12 p.m. *F.* The curtain then came out about three feet.

*C.* Quite slowly.

*F.* Her feet are motionless and her chair is quite visible, and I can see the whole of it.

[During the above curtain phenomena the control of the feet is not given, but as the light was sufficient for us to see the whole of the medium, right down to the floor, it seemed unnecessary to state that the movements of the curtain were not produced by her feet. Moreover, the curtain invariably bulged out as though pushed from inside at about four feet from the floor, and did not present the appearance that it would have done if it had been pulled by a string from outside. *F.* and *C.*, Nov. 27/08.]

## Light V.

10.13 p.m. *Electric light turned right out. Only photographic lamp on M's table, being left, not shaded.*

*F.* I can see her face, hands, eyebrows, and the different colours of her hair [which has white streaks in it].

*M.* notes: "I can just see the three heads and the two hands nearest me."

*C.* She holds my left hand under the table.

## [Light V.]

10.15 p.m. F. She holds my hand towards the curtain, and the curtain comes right out and is touching my hand now, I cannot feel anything resisting inside.

10.18 p.m. C. *At this moment the medium is holding both our hands on the board with her two hands, and she showed us by raising our hands that we were held by two different hands.*

F. *Which we can also see anyhow.*

F. She holds her hand and mine to my side and makes three gestures, raps follow somewhere. She holds my hand again towards the curtain and the curtain again blows out.

F. *"Touch me John" several times.*

F. *She takes the curtain in her hand and holds it right out.*

C. *And then lets go.*

F. *Holding my left hand all the time.*

C. *Her right hand is now holding my left hand on the table.*

10.22 p.m. M. notes: *"She asks whether feet are still well controlled.*

F. and C. *reply, 'yes.'"*

F. *I can feel the heel of her left foot.*

C. *I can feel the toe of her right.*

[The obvious implication from this description, the insufficiency of which was realized at the time, is that the same foot was holding both of ours. Owing to the fact that our feet were on opposite sides of the table, however, we feel tolerably sure that such was not the case. F. and C., Nov. 27/08.]

## Light VI.

10.24 p.m. *Light still further reduced by shading photographic lamp so as to throw light only on to M.'s book.*

C. *I can still clearly see the medium's head.*

F. *I can only see the white of her face.*

M. notes: *"I can see nothing at all except just the white edge of the table nearest me, distant about three feet from me."*

## [Light VI.]

10.27 p.m. F. She is showing which hand is now held by me and which by C.

F. Medium makes three gestures with the right hand and nothing happened.

C. The curtain blows out on the table.

F. For the first time the *right* hand curtain blows out on the table.

N.B.—C. My left hand was not properly held, and I am perfectly certain that there was a substitution of hands.

F. explains to medium that control was not good.

[This is the first time in any of the séances where even an attempt at substitution was made. During the first two séances the light was always sufficient to enable us to see both hands clearly. This time I saw the medium push her right arm into the cabinet, grasp the curtain and pull it out over the table. The difference between this and the other curtain phenomena was very clear to me on whose side it occurred. C., Nov. 27/08.]

10.32 p.m. F. Something has touched me on my right side.

C. The medium held my left hand in her right, above the table, and made three movements in the direction of the curtain.

F. She held my right continuously in hers.

10.33 p.m. We have now verified by touching the feet with our hands that the feet touching ours are separate.

10.35 p.m. The medium asks whether, if the table were to levitate now, we should consider the control good.

10.37 p.m. F. She again asks us to control her feet carefully.

F. Her left foot is quite clearly on mine.

C. The medium is holding my left hand in her right hand on the table, under the curtain of the cabinet which has remained out over it.

10.40 p.m. C. asks F. if the leg of his chair is still on bottom board of stools.

F. "Yes."

## [Light VI.]

*F. asks "John" several times to touch him.*

10.45 p.m. *F. My hand was touched about two feet away from the cabinet.*

*C. My left hand was held by her right about an inch above the table.*

10.52 p.m. *Medium says, "Look out, I feel that something is going to happen."*

*C. She presses on my foot.*

Complete levitation of the table, about 18 inches.

*F. And I can see something. I saw something black, apparently just touching the edge of the table.*

[A filmy black thing seemed to me to shoot out (horizontally from the medium, *F.*, May 2/09), and touch the edge of the table near *C.* It was a very fugitive glimpse. *F.*, Nov. 27/08.]

*C. My left hand was held by her right hand on her right knee.*

*F. My right hand was held by her left on her left knee, the fingers being around it. No question of substitution.*

*M. asks "Were the stocks held?" Reply: "yes."*

*F. Her left foot was pressing heavily on mine, both heel and toe.*

*C. Ditto here for right foot.*

10.53 p.m. *Medium asks to have a rest.*

10.55 p.m. The table in the cabinet falls over with a loud noise.

*C. Her right hand was held in my left hand under the table on the board, and she was pressing strongly against my left leg with her right.*

*F. Her left hand was holding my right in her lap, and I am absolutely certain of the whole of her left foot.*

10.56 p.m. *C. I am pulled by a hand through the curtain. Her right hand holds my left hand on the board. [The sleeve of my coat was pulled, near the elbow. C., Nov. 27/08.]*

## [Light VI.]

F. She kicks my right foot about with her left foot. She holds my right hand in her left hand in her lap, and calls my attention to a black shadow near C., which I do not see.

C. I am again pulled by a hand.

F. She asked me again if I saw nothing, but although I could see the red lit door between C. and the curtain, looking in front of her, I could not see anything. [A visible object touching C. from the cabinet would have crossed this red lit door (the shining wood of which reflected the red light of the lamp) and ought to have been perceived by me. F., Feb. 10/09.]

10.59 p.m. Medium, "See! I do this" (making gestures).

C. I can hear noises in the cabinet as though something were softly moving about.

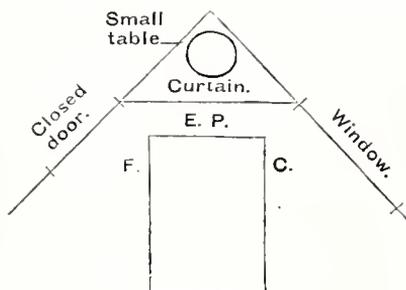
[It sounded to me as though a kitten or a small dog were moving about inside it. C., Nov. 27/08.]

C. Medium is holding my left hand continuously with her right. I have my thumb under her fingers, holding it on the board.

F. She is holding my right hand. Control is perfect.

## Light IV.

11.3 p.m. Light No. 4. F. and C. change places. F. is now to right of medium, C. to left.

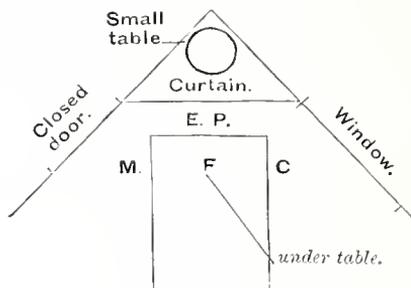


Medium's chair is about a foot from the curtain.

11.4 p.m. Medium asks F. to remove his right hand.

## [Light IV.]

11.6 p.m. Medium asks M. to take place of F., asking F. to hold her feet under the table, which is done.



Complete levitation of table about eight inches.

The following notes are therefore made by M. from memory immediately on resuming his position:

F. holding feet under table.

M. Left hand held by medium's right flat on her lap (right thigh).

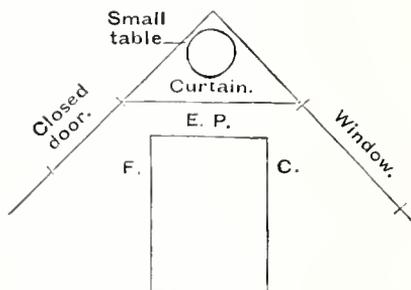
C. I am holding her left hand in my right on left thigh, my hand entirely encircling hers.

11.20 p.m. Medium asks for a few moments' repose.

About half a minute after this, 2nd levitation of the table about eight inches; disposition as before.

M. remarks "It seems strange that this levitation should take place just after medium had asked to rest, and consequently our attention had been relaxed, which mine certainly was."

M. resumes position at stenographer's table. F. resumes his position on right side of medium.



11.26 p.m. F. says to "John" that he has already made three levitations, and that he might try something else.

**[Light IV.]**

11.30 p.m. *Medium asks us to tie her hands.*

While M. is searching for cord, the curtains blow right out.

11.34 to 11.36 p.m. *Hands are being tied. [Her hands were tied to F. and C's left and right hands respectively, leaving a play of about 1 foot between her hands and ours. F., Feb. 11/09.]*

11.36 p.m. *F. Medium holds both our hands towards the curtain. Her left hand held C's. Her right hand free except for the cord.*

11.37 p.m. *Electric light accidentally turned full on.*

**Light I.**

M. notices curtain bulging right out to table.

C. and F. were looking towards light.

*Light turned down again to No. 4, M.'s lamp being shaded on to his book.*

**Light IV.**

C. I am touched on my right side.

C. My right hand is holding medium's left hand on the table. My right foot is pressed by her left foot under the table.

F. Her right hand made two gestures with mine about two feet away from the cabinet, her right foot held on mine.

C. I could see medium's right hand making these gestures up and down above the table.

11.41 p.m. *Light changed to No. 3.*

**Light III.**

C. I am touched on my right side.

C. I am holding medium's left hand firmly on the table with my right hand.

F. I can see between C. and the curtain, but could not see anything touching him.

## [Light III.]

C. I can see both hands all the time and the outline of her body.

F. I could see her face both times during the touches. Her foot is absolutely tight on mine.

11.45 p.m. The tambourine in the cabinet rattles after three distinct movements.

C. While that was going on, I was holding medium's left hand over the table with my right.

Medium says, "Oh, la, la, la!" several times, and then suddenly the table in the cabinet falls over and the things on it fall to the floor with a crash. Tambourine strikes several times.

F. She was holding my right hand all the time.

C. I am touched on my right arm.

C. Medium holds my right hand in her left all the time; her left foot pressing on my right foot.

C. Touched again on my right arm.

*C. She presses four times strongly with her finger on my hand.*

*F. Her right foot on mine all the time and kicking about, her right hand pressing on mine.*

*C. The medium presses her left foot on my right.*

Loud noises in cabinet as though objects were moving about within.

F. She is kicking about under the table with her right foot.

[The above series of phenomena took place so rapidly, like a kind of *feu de joie*, that it was difficult to describe the control throughout. The final description of the foot control, when one foot was stationary while the other moved about seems to make it clear that the two separate feet were held. F. & C., Nov. 28/08.]

11.46 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

F. Her right hand was free, but still bound to mine and visible above and off the table.

11.50 p.m. She makes gestures towards the cabinet, which are followed by movements of the instruments inside cabinet.

**[Light III.]**

Medium tells F. to make gestures with his free hand, which he does, and noises inside the cabinet follow them irregularly.

C. The small table is coming out from under the curtain on my right, legs first.

C. One leg of the small table has climbed up on my chair.

[Here again the phenomena followed so quickly that a description of the control was impossible. We can only say that it seemed adequate at the time. F. & C., Nov. 28/08.]

**Light IV.**

*M. I can see everything very clearly.*

*F. So can I.*

*C. So can I.*

Noises again follow gestures made by F.

The small table attempts to climb on to the séance table, and falls back.

M. notes: "I can see all the hands over and away from the table, and her feet."

Things in cabinet move about violently and with great commotion.

F. Feet are all right.

11.51 p.m. C. In good light I can see the small table moving towards me, the result of my making movements towards it with my right hand.

C. The medium's left hand is holding my right hand and clearly visible. She is pressing on my right foot with her left foot.

F. Her right foot is firmly fixed on mine. I have just verified with my hand that her two feet are apart.

*Medium asked C. to lift up the small table and put it upright, which he does. The small table now stands completely out of the cabinet [to the left of the medium. F., Feb. 11/09].*

## [Light IV.]

11.53 p.m. Complete levitation of small table.

C. My right hand being on the surface, her left being upon mine, her foot was pressing strongly on mine. The table is raised about a foot in the air.

F. Her right foot is pressing on mine.

11.57 p.m. C. She puts her left hand on my right, which rests flat on the top of the small table, and the table again rises a foot in the air.

C. Her foot is still strongly pressing on my right.

F. Her right foot is still pressing on mine. Her right hand is visible close to me, in mine.

*C. I now ascertain that there is no string or connection between the medium and the small table.*

*11.59 p.m. C. The distance between the small table and the dress of medium appears to me to be about a foot.*

12.00 p.m. Medium makes various gestures to and fro over the small table, and the table follows them backwards and forwards three or four inches.

C. Her left hand now rests on the small table on mine. Medium lifts my hand and makes pulling movement in the air about six inches above it. The table follows. The medium's foot still strongly pressing on mine. The table moves several inches on the floor, and a complete levitation to the height of one foot in the air follows.

C. My right hand was resting on its surface, the medium's hand on my hand.

12.1 a.m. C. Her foot strongly pressing on mine.

F. Her right foot strongly pressing on mine right over this end of the table, and her right hand on mine.

[Notwithstanding that the notes appear to show adequacy of foot control, I had an impression, throughout all these levitations and other movements of the small table, that my control of the left foot was not satisfactory. The genuineness of the above series depends entirely on the adequacy of the control of the left foot. On all previous occasions when the control is stated to be good,

## [Light IV.]

the *whole* of the medium's foot was felt. During these phenomena, however, only the toes of the foot were felt, and not the whole foot as before. C., Nov. 28/08.]

*Here M. had to leave. It was explained to the medium that the control of the foregoing phenomena had not been considered satisfactory. She thereupon said that she would like to repeat them. See C.'s note below.*

## NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

A complete description of our third séance is extremely difficult. Not only were the phenomena of a somewhat different order, but the whole conduct of the séance was altered. Further, our subjective sensations—the *whole atmosphere* of the séance—were entirely different from those which we experienced on the two previous occasions. On looking back on this séance, I cannot help feeling that some, at least, of the phenomena were genuine,—notably the blowing of the curtains. But on the other hand, I must record the fact that the séance reads far better than it appeared to me at the time. Throughout the whole of the latter part of the séance, we were certainly dissatisfied with the phenomena and the control, though the notes would not seem to indicate this. I, especially, was dissatisfied with my foot control, and there seemed to me to be a long continued effort on the part of the medium to substitute one foot for the other. Also, on two occasions, there were perfectly clear substitutions of hands, followed in one case by a fraudulently produced phenomenon which was obvious to me, on whose side it took place. The difference between the apparently genuine and the spurious phenomena struck me very forcibly at the time, and I felt that it would be quite impossible to confound the two.

The séance was, on the whole, a bad and disappointing one. In the first place, the medium insisted on almost total darkness during the greater part of the séance, whereas she had permitted very good light on both the previous occasions. In the next place, she held our hands *under* the table instead of upon its surface, as during the former séances. The position of the hands was often the most favourable for substitution. Moreover, the whole bearing and manner of the medium were different. Instead of her usual languid condition, she remained, during the time of the suspected

phenomena, quite bright and energetic, with no tendency, apparently, to go into trance, and was not in the least fatigued at the termination of the séance, as she had been on the two previous occasions. My own impression is that she was endeavouring to see how far she could carry fraud without detection,—to “test” us, in fact,—and to ascertain whether it would be necessary to produce genuine phenomena in the future. That, of course, is a mere supposition. But it is interesting to note in this connection that Prof. Morselli also discovered fraud during his *third* sitting.

Throughout the séance, the control of the left foot was not perfect. Towards the end three complete levitations of the small table took place, my hand resting flat upon the surface of the table, and the medium's hand just touching it. The small table stood to the left of the medium and only about a foot away from her. It was, however, too dark to see whether her foot touched it or not.<sup>1</sup> I pressed down firmly with my right hand, but the table went up in spite of this. The upward pressure must have been considerable. When pressing downwards, I noticed that the upward pressure came from the leg of the table nearest the medium, and not from its centre.

At the same time it is difficult to conceive how she could have reached so far with her left foot unperceived, and it is especially difficult to conceive this in the third levitation, when both our hands were completely removed from the table. It then appeared to rise up all by itself, and with no visible contact. We subsequently ascertained by experiment, that it was impossible (for us) to levitate the small table in this manner by one foot alone and without the assistance of the hands. During the above manifestations and immediately before them, the medium kept asking me if my foot control was good. I invariably replied that it was; and it was very good, *at those moments*. But during the actual levitation of the table, the control became very poor, and I could only feel the pressure of the toe of her foot. At this point the regular séance ended, and M., the stenographer, left.

We explained to the medium that the control of the left foot had not been good, whereupon she immediately insisted on repeating the experiment. She made me put my right foot across the toes of both her feet, and her left hand was held in my right, her right hand was held by F., and her head was clearly visible. The medium kept raising each foot in turn under mine, saying,

<sup>1</sup> On account of the shadow thrown by the séance table.—F., Feb. 11/09.

“One, two; one, two,” as she raised them. Yet despite all this, I did not feel that the control was perfect. She would count and raise her feet several times, and then, suddenly, I would feel only one foot, the right, and the left foot would be missing. I replied to her question by saying that the control was not good, whereupon I immediately felt both her feet under mine again. This happened several times. It seems only fair to add, however, that muscular movements almost invariably take place during the production of large phenomena, and these, when occurring in good light, have evidently no direct physical bearing upon their production. It is perhaps unfair to assume that they are necessarily evidence of fraud merely because they happen in the dark.

No movements of any evidential value took place, and after about ten minutes of futile attempts the séance was abandoned and the light turned up. The net result of the séance is to leave on my mind the impression that very skilful trickery had been employed at various times, but that fraud alone could not account for all the observed facts, while it seems absolutely inadequate to account for the phenomena in the former séances, which appear to me as remarkable as ever.

H. C.

[The above note is undated, but was written within a day or two of the séance.]

NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

On reading through, last night, the translation of the shorthand notes of the third séance, we were both surprised to find what an entirely different impression we had retained of what had taken place from that which we derived from the notes. All the more remarkable manifestations had receded in our memory, driven back by the certainty that the medium had been detected in fraud; and if, before reading the notes, we had been asked to give an account of the séance, we should certainly have said that it had been almost barren of results. This séance is largely of the same character as those of the Cambridge series. The light was, during a great part of it, very poor; the control of the feet was difficult; and her hands were often invisible, and in a position where substitution would be possible.

Further, the medium frequently resisted our attempts to hold her hands properly; and whereas, in the former séances, they had been almost constantly in view, or firmly grasped in ours, during

much of the third séance they were for ever moving about furtively in and over our hands, apparently seeking any opportunity that might be presented to get free. The shorthand notes do not show this, for while these manoeuvres were going on nothing happened, as will be seen from the long periods which elapsed without the production of any phenomena,—notwithstanding the occasional outbursts resembling a *feu de joie* at a firework display. On two occasions she succeeded in freeing her right hand. Only one of these appears in the notes, for though the release of the hand was each time perceived at once by C., on whose side it took place, he preferred to watch events silently; as on the first occasion it occurred no phenomenon followed it.

The introduction of the stocks apparatus had also a marked effect on the behaviour of the table. This, during the first two séances, had been in almost constant movement, and levitations, whole or partial, had followed one another closely. During the third séance, on the other hand, it remained motionless for long periods together, and the impression upon our minds was that the use of the apparatus had floored the medium. The notes, however, show that several complete levitations did, in point of fact, take place, which cannot be accounted for by any substitution of hands. Substitution of feet, even if it took place, could not have assisted the production of a levitation of the séance table guarded as it was by the stocks; besides which, two levitations took place while I held her feet and could see her knees under the table. The only other conceivable method by which the table, under the conditions, could have been lifted, would be by a hook under the skirting board that runs round the top of the table. A pull diagonally upwards with a hook so placed would have the effect of steadying the front legs of the table against the stocks, and would raise all its four legs from the ground. The obvious suggestion that Eusapia uses a hook can, however, only be made by some one who has not assisted at her better séances, and is of a cast with most of the other suggestions made by absent critics of her more remarkable phenomena. She certainly used no hook in the two previous séances. The conditions of light at the third were so bad that I cannot affirm, with certainty, that she did not use one then, and I prefer to come to no conclusion as regards these levitations.

There remain the touches on my hand and side, and the pulls on C.'s sleeves; also the movements of the curtain, the noises within the cabinet, and the levitations of the small table. The fraud and

the constant apparent attempt at fraud which had been noticed had so affected our minds that we had completely forgotten a great portion of these until we read the notes. It appears from the notes, however, that only the levitation of the small table can be accounted for by any manœuvres of substitution, whether of hands or feet. If we assume, therefore, for the present, that genuine phenomena exist, the conclusion to be drawn from the third séance appears to be that to which many other observers have previously come: namely, that on certain occasions Eusapia seeks to produce simple phenomena by the easiest method,—fraudulent substitution,—and when prevented from doing so, succeeds in producing far more difficult ones by some means unascertainable.

E. F., Nov. 28th, 1908.

SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

On re-reading the foregoing notes while preparing the report for press, I wish to state, in fairness to Eusapia, that in the light of subsequent séances, I, personally, am now disposed to give an entirely different interpretation to the incidents of this one. It is nevertheless a satisfaction to me that these notes exist as a record of our critical, indeed hostile state of mind. The first two séances had in fact left no enduring mark upon us. They had astonished us, puzzled us, vexed us. They had shown us that the problem presented by Eusapia's phenomena was not the simple matter which, before we witnessed them, we had, in the invincible conceit of every new critic of such things, supposed it. Conviction is, after all, an emotional and not an intellectual process; and the impression left by the first two séances was purely intellectual. The ordinary effect of the sudden confrontation of a fairly balanced mind with a merely bizarre fact is a reaction: the mind rejects it, refuses to consider it. And the more bizarre the fact, the stronger the reaction. If the possessor of such a mind were, for example, in the course of a walk down Piccadilly, to see a policeman levitated across a motor omnibus, no permanent impression as to the mutability of the laws of gravitation affecting policemen would remain with him. The emotional certainty produced by his long continued previous experience that policemen do not do such things would be stronger than any degree of intellectual certainty that this particular policeman did, and would presently efface it. And so it was with ourselves. Tables, we knew, or

thought we knew, do not go into the air by themselves; curtains do not bulge out without some mechanical agency; and although we saw them do so, we still refused to believe that they did. We preferred to believe that we had been deceived in some way unknown, that we had been hallucinated, or had wrongly observed. We doubted our senses rather than our experience; were guided, in fact, by our emotions rather than our observation. Hence, at this séance we hailed with a kind of relief the fact that Eusapia had been caught substituting one hand for the other, and we regarded all the incidents that followed through the atmosphere of suspicion which this discovery had fortified. The result was that not only did we colour up certain possibly quite innocent actions into almost clear evidence of fraud, but certain other interesting and indeed inexplicable phenomena, such as the outburst at 11.45, occurring in light III. which ensured the absolute visibility of her head, while her hands were bound and her feet separately accounted for, passed out of our memory completely.

Let me now consider the fraudulent action which produced on us such marked psychological consequences and see what it really amounted to. She approached her hands to one another, used part of her left hand held imperfectly by me to cover part of C.'s hand, raised her right hand from his and lifted it over her head to touch the curtain. C. not only heard the action by the cracking of her dress, but saw it. If the action was fraudulent in intent it was remarkably ill-done. She then replaced her hand; and presently again removed it, took hold of the curtain to her right, and pulled it, very obviously to C. (though not to me, as I was on the other side of her) over the table. We at once told her that she must not do this kind of thing and during the rest of the séances she apparently did not again attempt it, except on two occasions, once in the 11th séance, when, after making a similar substitution, she removed her left hand, in a light good enough to enable me (sitting on this occasion to her right) as well as the lady controlling on her left, at once to see it, waved it slowly in the air towards the curtain, and returned it; and once possibly in the 4th, in complete darkness, when I am not certain that in fact she did do it, and when, in any case, no phenomenon accompanied it.

We subsequently observed that it was a habit of hers occasionally to wish either to touch the curtain, or to put it over the séance table. With the exception of the cases above mentioned she invariably either

asked permission to do so, or called our attention to the fact that she did do so, a fact, for the rest, which was anyhow quite sufficiently obvious. I cannot explain why she wished to do these things, any more than I can explain many other items in her procedure, such as why she should wish to have a table, or why she should require a curtain at all. I find, in talking with friends, that when I mention the curtain, they inevitably say, "Ah, a curtain! Why a curtain? What a suspicious fact!" I agree that it may be suspicious, but it is not necessarily so. It is suspicious when used by a materializing medium who goes behind it, and, when a "spirit" comes out, refuses to allow spectators to ascertain whether he is himself still there. But in Eusapia's case, where she sits outside it, I cannot see that, given certain obvious precautions, it is necessarily suspicious. She says it helps to "concentrate the force." Perhaps it does. I do not know what the "force" is, nor what it requires to "concentrate" it. Nor does any one else. To a person ignorant of photography it is possible that the use by the photographer of a black cloth over his head would be suspicious. In dealing with an unknown force one can only judge empirically of the utility of certain conditions. That the curtain does have some bearing on the phenomena is clear, as nearly all of them seem to radiate from behind it. Eusapia appears to be *en rapport* with something within. And she constantly seems to experience the necessity of establishing this *rapport* by momentary contact with the curtain or by enveloping the table or part of herself in its folds. We never perceived, however, that the phenomena which followed this action had any normal relation to it whatever. I have come, therefore, to feel it possible that, *so far as our own series of experiments is concerned*, the cases of hand-substitution practised were innocent in intent, though fraudulent in appearance; that she wished to do what, after obtaining our previous consent, she otherwise frequently did,—touch the curtain or pull it over the table,—and did it, half automatically and without consulting us, though without any intention of producing a spurious phenomenon. It is necessary to say that never once, in the course of hundreds of phenomena, did we detect a single case of undoubted fraud, and it is my personal belief at present that though there were many phenomena which must be classed as non-evidential, there were in fact none which we should be justified in thinking to be probably spurious. I do not know how far C., who is now in America, or B., will endorse this opinion. But I think

it probable that C. will now admit that in his above note to this séance, in which he contemplates the possibility of Eusapia having produced the levitations of the small table with the foot which he was intently attempting to control, he did himself injustice as an observer; as he must also admit that in writing that the 'greater part of the séance took place in almost total darkness,' when as a matter of fact the darkness only endured for 38 minutes (10.24 to 11.2) out of a period of more than two hours, he did so under the influence of the psychological impression produced by Eusapia's behaviour rather than in accordance with the exact facts.

E. F., Feb. 12th, 1909.

#### SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

A few additional words are necessary from me in reply to F.'s note.

One of the most essential things to learn in connection with Eusapia's sittings is that there is on the medium's part a constant semi-automatic attempt to produce phenomena, which, if checked and controlled, will result merely in a synchronous movement of the hands or feet; but which, if allowed full play, will result in an automatic movement, which might well be mistaken for conscious fraud. *That* was the interpretation we put upon all such actions of hers in our early séances,—perhaps naturally enough. Looking back on the séances in the light of what I can only think a fuller knowledge of the medium and her phenomena, I must say that I am disposed to construe these acts of hers in very much the same way as F.; and that I now consider my earlier hyper-critical attitude unwarranted. Having been convinced by later séances that genuine phenomena *do* unquestionably take place, I think it probable that many of the earlier phenomena, put down by us as "non-evidential," were in point of fact genuine. Still, of course, for purposes of conversion, the phenomena must be regarded as valueless, and cannot be taken into account when discussing the séances.

Briefly, then, I wish to say that I am now disposed to retract and repent my earlier critical, indeed hostile attitude; and think that we should all have obtained better and more conclusive phenomena had we been less severe with the medium, and known better how to conduct her séances. When one is convinced of the reality of the phenomena, the fascinating study of their causes, nature and

conditions becomes possible. That is the point from which I should now study the facts, were I again to observe them. But at the period under review, we were still uncertain whether such facts occurred at all, or whether they were one and all produced by fraud.

H. C., May 23, 1909.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE IV.

*November 29th, 1908.*

Although the stocks apparatus in use at the last séance had rendered impossible any action of the medium's feet or knees in levitating the table, it did not exclude action of the hands, assuming that she could succeed in freeing them, or the use of a hook attached to her body and bearing under the skirting board round the top of the table. In fact, the apparatus had the effect of actually facilitating a total levitation, if either of these suppositions be granted. In order, therefore, still further to obviate the necessity of continuous control, and to meet possible objections that it had not been efficient, we pasted newspaper round the front and part of the sides of the table,<sup>1</sup> reaching from the top to the knee board forming the top of the stocks, and also fastened Eusapia's feet to and between the stocks, leaving a play of about 3 to 4 inches laterally. In these conditions it was impossible to lift the table except by the use of both hands, one on each side of the top; in other words, except in the way in which a table might ordinarily be lifted, or by thrusting one hand below the line of paper inside the tube of the stocks and seizing the leg, an easily detected manœuvre.

There were present, besides C. and F., Professors Bottazzi and Galeotti of the Naples University, Signor De Santi, a friend of Eusapia's, and Signori Morelli and Falanga, two friends of his invited in accordance with the circumstances described in F.'s note below. At the beginning, C. controlled on the medium's left; F. on her right. Eusapia showed much dislike to the precautions taken and especially to the paper. She also seemed in bad health, and in the early part of the séance coughed constantly. The table movements for a long time were feeble and non-evidential, except one tilt at 9.39 p.m. which was

<sup>1</sup>See photograph, p. 375.

without contact and in good light. The light was constantly, either in obedience to raps asking for less light or at the medium's request, lowered down and up again, during the first 25 minutes, and was eventually, at 9.54, reduced to nothing except the shaded photographic lamp on the stenographer's table, *i.e.* practically complete darkness. Shortly afterwards she asked F. to change with Prof. Bottazzi. Then followed a complete levitation. It is unfortunate that owing to the general conversation which constantly went on at this séance, the notes fail to report the position of the medium's right hand, though Prof. Bottazzi always expressed himself satisfied with his control. The prevailing darkness renders the evidence for this and a subsequent repetition of the same phenomenon unsatisfactory. Having performed two levitations, Eusapia showed her annoyance at the paper by tearing it, and the table was reversed. She then made C. and Prof. Galeotti change places.

Except as taken in conjunction with others held under better conditions, the first part of this séance, by reason of the darkness and the insufficient reporting of the control, must be disregarded for evidential purposes, though an exception may fairly be made for certain individual phenomena, *e.g.* the appearance of something white in better light at 10.55 p.m. and 11.2: the transportation of the small table from the cabinet over the medium's shoulder partly on to the séance table at 11.9 p.m. The action of head and hands is clearly eliminated by the control described: the left foot alone remains as a possible normal agency, the feet having by this time been released. Owing to the balance and weight of the table, it seems to us, after practice, an impossible feat to perform in this way, even supposing that Prof. Galeotti could fail to notice the removal of the left foot from his right, and the strong effort necessary to put her foot behind her chair between the curtains and raise the table so high with it. The improbability of this is also greatly increased by the fact that the small table was lifted in this way three times in seven minutes.

At 11.35 Prof. Bottazzi and also Eusapia's friend and the two gentlemen who accompanied him left. F. resumed control of the medium's right, Prof. Galeotti remaining on her left. Then followed some very prolonged and remarkable partial levitations of the table, of which, however, on account of the

poor light and the possibility of at least some of them being merely effects of balance (though, at the time, this certainly appeared not to be the case), we prefer not to offer any opinion. A very remarkable complete levitation under apparently perfect conditions of control, while C. was under the table holding the medium's feet, her hands being well accounted for, and all standing up, occurred at 12.5 a.m.

At 12.9 an apparent attempt to make a substitution of hands is reported. F. was, however, by no means sure of this, and nothing followed. Shortly afterwards, but under conditions of apparently complete control, Prof. Galeotti experienced a series of touches. The head control is, it is true, not mentioned, but we are convinced that these touches were not and could not have been thus produced, the position of the medium's head being, even in this faint light, clearly visible. At 12.16 a partial levitation of a remarkable kind took place, and at 12.18 a series of movements in the cabinet followed by an attempt of the tambourine to jump from the floor to the medium's right on to F.'s lap, which appeared quite unaccountable by normal means. After a further series of movements of objects in the cabinet, the séance ended about 12.35 a.m.

#### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE IV.

*November 29th, 1908.*

*Present: Eusapia. C. to left of medium. F. to right.*

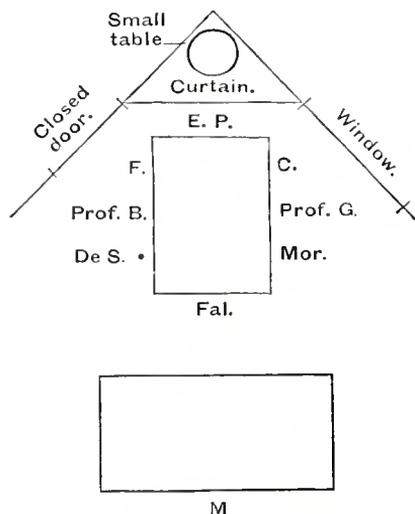
*To right of F., Prof. Bottazzi, and Signor De Santi sitting away from table. Signor Balanga at end opposite medium.*

*To left of C., Prof. Galeotti and Signor Morelli. M. at shorthand table as before. Lights as at Séance III. except as noted in shorthand report.*

*Small table placed behind curtain with various objects on it: guitar, tambourine, flageolet, toy piano, etc.*

*The legs of the medium are fastened very securely by a rope between the stocks, with no play except two or three inches laterally between the stocks. A newspaper has been fastened around the table over the top, down as far as the upper board of the stocks, so as to render absolutely impossible the use, either of a hand or a hook or wire, for the levitations of the table.*

9.30 p.m. Séance begins.



9.31 p.m. *Light II.* Then *Light I.*, plus crack in door.

### Light I.

9.34 p.m. *Medium* is apparently not in good health, and is certainly in a bad temper. She suffers from violent paroxysms of coughing.

Various raps of an interesting but non-evidential character, owing to the fact that her hands were on the table.

9.37 p.m. Note by M. "I cannot see feet." [Prevented by the others who sat between him and the end of the table. F., Nov. 30/08.]

9.38 p.m. More raps of a non-evidential character.

9.39 p.m. F. The table tilts towards me.

C. No one's hands were on the table at the time.

9.40 p.m. F. More non-evidential movements.

9.41 p.m. F. Various tilts, but all these are non-evidential.

9.42 p.m. *Light III.*

### Light III.

9.44 p.m. More movements, still non-evidential.

9.44 p.m. *Light II.* with crack in door and photographic lamp unshaded.

**Light II.**

9.44½ p.m. *Light III. with crack in door and photographic lamp unshaded.*

**Light III.**

9.45 p.m. More slight movements, still non-evidential.

*Note by M. "I can just see the medium's head, and can see the table and all the other heads plainly."*

9.46 p.m. *Raps ask for less light. Medium will not allow it.*

9.47 p.m. *All sitters move back from table.*

*F. Medium asks if she may touch the curtain, which she does with her left hand, C.'s right being in hers.*

9.48 p.m. *Light IV.*

**Light IV.**

9.51 p.m. C. More slight movements of non-evidential character.

9.53 p.m. *No electric light, crack in door shut. Photographic lamp shaded.*

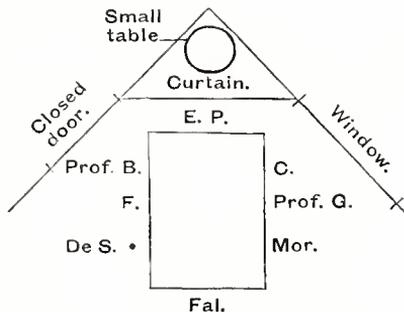
**Light V.**

*Note by M. "I can only just see the two heads nearest me."*

9.54 p.m. *Light IV. No crack and lamp shaded.*

**Light IV.**

9.54½ p.m. *Medium asks F. and Prof. Bottazzi to change places, which they do. C. retains control of left side.*



9.55 p.m. *No light except photo. lamp [heavily shaded. F. Mar. 1/09].*

**Light VI.**

9.58 p.m. Note by M. "I can see nothing."

C. I hold medium's left hand securely on the table in my right hand.

Prof. B. I have my left hand on medium's knees.

Partial levitation of the table [lasting for some time. F. Mar. 1/09].

F. There is no contact with any one along this end of the table.

C. I move her hand to and fro across the table, showing that her left wrist is not pressed upon the table.

F. I have felt all along the edge of the table and there is no contact with any of the sitters. The right furthest leg of the table is now also off the ground.

Complete levitation of the table.

[Having been removed from the place of controller of medium, I occupied myself with guarding the end of the table furthest from medium. The levitation, which began with only a tilt off two legs, then off three, and finally became a levitation of all four legs, lasted long enough for me to be able to pass my hand several times around the furthest end of the table and down the legs and verify that there was no contact with any of the sitters. Of this I am certain. F., Nov. 30/08.]

[Owing to general confusion, the shorthand report fails to indicate the position of medium's right hand. F. and C., Nov. 31/08.]

10.6 p.m. F. Complete levitation of the table.

C. Of a non-evidential character.

10.7 p.m. Various tilts, still of a non-evidential character.

*Medium tears the paper pasted round table.*

*She asks for more light.*

10.5 p.m. *Light No. IV.*

**Light IV.**

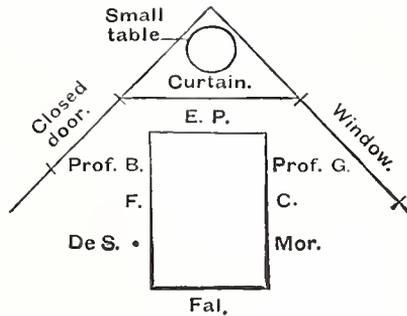
10.10 p.m. *Medium says, 'This paper is antipathetic to me,' and the table is accordingly turned round so that the ends are reversed.*

**[Light IV.]**

*Light No. IV. shaded by two thicknesses of thin brown tissue paper.*

**Light IV.**

*10.12 p.m. Medium asks C. to change places with Prof. Galcotti.*



*F. In the present condition of light I can see both the hands and the face of the medium clearly.*

*C. So can I.*

*10.16 p.m. Medium asks if she can touch curtain again, which she does, holding Prof. G.'s hands.*

*10.17 p.m. She makes gestures and raps follow.*

*10.18 p.m. Raps ask for less light. No electric light, only photographic lamp.*

**Light V.**

*Note by M. "I can hardly see anything at all. I can just see the edge of the table nearest me."*

*C. The medium's left hand is held on her knees.*

[Being no longer in control of the medium, we had to ascertain it from controllers, and dictate as best we could, through the general confusion, to the stenographer. As two or three of the sitters talked incessantly, it was extremely difficult to get these notes correctly reported. Further, the controllers but rarely stated what the control was, and we almost invariably had to question them to ascertain the particulars. F. and C., Nov. 30/08.]

## [Light V.]

10.25 p.m. Prof. G. *I have the medium's left hand in my right hand.*

Prof. B. *The medium says that the curtain is moving.*  
*F. But it is too dark for any one to see.*

Prof. B. My left hand is on legs of medium and my right hand on right hand of medium all the time.

The curtain has blown out over the table.

Prof. G. *I have the curtain on my right hand in which I hold her hand, she makes movements with her fingers.*

F. *Her head is invisible to me.*

Prof. B. *I have my head touching the head of the medium.*

Prof. G. I was touched through the curtain on my right arm.

10.27 p.m. *Medium says that she wants to release her feet, which have become numb. Medium's feet are therefore released, having been found still firmly secured, by F. and C.*

F. The medium makes movements in the direction of the curtain with her right hand, and nothing happens.

C. (to Profs. B. and G.) *How far apart are your hands?*

Prof. G. *I do not know.*

C. *Medium's left hand is held on the table by Prof. G.*

F. *ascertains that right hand is also properly held.*

Prof. G. *This hand is all right.*

10.32 p.m. F. *The medium makes gestures with Prof. B.'s hand up in the air.*

Prof. B. *I have the right hand of the medium in my left hand up in the air.*

Prof. G. *I hold the hand of the medium in my hand in the middle of the table.*

Things tumble about on small table in cabinet.

Prof. G. The medium has her foot on my foot.

## [Light V.]

Prof. G. Something touched my arm. Something has moved under my chair. Something has again moved under my chair.

Prof. G. She holds my fingers well.

*10.37 p.m. F. Note that the position of heads is unknown. [Also position of right foot not stated. F., Mar. 10/09.]*

*Note by M. "Medium gasps and moans."*

Prof. B. I have been touched on my left shoulder.

C. to Prof. B. Can you see her head?

Prof. B. No.

10.39 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

Prof. B. The table is coming up, right hand held as before.

*Note by M. "Medium taps violently with her feet."*

## Light [? IV.]

*[It is evident from M.'s and C.'s remarks just below that the light was here raised, but in the general confusion the fact failed to be noted. F., Mar. 1/09.]*

Another complete levitation of the table.

Prof. B. Medium's right hand was on my shoulder.

Prof. G. Medium's left hand was on the table.

Note by M. The table rose up about two feet away from medium.

10.41 p.m. Note by M. "Medium turns towards the curtain and says "Andiamo," ("come along") and I could see the curtains part in the middle."

*F. The medium places the curtain over her left arm.*

*C. Both hands are now visible: also her head and face are clearly visible.*

*10.50 p.m. Light turned up. [We again failed to note the degree of light. F., Mar. 1/09.]*

**Light** [? III.]

10.51 p.m. *Medium asks for a rest.*

10.55 p.m. *Prof. B. She is still holding my hand.*

Prof. G. A white thing came out.

F. A white thing shot out from the cabinet on the window side of the curtain [*i.e.* behind Prof. G.] bringing the white window curtain out with it, and then shot back again very rapidly.

[I saw this hand. C., Nov. 30/08.] [Query, a hand? F., Mar. 1/09.]

[*The light was good enough to enable me to see this clearly from the other side of the table, i.e. about 4 or 5 feet from the window curtain. F., Mar. 1/09.*]

Prof. G. My right hand was held by medium's left on the board.

Prof. B. I am holding her right hand close to my corner of the table.

11 p.m. *The medium asks if she may touch the small table.*

11.2 p.m. Prof. G. I saw a white thing come from the curtain, near the floor.

At C.'s request C. verifies that medium is now holding G.'s hand on the board under the curtain [which was over her left arm].

Prof. B. I am holding medium's right hand on the table.

11.3 p.m. *F. The medium releases her right hand and raps with it on the small table inside the cabinet.*

11.4 p.m. F. She makes gestures with her right hand, and the small table moves a little.

Prof. G. My hand was held by her left hand all that time, on the board.

11.9 p.m. F. The little table jumps strongly out from between the curtains right on to the left corner of the séance table, and remains there.

Prof. G. She is holding my right hand very tight.

F. Was her arm motionless?

Prof. G. Yes.

F. Her head was quite visible to me. Her right arm was on Prof. B.'s shoulder.

[Light ? III.]

F. All the time while we are talking the small table has been hanging on the left-hand corner of the séance table. In reply to my question as to what is supporting it Prof. G. says "Nothing."

11.11 p.m. *About two minutes afterwards it falls back.*

F. She pushed it and it fell down to the floor.

11.13 p.m. *Note by M. "I set the small table upright, meantime feeling all around it, and found no attachment of any kind, and replaced it about six inches away from medium."*

F. The small table has again jumped on to the left-hand corner of the séance table.

Prof. G. She is holding my hand very tightly.

F. to Prof. G. Is your arm supporting the table now?

Prof. G. No; just touching it.

F. Her right hand is visible on the table; her head is visible.

*F. Now the table has fallen down again after being up for about a minute.*

11.14 p.m. F. The small table is again coming up.

F. The medium's right hand is holding Prof. B.'s hand visibly above the séance table.

11.16 p.m. F. The small table has again jumped on to the séance table.

11.20 p.m. F. to Prof. G. "Are your hands still on the board?" [The knee-board of the stocks was hidden from me by the table. F., Mar. 10/09.]

G. "Yes."

F. Her face was quite visible all the time.

Prof. B. I was holding her right hand.

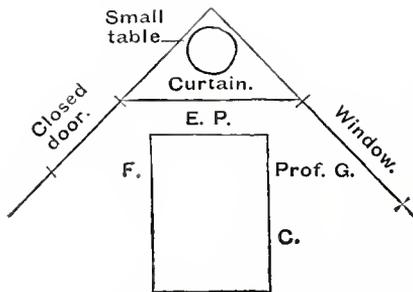
[On being questioned further to-day about this series of phenomena, Prof. G. insisted that his arm did not support the small table whilst it was apparently hanging on the corner of the séance table, and that while so hanging it appeared to be constantly trying to push itself further up. F. and C., Nov. 30/08.]

[In spite of the fact that Prof. G. says that the small table was not resting on his shoulder, I found, during the second levitation,

## [Light ? III.]

after ascertaining that the legs and feet of the table were free from support, that the top of the table was clearly supported by the séance table and the shoulders of the medium and Prof. G., as, on passing my hand between Prof. G.'s shoulder and the top of the table, I found that there was considerable pressure exerted by the table upon Prof. G., and when this apparent support was removed the table fell to the floor. C., Nov. 30/08.]

*11.35 p.m. F. resumes his position, and Prof. G. retains control of left. C. to G.'s left. Stocks are removed from the table and all the other sitters leave except Prof. G.*



*F. Her right hand is holding my left hand.*

*Prof. G. Her left foot is on my right foot.*

*No electric light, and only night light in photographic lamp.*

**Light V.**

C. Tilts of table resumed, interesting but non-evidential.

F. Various interesting tilts, which, owing to the bad light, must be considered as non-evidential.

*Long rest, during the whole of which the medium was, however, under our constant supervision.*

*11.55 p.m. F. The medium has drawn the curtain to the right and dropped it partly across her chair.*

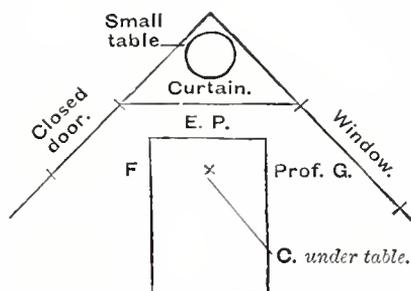
11.57 p.m. Medium and all sitters stand up and the table tilts on the two legs furthest from her and remains in that position for a considerable time, during which

F. My left hand is outstretched and between the medium and the table, the top of which was only just touched with the tips of

## [Light V.]

her fingers. I am passing my right hand around the rim of the table. I have put my hand completely under the leg of the table, and I am pressing down against the table with the medium's hand in mine. It twirls about on one leg, I am pressing with considerable force. [And it resisted my pressure for some considerable time. F., Nov. 30/08.]

[C. now went under the table to hold medium's feet. F., Mar. 10/09.]



12 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

The table falls back and again raises itself up in the air on one leg.

F. Medium's hands just touching the top, and she is standing up, and I can see them.

C. I now grasp both her two feet in my two hands whilst under the table. [I was constantly moving my head to and fro along the rim of the table so that, had the medium introduced a hand or other means of attachment underneath the table, I must have felt it with my head during one of these movements. C., Dec. 1/08.]

F. Her hands are flat on the top of the table. Only the fingers are touching now, and sometimes she takes off one hand and sometimes the other so that only one finger touches it at a time. Now both hands are right off the table and the table falls back. I pressed against it, and it resisted for about two seconds. [My impression is that this partial levitation on one leg lasted for about a minute, and that it was not merely balanced on one leg. F., Dec. 1/08.]

C. I am holding her two feet in my hands.

## [Light V.]

12.5 a.m. Complete levitation of the table.

C. I hold both her ankles with my two hands.

F. I was holding her right hand in the middle of the table.

Prof. G. I was holding her left hand on the rim of the table.

F. Prof. G.'s left hand was on my right hand [across the table].

12.7 a.m. Note by M. "Large movements of the table, I can just see the table up in the air."

[After this, I believe I noticed an attempt at substitution of hands, from which, however, nothing followed. F., Dec. 1/08.] [I mentioned this at the time but it was not noted. F., Mar. 1/09.]

*F. She has now put both her legs astride around my left leg.*

C. The table tilts on the two legs furthest from her.

F. My hand is with hers against the corner of the table, her hand being over my hand. The table stands up on the two legs farthest from the medium, and the table legs do not touch her. My arm is between her and the table. [She stood at arm's length from the table. F., Dec. 1/08.]

Prof. G. I was touched on the back of my hand. and on my arm.

F. I am holding medium's right hand on mine just on a line with medium's waist about three feet away from Prof. G.

Prof. G. I was holding one finger of medium.

Prof. G. I was touched on the back of my hand, and a second touch on my arm near the shoulder.

F. I am absolutely certain of the foot-control.

12.13 a.m. F. The table is up on its two legs all this time.

F. (to Prof. G.) Is your hand resisting on the table?

Prof. G. Yes.

F. I am pressing down against the table. The table falls. [It is quite possible that this long partial levitation which lasted some 3 or 4 minutes may have been, and doubtless in part was, a kind of "Annie Abbott" effect of balance. F., Dec. 1/08.]

F. She was riding cock-horse on my left leg all the time with her two feet on each side of my foot.

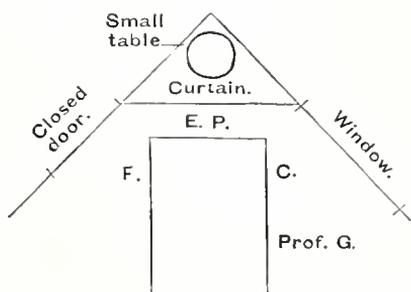
## [Light V.]

Prof. G. I have been touched on my back.

F. I am holding her right hand in the whole of mine.

Prof. G. She was holding my left hand.

12.16 a.m. C. resumes control of left side of medium.



C. I am now holding medium's left hand securely in my right.

C. The table is going up on its two legs furthest from me.

C. I am holding medium's hand over the table.

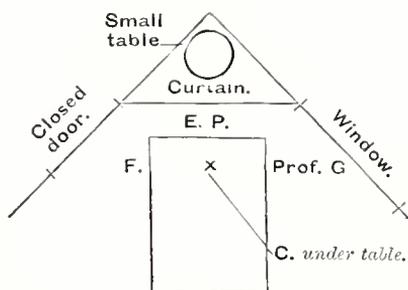
F. I am standing entirely between the medium and the table.

C. My right leg is between the medium and the table.

F. The medium still cock-horses on my leg.

C. now goes beneath the table and grasps the medium's ankles in his two hands.

Prof. G. resumes control of the left side.



C. I am securely holding the medium's two ankles in my hands.

F. Now her right hand has just touched the table, my arm is between her and the table.

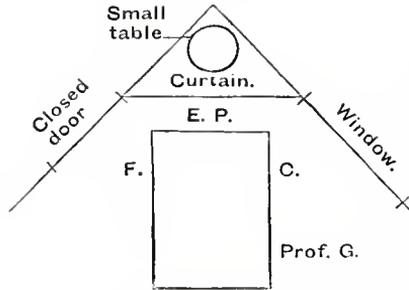
Prof. G. Her left hand is off the table entirely.

12.17 a.m. Medium says she is tired.

## [Light V.]

[*Meantime the table has fallen back, but it is not reported in the notes, Dec. 1/08.*] [*Apparently a levitation of some kind had occurred but was not noted. F., Mar. 1/09.*]

12.18 a.m. *Medium now sits down.*



*C. She puts her left foot on my right.* [*Meantime C. had resumed his position. Dec. 1/08.*]

*F. And I have her right foot on mine outside the table leg.*

Movements of objects in cabinet.

*C. I was firmly holding medium's left hand on the table.*

*F. She holds my finger towards the curtain.*

*C. I am now holding medium's left hand on her left thigh.*

*C. Movements in cabinet.*

*C. The medium had her left foot on my right foot and kicked it about, asking me to let my foot accompany it.*

Movements in cabinet.

*C. She had her left foot on my right motionless.*

Movements in cabinet again.

*F. She is still holding my right hand miles away from C.*

*C. Her left hand is on her thigh.*

*F. Her foot is well to the right outside the leg of the table.*

12.22 a.m. *Movements in cabinet.*

*C. I am holding medium's left hand on the table, with mine, firmly. Left foot on mine motionless.*

*F. Medium's right hand on my left, and I can feel the thumb all the time. Her right foot was kicking about with mine.*

## [Light V.]

Small table in cabinet falls over.

F. As she kicks with her right foot on mine.

12.23 a.m. F. The tambourine has jumped on to my left knee [and fell down again. F., Dec. 1/08].

C. Medium held my right hand firmly and raised it towards the cabinet.

F. Her foot was still on mine.

[*The tambourine had been lying on the floor. F., Dec. 1/08.*]

*Medium says she is tired.*

C. I am touched on the right arm.

C. I am holding medium's left hand on the table by the thumb and wrist. I was touched on the hip. Her left foot was on mine.

F. I could see her face.

*F. Medium now takes both my hands.*

F. The small table has come up near my lap.

*12.25 a.m. C. Medium holds all our hands in both her hands. Her left foot is on my right. Her left arm rests on my right arm. With my right hand I am also holding medium's left hand. F. I am sure of her right foot.*

*12.27 a.m. C. Her left foot is now on my right, firmly. F. And her right foot is on my left foot.*

12.28 a.m. Movements in cabinet.

C. With her left hand medium holds my right about a foot from the table.

*12.30 a.m. Medium says she wants to rest; an intermission of about two minutes.*

12.32 a.m. Things in cabinet move about.

F. The small table falls over to my left.

## [Light V.]

[*There is evidently a lapse in the notes, as it is not stated how the small table had got upright again. I think I must have picked it up when it approached me. F., Mar. 1/09.*]

F. Her right foot is absolutely certainly on my left foot. I am holding her right hand motionless on the table.

C. Her left foot was thoroughly on my right foot. Her left hand was held by my right about two feet above the table, and she made a gesture with it in the direction of the small table, which was on her right side.

[I think that the small table must have been within reach of her elbow, but I felt absolutely no motion of her arm. F., Dec. 1/08.]

## NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

The general impression left on my mind by this séance was one of uncertainty and general irritation, due more, however, to the fact that we were not ourselves controlling during the actual production of the phenomena than to the character of the phenomena themselves. Had we been controlling, we should certainly have considered the séance a remarkable one; but, absurd as it may appear, we did not feel the same degree of confidence in the results as if we had been controlling the hands and feet ourselves. Doubtless this was partly due to the extremely poor light upon which Eusapia insisted; partly to the difficulty of extracting descriptions of the control from her holders; partly to the constant talking of one or more of the other sitters, who sat at the far end of the circle. It is perhaps excusable that under these conditions, we should not feel the same degree of confidence in the results as we might otherwise have done.

Some of the phenomena that took place at this séance, especially towards the end, were certainly remarkable. It is of great interest to note that all the best phenomena were obtained *after* Eusapia's friends had left, and when only Prof. Galeotti and F. and myself remained. When F. and I were controlling the right and left sides, respectively, the very best phenomena of all took place. It is hardly necessary to point out that such a state of things is precisely what we should not expect, had the medium resorted to fraud, or had her friends been in collusion with her. Under the very best conditions of control the very best phenomena of all occurred. This would seem to confirm most strongly the conclusion to which I

have been driven by a study of Eusapia, viz.: that so long as suspicion of the medium's honesty is not openly manifested, the closer the contact and the more perfect the control, the better will be the results.

H. C., Dec. 7th, 1908.

NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

If Eusapia's psychology is a puzzle to us, we find that our own is scarcely less so. The mythopoeic tendency of the mind appears to act with us inversely. Instead of the marvellous becoming exaggerated in our memory, we discover that the slightest unfavourable elements tend to obliterate the recollection of it altogether. For this reason, except for the evidence of the notes, the fourth séance has left in our minds no enduring impression of any phenomena of interest whatever. The reason for this is as follows: Eusapia had told me that if we really wished to see higher manifestations of materializations, etc., we should have to provide ourselves with a larger circle, and should include in it someone who was accustomed to her methods, who could direct the séance and could supply the necessary sympathetic "current." She mentioned, as one possessing a "current" beyond reproach, a friend of hers, a chemist, who would, if asked, bring two of his friends, in conjunction with whom surprising results had been obtained. Her argument was this: If full materializations took place, while we should sacrifice proper scientific control of the minor phenomena, we should be favoured with evidence of such a kind as would obviate the necessity of detailed control altogether.

We accordingly visited the chemist to make a preliminary inspection. He proved to be a person of cultivated intelligence, and appeared possessed of a thoroughly reasonable temper. He said that while he thought it would be better that we should first come to some conclusion as to the possession by Eusapia of some supernormal gifts by experiments of our own, and alone, he would be quite willing, if we wished him to do so, to come himself and to bring his friends, and see if he could assist in the production of the "higher phenomena." Under the glamour of his account of these, we decided to set aside scientific caution and accept his offer, and we further invited Professors Bottazzi and Galeotti, Professors of Physiology and Pathology respectively at the Naples University, who had conducted, with the utmost scientific elaboration, a number of sittings with Eusapia, and were much interested in her case. We thus had an addition of five to our usual number.

After a short time Eusapia requested the Professors to undertake the control in our places. Owing to their unfamiliarity with our method of dictating, and to a natural hesitancy in doing so in a foreign language, but owing chiefly to the loquacity of the chemist's two friends, who talked loudly throughout the sitting, and to the fact that the light was lowered gradually to the merest glimmer, the shorthand writer was presently reduced to a state of despair, ourselves to one of exasperation. The table had been placed in the stocks, Eusapia's feet tied elaborately, paper had been so adjusted at her end that a fraudulent levitation seemed impossible. In the course of the séance Eusapia complained that the paper worried her, and the table was accordingly turned round. Of course, we regarded this as suspicious: we again believed we had cornered her. The discord of the proceedings was complete, and at their termination we were fully under the impression that practically nothing had occurred, until after the departure of all except Prof. Galeotti, when many remarkable levitations followed one another rapidly. On reading the notes we were greatly surprised to find that two full levitations of the table had taken place *before* it was turned round. For strict evidential purposes, these levitations, owing to the presence of Eusapia's friends, should perhaps not be relied upon. I have every reason, however, both ocular and experimental and otherwise, for believing that these gentlemen were in no way concerned with the production of these phenomena. It is also noteworthy that, with the exception of these two levitations and those of the small table, all the more interesting phenomena took place after their departure.

Nevertheless, not only for strictly evidential purposes, but also so far as the progress of our own convictions, in whatever direction, is concerned, I fear that we must write down this séance as wasted.

E. F., Dec. 4th, 1908.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE V.

*December 2nd, 1908.*

This was the first séance attended by Baggally, who had come out from England in consequence of a telegram inviting him to do so. At the request of the shorthand writer, Meeson, the attendance of Mr. Gibson, a friend of his, resident in Naples, hitherto unknown to the medium, was also invited.

In order to provide a more gradual diminution of light, and to lessen the chances of having to sit in almost complete darkness, as had occurred at the 3rd and 4th séances, a new lighting arrangement was adopted. The original No. I. light, (*i.e.* the ordinary light in the room, which during séances I. and II. had been shaded with 3 thicknesses of tissue paper, and at the 3rd and 4th was not used at all), was discarded, and in its place the former No. II. light, shaded with one thickness of tissue paper, was substituted. The light was somewhat less than the former No. I. thrice shaded, but it was still possible to read the Baedeker and Italian dictionary at our places at the table, though with some difficulty, while from the furthest end of the room, distant about 13 ft., the face of a person and its varying expression, closing or opening of eyes, etc., was distinguishable. The No. II. light was the former No. III. (see Séance III., p. 378). Nos. III. and IV. were two ruby glass bulbs of 110 and 140 volts respectively. The medium objected to the red glare of the former, and it was not used at this séance, while light No. IV. which prevailed during a great part of the séance, gave a light sufficiently strong for C., seated about 4 feet from the medium, to see her features distinctly.

No apparatus to guard the table was used, nor was the medium tied in any way, yet there was only one total levitation of the séance table, and that a non-evidential one, towards the end of the séance. The phenomena were of a different class, and showed a progression.

From 9.50, 6 minutes after the séance began, till 10.37, there was a series of partial levitations of the table of a very remarkable character, often very prolonged, the table rising on one or two legs, frequently without any contact on the part of the medium, and remaining tilted at an angle, sometimes resisting downward pressure of considerable force, against which it rose in an elastic kind of manner. See the shorthand report, especially at 10.32, when C. was holding the medium's feet at her request (she having apparently become annoyed at his obviously suspicious attitude) under the table.

From 10.37 to 10.44 a series of movements of the right curtain occurred: hitherto, except on the occasion at Séance III. when the medium herself pulled the right curtain over the

table after making substitution of hands, it had always been the left curtain which moved.

From 10.52 onwards there were a series of movements of the small table and of other objects behind the curtain, culminating at 11.8 by the small table striking B. on the shoulder and upsetting completely, the medium being rigorously held, visible and motionless.

At 11.10 an entirely fresh phenomenon occurred, viz. the appearance over the medium's head, from between the two curtains, of a hand, dead white in colour. It came somewhat slowly out, palm downwards, then clenched its fingers and withdrew again between the curtains, the medium's own hands being held separately and distinctly by B. and F.

At 11.18 a black head with large features shot rapidly out, apparently from the further side of the right curtain.

At 11.22 the small table in the cabinet again began to move, and presently came over the medium's right arm and landed on the séance table, both the medium's hands and legs being under control and her head visible.

At 11.28, the small table having been replaced on the floor by C. outside the curtain to the left of B., it made a series of movements fully described in the shorthand report, which should be referred to.

At 11.38 another new phenomenon occurred, viz. the production of something solid and tangible within the curtain, like a hand, which, while C. held his own hand against the curtain two feet above the medium's head, pressed against it from within, at intervals through a space of about 10 minutes. The medium, while this was going on, was lying, apparently in a state of deep trance, in F.'s arms, and her hands were held separately by F. and B.

At 11.51 the small table, which had receded again behind the curtain near B., to the right of the medium, was suddenly levitated over her head and came down on the séance table to her left, between her and F., her hands being held, her legs and feet separately controlled, and her head visible and motionless.

At 12.03 a further series of partial levitations of the séance table, including one total levitation under not very good evidential conditions, occurred, and the séance terminated at

12.12. At its close, the medium appeared extremely exhausted, and remained for some time in a semi-trance-like state. During this, she called attention to a breeze, which apparently issued from a scar under her hair on the left side of her brow. Of this singular incident a fuller description will be found in the shorthand report and in the notes.

SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE V.

*December 2nd, 1908.*

*Arrangement of objects in the cabinet: Small table, standing. Little stool to left and behind medium in cabinet. Tambourine on floor and to left of medium. Plate of wetted clay on floor and to left of medium, both inside the cabinet. Bell hung up on wall by a string at a distance of 6' 2" from floor inside cabinet in the middle slightly to the left. Another tambourine hung up on wall about 6' 6" from ground inside cabinet (right side) with the guitar hung on the left side of cabinet at a distance of 6' 0" from the ground.*

*Light 1, being the former Light 2 [i.e. 150 volt, white], shaded with one thickness of thin tissue paper. Light 2, being the former Light 3 [i.e. 220 volt, white]. Light 3, a new 110 volt ruby glass lamp. Medium does not like this light [which gave a brilliant red glare]. Light 4, a new 150 volt ruby glass lamp.*

*A red electric lamp, closely shaded so that no light falls on the medium and hardly any into the room, has been obtained for the stenographer in place of the photographic lamp.*

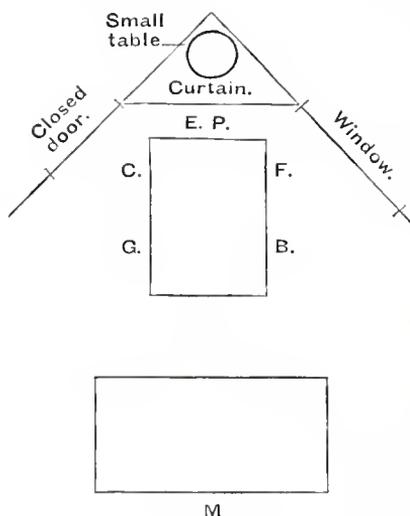
*At a distance of 13 feet, using Light I, F. can distinguish the kind of expression on the face of a person sitting in the medium's place. There is less light than at the first séance, but we can still read the Baedeker and the dictionary.*

*Present: F., C., B., and Gibson. M., stenographer, opposite medium, at separate table.*

*The use of the stocks has been discarded. Use of newspaper on big table discarded. Chairs are all straw-seated. [Hitherto only the medium had had a straw chair. She said it was desirable that no stuff chairs should be used.]*

## Positions.

9.44 p.m. *Séance* began, *Light 1*. Medium's feet are not bound. She did not look into the cabinet on entering room.

**Light I.**

9.50 p.m. F. Movements of table begin. Raps on the top of the table.

9.52 p.m. Medium made three gestures over table and three raps followed.

F. Her left foot is on my right, and not touching the leg of the table.

C. Right foot on my left, and not touching the table.

[Medium's right hand was under mine under the table. I felt slight movements of her right hand, possibly sufficient to account for these raps. C., Dec. 3/08.]

9.53 p.m. Table tilts towards C.

C. The table tilts on the two left legs. I press down firmly on the table, which refuses to go down for some time.

F. Her left hand was on the left corner of the table, free; my right hand was on her two knees. Her left foot on my right foot.

10.5 p.m. Four raps meaning "Talk."

10.12 p.m. *Light 2* and *M's light*.

**Light II.**

10.13 p.m. Table tilts towards F.

F. I am pressing down on the table and it resists in an elastic kind of way,—and about three seconds afterwards the table fell back.

F. I have her left foot quite clearly. My right hand was underneath the left leg of the table. There was contact with the skirt, but I could put my right hand up and down between the leg of the table and the skirt.

[I was watching the medium closely while F. was passing his hand in between her leg and the leg of the table, and noticed that she seemed to suffer each time F. passed his hand between her leg and the leg of the table, and drew in her breath quickly as though it gave her pain. C., Dec. 3/08.]

Partial levitation on the two legs away from medium.

F. Both hands were off the table at the time the table went up and were clenched at a distance of about 3 or 4 inches from the table, slightly below it. The table remained up and then fell back. My right hand was on both her knees. I was perfectly certain of her left foot.

C. I have my left foot on her right clearly. My left knee pressing against her right.

The table again tilted on the two legs furthest from her.

The same thing is again repeated rather more strongly.

F. I again pass my hand down the left leg of the table, and the whole of the medium's foot is absolutely on mine.

The table is up again on one foot furthest from medium.

C. I have passed my hand completely between her and the table leg.

F. So have I.

F. The table is still up and I am passing my hand between her and the table right down the left leg.

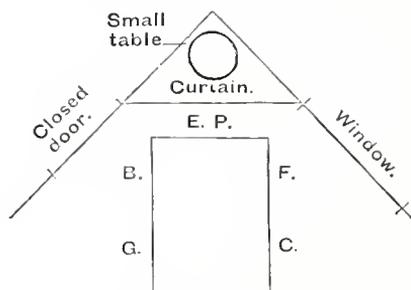
C. Her left hand was off the table and her right one just touching the top of the table, near the right corner, clenched.

[During all this a perfectly clear space was visible between her body and the edge of the table. F. and C., Dec. 3/08.]

[Light II.]

10.16 p.m. F. The table remained up after her left hand was taken right off the table and her right hand was clenched and just slightly touching it in the right-hand top corner.

10.18 p.m. *At request of medium C. and B. change places.*



10.20 p.m. F. The table is up on its two legs furthest from medium.

10.21 p.m. *F. Medium makes a gesture, but nothing happens.*

10.22 p.m. F. Two more gestures followed by very faint raps.

10.25 p.m. *F. She asks me to put my hands in the middle of the table while she makes gestures on my right shoulder. She makes various gestures and grips on my right shoulder. Nothing happens and she says "Non lo fa." ("He won't do it.")*

10.24 p.m. The table is now going up.

F. Her left hand is on my shoulder, her right hand off the table, about two inches above it, and clenched. Her left foot is certainly on mine and I feel it with my left hand, and my right is on both knees.

B. My left hand is on her right knee and her right foot on my left foot. I felt it with my right hand.

[This tilt took place on the two legs furthest from the medium. F., C. and B., Dec. 3/08.]

10.25 p.m. *F. She asks me to let her put her left leg across my two shins.*

The table shortly afterwards went up on the two legs furthest from her. She removed both her hands. It remained up a considerable time.

## [Light II.]

10.25½ p.m. The same thing has happened again.

F. Her leg is well across my shins.

B. My control the same as before, her right foot on my left foot.

10.26 p.m. The table is going up again.

F. Both medium's hands are off the table. As I am speaking I am looking under them, between them and the table. Her left foot was absolutely motionless against mine. My right hand on her left knee.

B. My control the same as before, I could see under both hands.

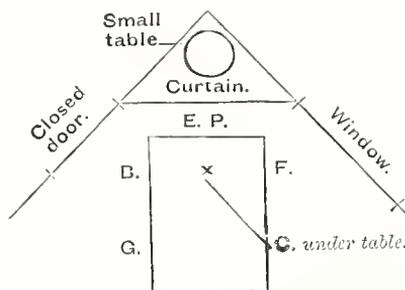
C. I saw a clear space under both wrists.

10.27 p.m. The table went up again in the air on the two legs furthest from her.

F. I put my left hand between her wrist and the table. Her left hand did not touch the table. Her left foot is firmly on my right. My other hand was on her knee. The right hand was also off the table while the table was going up.

B. And during this levitation, my left hand was on her right knee and her right foot was on my left foot. I could feel it clearly.

*10.32 p.m. At request of medium, C. goes under table and holds her feet in his hands.*



The table goes right up in the air on the legs furthest from her.

F. Her hand was touching the top of the table.

C. I have both the medium's ankles in my two hands and can see there is about three inches between her skirt and the table leg on either side.

C. I am now holding her toes instead of her ankles.

## [Light II.]

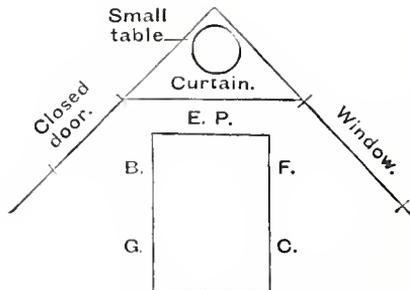
B. My control is the same as before.

C. I can see controllers on both sides holding her knees with their hands.

F. Her wrists were just touching the top edge of the table, but apparently without any force.

C. I can feel the live foot through the shoes and know that I am not merely holding the shoes in my hands.

*Medium asks C. to come out again, which he does, medium saying, "I only asked him to do that so that he might see that I did not lift the table with my foot."*



10.33 p.m. The table is up in the air on the two furthest legs.

F. Her foot is undoubtedly on mine, and her two hands were off the table, about five inches below the rim.

B. Her right foot was also on my left foot and my left hand was on her right knee at the same time.

10.36 p.m. Medium makes two gestures, the first of which was followed by a thump in the table and the second not.

*10.37 p.m. She holds her left hand up towards the curtain over her head.*

B. The right curtain bulges out and touches me on my shoulder.

B. Her right foot was on my left foot and my left hand was on her right hand.

F. Her left foot is firmly on mine. Her left hand is visible on the corner of the table in front of me. My right hand is on her left shoulder.

C. Both her hands are motionless and clearly visible to me.

## [Light II.]

The right curtain goes out again.

F. At this time my right hand is held in her left. Her left foot still pressing tightly on my right, and I am certain that it is her left foot.

B. I am holding her right hand with my left hand on her knee and her right foot is on my left foot.

10.40 p.m. The right curtain blows out about two feet.

10.41 p.m. B. I felt a strong breeze coming through the curtain from the cabinet at the moment the curtain was blowing out.

10.42 p.m. F. My control was the same as before, absolutely. [This breeze was probably produced by the movements of the curtain. B., Dec. 3/08].

10.44 p.m. Another big bulge of the curtain.

F. Her left hand was on the table at the time and quite visible.

B. Her right foot is on my left. [Her right hand was on my left. B., Dec. 3/08.]

10.44½ p.m. *Medium asks F. to touch the table in the cabinet, which he does with his right hand.*

10.45 p.m. *F. Her hand is holding mine on her knee.*

The table tilts four times rapidly towards the medium.

B. She was holding my left hand on her knee, and her right foot was on my left foot. During the movements I did not perceive her move her hand at all.

F. Control the same as before on my side. My hand was in her lap, hers holding mine. I am sure that it was her left hand.

B. I am sure that it was her right hand as I was holding it by the thumb.

10.47 p.m. *Light No. 4.*

**Light IV.**

C. *In this light I can see her face at a distance of four feet clearly. I can distinguish the eyes, ears and nose.*

10.50 p.m. *F. She has put her left leg on my two knees now.*

## [Light IV.]

*B. I feel the whole length of her right leg with my leg. Her foot is on my foot. Her right hand is on my left hand.*

*10.52 p.m. F. She asks me to put my right hand on her shoulder and takes my left hand in her left hand on her lap.*

Movements of small table in the cabinet.

C. Her left foot, which is also across my right knee, presses strongly.

10.53 p.m. B. Her right foot is on my left foot and I was holding her right hand in my left hand on my knee.

F. Her left leg was still on my two knees.

C. Her head clearly visible.

F. Her left hand was in mine, my right arm around her left shoulder.

*10.54 p.m. F. She has now taken her leg down off my knees and put her left foot on my right foot.*

*10.55 p.m. F. She leans forward over the table. She is enclosing my right foot right under her chair with her two feet and her legs press tightly on each side of my leg.*

10.57 p.m. B. The curtain is blown over my head.

B. She is holding my left hand with her right hand on the table. She did not move her hand while the curtain was blown over my head.

F. Her two legs were still tightly round my right leg and she was leaning far forward over the table with her head. My left hand under hers, which held it [on my side of her head. F., Dec. 3/08.]

C. I am also holding her left hand with my right. [My right hand was encircling both F.'s and the Medium's, and I could feel them both. C., Dec. 3/08.]

*10.58 p.m. B. The curtain is still over my hand.*

*10.59 p.m. Medium now returns her right foot to B.'s left foot and her right hand is now in B.'s left hand on the table.*

11.0 p.m. F. She holds my right hand with her left hand back towards the cabinet, pinches it several times and there are movements as of the tambourine inside.

## [Light IV.]

F. Her left foot is pressing strongly all the time and I know it is her left foot.

B. Her right hand was on the table in mine and her right foot continually pressing my left foot.

*B. She is moving her right leg, with my left leg continuously in contact with it.*

A few slight movements take place in the cabinet.

F. Her left foot was under the table kicking about forwards and backwards with mine and her left hand is on the table. Head fully visible to me.

11.4 p.m. F. She played the flute on my little finger, the thumb on one side and all four fingers on the other, and in rhythm with it some object moved in the cabinet.

B. Exactly the same control with me as before, only I felt a rhythmic movement of her leg, synchronising with the movements in the cabinet.

11.5 p.m. B. She is lifting her foot, but mine accompanies it at the same time.

*F. The back of her chair is almost touching the small table, I could hardly get my hand between the two. [In order to ascertain that there was no attachment between the medium and the objects in the cabinet, I had passed my right hand between her and them, from her head downwards, behind the back of her chair to the ground. The medium had receded much further into the cabinet than in the previous séances. F., Dec. 3/08.]*

11.8 p.m. B. The little table struck me under my shoulder and fell over completely on the right of the medium.

B. At the same moment she was holding my left hand with her right, and her right foot was resting on my left foot. I felt the whole length of her leg against my leg.

F. Her left hand is in my left, on the corner of the table. My right hand across both knees. Her left leg motionless. Her left foot on my right foot, and I know it is the whole of it. Her head close to me and motionless, and clearly visible.

B. Her head is visible to me as well.

## [Light IV.]

11.10 p.m. F. I can see a white hand come right out from the cabinet over her head.

C. I could see the white hand.

[A very white hand came out between the curtains about two inches above her hair, palm downwards. It moved rather slowly, then clenched its fingers and withdrew again into the cabinet. F., Dec. 3/08.] [C. I agree with the above description. Dec. 3/08.]

[B. and G. did not see the hand owing to the position of the right curtain, which was still over B.'s arm. Dec. 3/08.]

[It was a right hand. F., July 20/09.]

F. I am holding her left hand visibly on the corner of the table in my left. The control of her left leg being the same as before.

B. I am holding her right hand with my left hand and her right foot is on my left foot, and I am feeling the whole length of her leg.

11.13 p.m. F. *Her left hand is on her lap with my right.*

11.14 p.m. F. *I have got both hands of the medium.*

11.16 p.m. F. *She pinches my right hand with her left hand on her lap.*

11.18 p.m. F. I see an extremely black thing come right out.

B. My right hand control was perfect.

F. Her left hand was in mine on the table.

F. It came out about three feet from the medium's head. The medium's head was resting on mine. She told me to look in a particular direction first of all, and said that I should see a head. The black thing was the profile of a head, and it came out to within about two inches of B.'s face.

[The thing I saw appeared like a grotesque face with a Jewish nose, *i.e.* not the least like the head which C. saw during the second séance. It gave me the impression of a flat thing, rather than of a solid head. It shot rapidly out, apparently between the right-hand curtain and the door, went within two inches of B.'s hair and then withdrew. F., Dec. 3/08.]

C. I saw the head just disappearing into the cabinet.

B. I could not see the head because it appeared from behind the curtain on the right [and consequently behind B.'s line of sight. F., Mar. 1/09].

## [Light IV.]

11.22 p.m. B. The small table is moving.

F. She squeezed my right hand at the time with her left hand, on her lap. Her left foot quite clearly on my right.

B. Same control of foot as before.

B. The small table rises and touches my elbow.

B. I am perfectly certain that her right hand is on my left hand on the table, and I can feel the whole length of her leg.

B. The small table is again moving; same control.

F. My right hand was on her two knees, and her left hand in mine and visible, and close to me; legs both firmly between B.'s and mine, and I have felt their position with my hand.

11.25 p.m. The small table is rising again.

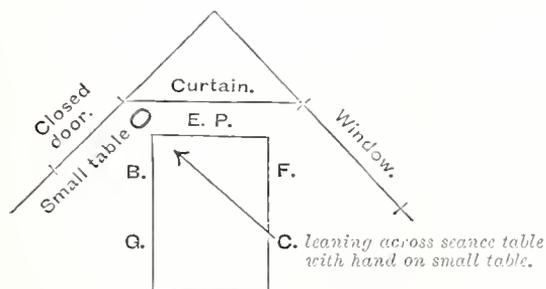
11.26 p.m. The small table is levitated right on to the séance table, through the curtains, between B. and medium. It rose to a height of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the floor, and is now resting on the séance table.

[The small table which had been in the cabinet was levitated from behind the right curtain, between it and the door, and came over the medium's right arm and my left arm, the legs resting on my arm and the medium's. It seemed to make successive efforts to get well on to the séance table. B., Dec. 3/08.]

B. My control is perfect; the same as before.

F. Her left hand is right over this side of the table and visible. Her head close to me and visible. My right hand on both her knees as before.

11.28 p.m. C. stands up and leans across the séance table and takes the small table and puts it back on the floor.



## [Light IV.]

C. Oh! As I put it down it was jerked up forcibly about 6 inches, levitated and pushed against my hands.

F. Her left foot was on my right, my right hand on hers.

B. I was not touching her leg at that time. [I was not feeling her knee at the time, but her right foot was on my left and motionless. B., Dec. 3/08.]

C. [still leaning across the séance table]. It is levitated twice again.

B. Her right leg against my left leg. Her right foot on my left foot, her right hand on my left hand.

C. The small table is again levitated about 18 inches off the floor, my hand resting on its surface.

B. Her right hand is resting on my left hand on the table. Her right foot is kicking backwards and forwards, but I follow it all the time.

F. Her left hand is well in mine on the table, my right hand on her knees. Head close to me.

11.30 p.m. C. The table is moved up again as though pushed. [I was leaning over the séance table with my right hand resting flat on the surface of the small table. The upward pressure exerted by the small table was of a peculiar character, as though the table were suspended on elastics, which pushed upwards forcibly. C., Dec. 3/08.]

C. The curtain is blown right out against me as I am leaning over the table.

F. Her left leg absolutely controlled as before. Her left hand in mine on her lap.

B. Her right hand in mine on the table. She moves her right foot with mine, and I follow the movements of it.

C. During this time I am leaning across the séance table, my right hand being on the small table. The curtain covers my right hand and the arm, as far as the elbow.

11.32 p.m. C. The small table moves slightly under my right hand.

11.34 p.m. C. Three raps on the small table.

C. The small table has moved about three inches along the floor.

## [Light IV.]

C. The small table tilts on two of its legs.

F. Her left foot is continuously on my right foot, and when the bumps came on the small table she pinched my left hand at the same time.

B. Her right hand continues in my left hand on the table. Her right foot on my left foot, and I keep following the movements of her foot.

F. I have my right hand still on both her knees, which are motionless.

11.36 p.m. C. The small table tilts violently to the right.

F. She is leaning back in my arms. My right hand on her two knees and her left hand on the corner of the table just in front of me.

B. Her right hand on my left hand on the table. She swings her right foot backwards and forwards continuously and I follow it with my left foot.

11.37 p.m. F. *I have hold of her left hand again.*

11.38 p.m. *Medium asks C to hold his hand out towards the curtain.*

C. *I hold it up about two feet above her head.*

C. I feel a hand under the curtain but it does not touch my hand; it pushes out the curtain slightly to the left of the spot where my hand is. I could feel a hard substance pushing the curtain.

F. Her head is lying on my shoulder, her left hand continues in mine.

C. Now I feel a hand pushing against my right hand.

F. Her left foot on my right. My left hand on her knees.

C. Again a hand pushes my right hand; again a hand pushes strongly. I felt resistance as I pressed the curtain gently.

B. Her right hand in my left hand on the table and her right foot against my left foot which she continues to swing backwards and forwards and I continue following it with my foot.

F. Her two hands are at least two feet apart.

## [Light IV.]

11.44 p.m. C. I am touched on my left fore-arm strongly.

[F. During all this time the medium was lying in a trance on my right shoulder. Dec. 3/08.]

F. Her left hand continuously in mine.

C. The hand pushes strongly against the eurtain, just under my hand.

B. She presses her right hand very strongly on my left and swings her right foot and I keep my left foot against it all the time during the movements.

F. Her left hand continuously in mine, her head close to me and visible.

11.46 p.m. C. The curtain is strongly pushed just under my hand.

F. Control exactly the same as before.

B. The same with me.

11.48 p.m. B. I am touched on the left knee.

11.51 p.m. The small table is levitated up from the eabinet and between F. and the medium, over her head.

[The small table must have come from the further side of the cabinet, where C had replaced it. It came out right over her head and landed with its top between her head and mine, with its legs pointing horizontally into the eabinet. F., Dec. 3/08.]

F. I was holding her left hand motionless on the eorner of the table, her head was visible and motionless, and the table came out directly over it. Her left foot absolutely controlled, one of mine being between it and B's. Her left leg pressing against mine. Her left hand is right over at this eorner.

B. Her right hand in my left hand resting on the table. Her right foot on my left foot and I feel her knee against my knee. The control is perfect.

*11.53 p.m. F. The table is now supported between her shoulders and mine.*

*11.54 p.m. F. I am putting the small table back again into the cabinet.*

## [Light IV.]

11.56 p.m. The small table moved in the cabinet.

F. Her foot was on mine; hand visibly in mine.

B. Her right hand in my left hand, also visible, and her right foot on mine.

11.57 p.m. C. *The medium rests her head on F., his arm being around her neck.*

12.3 a.m. Various movements of the large table, non-evidential.

12.4 a.m. Partial levitation of the large table.

F. Her left hand was holding mine on this side of the table, just touching it. It cannot have been her left hand which caused the movements. Her left foot motionless on mine and I know it is her left foot.

B. Her right hand is in my left hand on her right knee. Her right foot is resting on my left foot and it remained motionless during the movements of the table.

126. a.m. *The medium stands up.*

F. The table tilts on its two legs furthest from medium.

F. My left hand is under the left table leg. I also passed my hand down the leg. Her left hand is motionless in my right.

C. Her right hand on the top of the table. I am passing my finger along the edge of the table, her fingers and her wrists are well above the edge.

B. I am holding her right hand.

F. Both hands are now above the table. I was between her and the table. I pulled the table towards me and it resisted considerably before it fell down—this after her hands had left.

The table comes up very strongly on two legs.

F. Of course, the table is balanced now. [I meant that the table remained balanced in a normal way on the two legs furthest from medium. F., Mar. 1/09.]

Complete levitation of the table.

F. Her left hand was just touching the rim of the table when it went up. Her left foot was absolutely controlled.

B. Her right hand in the same position as her left, just on the rim of the table, and I had my left foot against her right foot.

## [Light IV.]

[The table had tilted over a long way and appeared to be balancing on the two furthest legs. It then made a sudden jump of several inches with all four legs off the ground. Experiment shows that if her knees were against both legs, a strong pull with both hands on the rim could produce this effect. F., Dec. 3/08.]

12.12 a.m. *The medium says that she does not feel very well.*

[*The medium sat down and presently raised my hand to her forehead. F., Ap. 13/09.*]

F. I feel a wind.

[*I asked the others to feel also. F., Ap. 13/09.*]

C. I feel a distinct cold breeze issuing from her forehead. I now feel it distinctly.

B. I can feel it.

G. Yes. Yes.

[*I now covered her nose and mouth with my hand, to prevent the possibility of her blowing with her mouth. F., Ap. 13/09.*]

12.14 a.m. C. I feel it clearly here on the left side.

F. At that time I had my hand right over her nose and mouth, my little finger being on the ridge of her nose and the palm over the tip of it.

12.15 a.m. C. I feel the breeze very strongly. F., do you feel it?

F. Yes.

B. I felt it very strongly indeed.

F. I have my hand right over her nose and mouth.

[*Other observers have recorded this cold wind which appears to issue from a scar under her hair, over her forehead. F., Dec. 3/08.*]

[*The séance now terminated. The medium appeared extremely exhausted. She asked if we would like to search her. We said it was not necessary. F., Ap. 13/09.*]

## NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

Throughout the whole of our previous séances, Eusapia had been constantly in a state of nervous anxiety to know, at every moment, whether we held her properly. "E buono il controllo? E buono il

controllo?" ("Is your control good?") was repeated often many times a minute, especially during the third séance. In vain we urged her to leave that to us, and to go quietly off into her trance, and let come what might. At the third séance, when we actually caught her playing her old trick of substituting one hand for two, we immediately told her of it. She discussed the matter with seeming frankness. She told me of an occasion when Colonel de Rochas had caught her in a similar manner, and said that she was unaware that she had done it. In view of the Cambridge sittings, it seems probable that this is something less than the truth. Nevertheless, from conversations with her, her husband and her friend Signor de Santi, who at once admitted that he had often noticed this trick, as well as from the reports of former observers, we gathered the impression that it is, at all events, a hypothetical possibility that her frauds, skilfully as they are performed, are resorted to in a spirit of mischief while in her waking state, and perhaps half unconsciously while in her semi-trance state, and that no very severe moral blame, in a woman of her temperament, is necessarily attachable to them. We therefore promised her, if ever we actually caught her tricking, at once to tell her.

On Nov. 30th the Report of the Paris *Institut Général Psychologique* on their experiments with Eusapia reached me. She had asked me about this and expressed interest to know whether it was favourable or the reverse. I accordingly went to see her and told her frankly that while, on the whole, the conclusions must evidently be read as implying a belief in the possession by her of some abnormal faculty affecting matter, the report nevertheless stated that, on a few occasions, she had been caught resorting to fraud.

She was in no way disturbed and merely said, when I offered to show her the Report, that she did not want to hear the details, as charges of this kind might produce a suggestive effect which would be harmful to her and tend to make her repeat the offence.

The result of our conversation, however, was satisfactory. She did not, as in the third séance, constantly keep asking if the control was good, but appeared never to trouble about it at all, resigned herself quietly to our keeping and for the first time went off into what appeared to be a deep trance state. Nor did she, as in the third séance, constantly attempt to evade control. She allowed her hands to be firmly held: her feet were generally motionless, and the light was always sufficient to see the exact whereabouts of her face, as well as of her hands, even from the further side of the

table. Whatever be the means by which the white hand and the black face seen by C. and me, and the hand felt by C. within the curtain, were produced, I am absolutely certain that the use of her head or of the hand or foot on my side was not in question. B. is equally certain so far as the hand or foot of his side are concerned.

There remains the hypothesis of an apparatus concealed about her, and actuated in some manner inconceivable to me. We shall be told we ought to have searched her. We ought. She herself suggested, after the séance, that we should. Whether it was the fact that she herself proposed it that disarmed us, or a not unnatural disinclination to submit her, while just recovering, with every symptom of exhaustion, from a state of deep trance, to what we understand from other reports has invariably proved a vain quest, I cannot say. It is clear that another time, we must, in the interests of accuracy of evidence, harden our hearts.

E. F., December 4th, 1908.

#### NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

Having yielded my control to B. early in the evening, I am not in so good a position to speak of that as he: but there can be no doubt that it was exceptionally good throughout the séance. I can, however, speak with certainty of the levitations of the small table and of the touches through the curtain towards the end of the sitting. With F. and B. closely guarding her hands and feet, her head being visible, and with a clear space between the table and her body, the small table was completely levitated several times under my hand, in a way quite inexplicable by me, and in a peculiar manner impossible to duplicate by fraudulent means, so far as I can judge. The touches, also, were certainly effected by a material and responsive agent, which pushed strongly against the curtains, just under my hand, and, later, against my hand, through the curtains. My hand was held up at a distance of quite  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet above the medium's head, and both B. and F. were positive of their separate controls, which they several times verified, during the actual production of these touches. There was also a clear space between her body and the curtain. The phenomena appeared to me very remarkable at the time, occurring, as they did, under what I must consider exceptionally fine conditions, as regards hand and foot control.

H. C., December 7th, 1908.

## NOTE BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

No perfect levitation of the table (that is, the rising of the four legs of the table from the floor at the same time) took place at this séance, and most of the levitations that occurred could not be considered evidential, since one or both hands of the medium were in contact with the table when it was rising.

There were, however, two cases which offered, to my mind, good evidence of a supernormal force being at work; viz., those which occurred at 10.13 and 10.24 (*vide* Report) when Eusapia had not her hands in contact with the table, and her feet were under control of F. and C. in one case, and of F. and myself in the other. It is doubtful whether the levitation that took place at 12.6 (when the legs of the table close to Eusapia were off the floor and the side of the table further away from her rose up in the air), was produced supernormally, since, although she was standing up at the time, and both her feet were controlled, I found, subsequently that while holding the rim of the table in the same manner that the medium did, I could, by placing my bent knees against the table legs, or pressing the sides of my knees against the interior sides of the table legs, cause the furthest side of the table to rise when pulling the table with my hands towards me. I cannot assert that Eusapia resorted to this method. My impression is that she did not.

I feel positive that the medium's right hand and right foot were not used in the production of any of the phenomena which took place in the cabinet. I continuously kept control of her right foot and right hand and also kept my knee against her knee, with the exception of the experiment at 10.57 when F. had control of both her legs. On two or three occasions when I felt that her knee was not touching mine, I broke the "chain," that is, I released my right hand from Mr. Gibson's hand and then passed my right hand under the table and felt with it Eusapia's right leg, from the knee downwards, to assure myself that no substitution of feet had taken place, and that it was the foot of her right leg that was resting on my left foot.

No substitution of hands took place at this séance. I frequently verified that it was the medium's right hand that I held in, or that was resting on, my left hand, by feeling her thumb and the palm of her hand. Moreover, the light was sufficiently good for me to see her right hand when it rested on the table. It is also to be

observed that her hands were too far apart from each other to allow of substitution.

This was the first séance of the series that I attended. I formed no opinion as to the character of the phenomena, but was much impressed by the results obtained under the strict conditions that were imposed.

W. W. B., Dec. 3rd, 1908.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE VI.

*December 4th, 1908.*

This séance, by reason of the number of phenomena and the rapidity with which they followed one another, the remarkable character of many of them, and the complete control permitted by Eusapia, proved one of the most interesting of the whole series. For an hour practically nothing occurred. The medium appeared vexed and suggested an alteration of the light, which was accordingly changed to No. 3, the bright ruby lamp shaded with tissue paper and a white silk handkerchief hanging over it, a light sufficient to enable F., sitting at the further end of the table from the medium, to see her head and hands. Still nothing occurred for a further half hour, till at 11.35 B. was touched on the shoulder, and the curtain blew out over the table.

At 11.38 there appeared one of those strange objects seen from time to time at Eusapia's séances, to which, for want of a better name, the word "head" is applied, though they are only very distantly suggestive of human heads. They are of different sizes and shapes, sometimes shooting out of the curtain and back with great swiftness, sometimes with a certain deliberateness, but always with absolute silence, like shadows. They are impossible to describe verbally. After the séance C. attempted to draw his impression of this one, with approximately the following result :



It shot straight out from between the curtains, turned a sudden right angle, approached close to C.'s face, and then retired. This object was black; the next appearance, a few minutes later, at 11.41, coincident with a touch on C.'s head, was white. In both these cases the medium's two hands were separately held and under complete control. Further touches followed, and at 11.50 the curtain flew out with such violence that it reached the further end of the table.

It seems unnecessary to go through the details of the phenomena, which are adequately described in the shorthand report, but attention may be called to some of the more remarkable. Although touches had frequently been felt at previous séances, this was the first séance at which the sensation of the grasp of a complete hand was experienced. This occurred to all three sitters, to both C. and B. between 11.58 and 12.5, and to F. just before and after 12.11, when he was holding his hand  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet above the medium's head (her hands being held one on the table and one in her lap) and was seized by apparently living fingers, of which he felt the nails, through the curtain. At about 12.18 B. was seized by a hand which came from behind the curtain, and pulled him by the sleeve so violently that it almost upset him off his chair into the cabinet, both the medium's hands being separately and distinctly held by C. and B. Various other appearances of objects, sometimes white, sometimes grey, took place, occasionally coincident with touches on the sitters.

At 12.26 F. went to stand beside the medium and held his hand high over her head, with a view to ascertaining how far from her the touches could be obtained. The attempts made to produce the touches were instructive. The medium first appeared to wish to establish a *rapport* between her and F.'s hand, and releasing her hand from B.'s, put it within the curtain and took hold of F.'s through it. She then replaced her hand on B.'s on her lap. After a kind of head visible to C. and F. (the notes do not state whether B. also saw it) had shot out and retired, a series of attempts were made by something within the curtain to take hold of F.'s uplifted hand. Something solid pushed out

over and over again against the inside of the curtain against the lower side of F.'s hand, or against his wrists, but apparently could not reach quite high enough to grasp the hand itself. Meanwhile, Eusapia appeared to strain upwards outside the curtain, raising her two hands, still held by C. and B., as though a sympathetic physical effort were required in order to direct the "force," and explaining at the moment that that was in fact the case. The effort, it is true, failed, and no actual grasp was given, but the conditions under which the touches occurred and the opportunity for careful observation during the long continued attempts to reach F.'s hand, the adequate control which existed in consequence of the visibility of Eusapia's head and hands and the proximity of F. to the curtain, make the incident one of high interest.

Immediately afterwards, a further appearance of a black head, apparently similar to the one seen during the earlier portion of the séance, occurred, followed by a light inside the curtain, the first luminous phenomenon that had been perceived by us. This, from its position, was visible only to C. The white Light II. was then, at Eusapia's request, turned up, and a further short series of curtain movements and of touches took place. The "cork experiment" mentioned at 12.55 refers to a small apparatus devised by B., consisting of a cork suspended perpendicularly on an elastic stretched horizontally between two nails fastened on a board. The lower surface of the cork was covered with indigo, and the object of the experiment was to see if without contact Eusapia could succeed in depressing the cork so as to leave a mark of the indigo on the board. She tried, holding her hands above the cork for 2 or 3 minutes, but failed to produce any effect, and, it being very late, she abandoned the attempt.

The séance then broke up and the original Light I. was turned up. The phenomena, however, as described in C.'s note, continued. The table continued to tilt about as though the "force" were not yet expended and it occurred to F. to ask for a repetition of the phenomenon which had taken place at the 2nd séance when the guitar had been plucked. We were all standing round the curtain, B. and M. talking and not paying attention; F. and C., however, listening to see if

effect would be given to F.'s request. They both simultaneously heard a light twanging of the guitar which stood as in the 2nd séance on the floor in the angle of the walls, distant about a metre from the curtains.

A description is given in C.'s note of a further experiment with the "breeze" which, after the fifth séance, appeared to issue from the scar on Eusapia's brow. It may be added that, with a view to determining the objective character of this breeze, we had meanwhile bought a small paper flag similar to those used for Christmas tree decoration.

### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE VI.

*December 4th, 1908.*

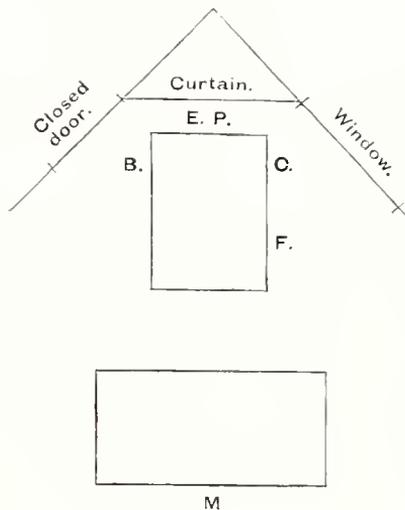
*Present: F., C., and B., and M., shorthand-writer, at separate table as before.*

*No small table was put inside the cabinet.*

*The various toys were placed on the floor inside the curtain along the walls, with the guitar standing upright in the angle.*

*Lights as before, except that No. 3 was shaded with one thickness of brown tissue paper and silk handkerchief, to diminish the unpleasant red glare.*

*10.3 p.m. Séance began.*



**Light I.**

*10.3 to 10.16 p.m. nothing happens.*

*F. Note that when medium came into the room she went straight to her chair, then got up to get her handkerchief, and then returned to her seat. She has not touched the curtains and does not know what is behind them.*

10.20 p.m. The table tilts towards B.

10.23 p.m. C. The medium's skirt bulges out very slowly.

*10.46 p.m. Four tilts ask us to talk.*

10.49 p.m. Light No. 2 with M.'s Light.

**Light II.**

11.5 p.m. F. The table tilted towards her strongly.

C. Her left leg is over my right knee and she made pressing movements with her foot as the table went up. Her left hand is pressing against mine in my lap.

B. Her right hand is resting on my left hand resting on her lap. Her right foot is on my left foot, and I am feeling the whole of her leg with my leg. Our knees are touching.

F. There is no movement of her body as far as I can see.

[The toe of her foot, so far as I can judge, was about three inches below the surface of the table, and as she moved her foot slowly as the table went up, I cannot guarantee that she did not press against it with her toe, though my impression is that she did not. C., Dec. 5/08.]

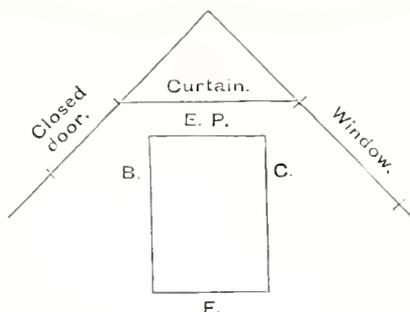
*[Medium being vexed at the long delay in the commencement of the phenomena suggested that we might try another light; on our asking her which, she said she did not know. Dec. 5/08.]*

*11.7 p.m. Light 3 shaded with brown tissue paper and handkerchief, and M.'s electric light, shaded.*

**Light III. shaded.**

*11.8 p.m. Medium asks F. to sit at the end of the table so as to make a better circle.*

[Light III. shaded.]



*F.* Note that I can see the medium's face from where I am. I can see the position of all three heads quite plainly.

*B.* She asks me to put my hand against the curtain.

11.21 p.m. *F.* The table tilts away from her.

*C.* Her left foot is on my right, kicking slowly about; left hand in my right on her lap.

*B.* My hand is on her right hand on her lap. Her right leg moving backwards and forwards, with my left leg accompanying it. My leg was away from the table.

11.35 p.m. *B.* Oh! I was touched on my shoulder.

[Immediately after the touch the right curtain blew out and remained over *B.*'s arm. Dec. 5/08.]

*C.* She was holding my right hand with her left visibly on the table, her left foot pressing against my right.

*B.* My left hand was on the right hand of the medium on the table, under the curtain, which had fallen across our hands. Her right foot was on my left foot, my knee touching her knee, and I can feel the whole length of her leg.

11.38 p.m. *C.* Medium asks me to look in a particular direction.

*C.* I see a black object coming to within three inches of my face. I cannot describe it. It went up instantaneously. It looked like a cauliflower.

[The object coming from the cabinet was intensely black and seemed to be about 3 inches broad by 12 inches long. It shot straight out from the cabinet and then turned to the left and approached my face, as though a head had turned to look at me. The outline of this head was certainly not human, either

## [Light III. shaded.]

as regards size or characteristics. It appeared to be covered all over with small lumps or knobs, and the nearest description I can give to this head is that it resembled the top of a large 'cello. It moved slowly and stayed out about 3 or 4 seconds. C., Dec. 5/08.]

C. Her left hand was on my left hand visibly on the table. My right hand being on her back. Her head resting against my head. Her left foot resting against my right.

B. Her right hand on the table in my left, still under the curtain, and her right foot on my left foot and our knees together; she kept moving her leg, but I kept in contact with it.

C. The curtain is thrown over my shoulder.

C. Control the same as before.

F. to C. Could the medium have moved her head away from you?

C. No, my head and hers were touching and my right hand was holding her left visibly. The foot control exactly the same as before.

B. Mine exactly the same, as also the motions of her leg.

*F. Note that the medium let go of B.'s hand for a moment, after saying that she was going to do so.*

*C. She now leans her head against mine.*

11.41 p.m. C. I am touched by a hand on the head.

F. I saw a white thing come out from the curtains over the medium's head towards C.'s head.

C. While this was going on, the medium's head was resting against mine, my right arm being around her shoulder, her left hand being visibly on mine on the table and her left foot pressing on my right.

B. My control exactly the same as before, her right hand resting on my left hand on the table, under the curtain, and her right foot resting on my left foot, and her right knee pressing against my left knee.

[I could tell it was her right hand by the feeling of the relative position of her hand to her fingers and feeling the thumb and the palm of her hand; and that it was her real hand by the warmth and by the responses to my squeezes. B., Dec. 5/08.]

[Light III. shaded.]

11.44 p.m. *Medium says, it is coming there!*

[*Medium said to C., "Look, he will come there," indicating a particular spot to the left of B. Dec. 5/08.*]

[*No phenomenon occurred which seems to justify this remark till the appearance of a head at about 12.50. F., Mar. 10/09.*]

C. I am touched on the head through the curtain, twice.

C. The medium's head resting against my head; her left hand visibly on the table in my left hand, her left knee pressing against my right knee.

B. Her right hand is resting on my left hand on the table, and her right foot is resting on my left foot and I still continue pressing my knee against her knee.

F. I saw something white just over the medium's head. A sort of flash of white. The medium's head was motionless.

11.48 p.m. C. *The medium moves the hand held in B.'s hand and makes him feel with his hand that we are holding different ones.*

B. *And tells me that that is what she is doing.*

11.50. p.m. C. I hear something moving in the cabinet.

B. The curtain is thrown over my side.

F. It has come as far as my end of the table.

C. Her left hand held my right firmly on her knee. Her left foot resting on my foot. I was also stroking her forehead with my left hand.

B. Her right hand on my left hand on her right knee, her right foot on my left foot, and I could feel the whole length of her leg against mine, our knees touching.

B. and C. both say that they can feel her thumbs.

11.58 p.m. *Medium asks B. if he can sit nearer to her.*

C. I saw a slight bulge out of the curtain on the right side.

F. I saw a white thing come slowly up, which I thought was the medium's hand lifting B.'s, and going slowly up about two inches above the level of B.'s head and then down again, slowly, and made no doubt that it was B. raising his hand with the medium's.

[Light III. shaded.]

*F. to B. Was it your hand holding the medium's?*

*B. No.*

*F. I made no doubt that it was your two hands.*

B. Medium's right hand was still on my left hand on her knee and her right foot was continuously on my left foot, and our knees are touching.

C. And her left hand is held by my right.

C. I am hit right on the head by a hand right through the curtain.

[I felt the four fingers and the thumb this time. The hand was open and a minute after the fingers were closed and I was again hit on the head. C., Dec., 5/08.]

C. Control exactly the same. The medium's head against mine, and she kicked with her foot under the table in front of her.

B. My control exactly the same as before.

*Note by M. "Medium says that she is getting cold. I have looked at thermometer and it stood at 62° Fahr., the same as before."*

*F. I asked "John" to give me something from the cabinet, and the medium replied "I will look for it with my foot," and moved her left foot about.*

B. A hand comes out from behind the curtain and presses me tightly on my shoulder. I feel the thumb and the four fingers which are now pressing downwards with very considerable force.

C. I was holding her left hand by the thumb on her left thigh. Her left foot being on my right. Her head pressing against my head.

B. Her right hand is resting on my left hand. I can feel both her knees with my right hand which I had passed under the table. Her right foot is on my left foot and our knees are touching.

12.4 a.m. C. I saw the curtain bulge out.

*B. She let go of my hand asking if she could feel inside the cabinet, and after a few seconds she passed her hand back again to my left hand.*

[Light III. shaded.]

12.5 a.m. C. *The medium holds my right leg in between her two legs and is kicking to and fro saying that she wants to bring something out of the cabinet with her foot, but her foot remains under the table all the time.*

B. *She has removed her foot from mine.*

12.6 a.m. F. I again saw a white thing coming over her head. I could not say what it was.

C. I also saw the white thing.

[The 'white thing' looked like a creamy white object coming out, about six inches square. C., Dec. 6/08.]

C. My control exactly the same as before.

C. The curtain blows right out twice as though pushed by some substance. I could see the round swelling of the curtain.

C. Her hand was pressing firmly against my hand and I am holding it by the thumb. Both legs around my right leg.

B. Her right hand is on my left hand on her right knee.

F. *I have asked the medium whether I could feel the hand also. She replied, "yes."*

[*She asked me to stand at the side of the table and hold my hand to the curtain over her head. F., Mar. 11/09.*]

F. *stands to the left of C. and leans over with his left hand out-stretched about 2½ feet above and to the left of the medium's head. Immediately after—*

F. I am touched by something coming straight on to the points of my fingers.

12.11 a.m. F. I am touched again; I am taken hold of by fingers, and I can feel the nails quite plainly.

[My fore-finger was pressed hard by three separate fingers above it and by a thumb below, through the curtain. I felt the nails quite distinctly as they pressed into my finger. F., Dec. 6/08.]

C. Her head pressing against my head. I am absolutely holding her left hand on the table, both her legs are around my right leg under the chair.

B. I am absolutely certain that her right hand is on my left hand on her right knee.

[Light III. shaded.]

F. I am touched again. Grasped this time as though by the lower part of the thumb and fingers. [The grasp was round the palm of my hand. F., Mar. 11/09.]

B. I am touched gently on my hand and at the same moment I am touched by a hand on my shoulder.

B. Also the curtain came out as though struck violently by a hand from within.

[The touches, in this case, on F.'s hand, which was high up, and on the shoulder of B., who was sitting on the other side of the table, at least three feet from F.'s hand, appeared to be absolutely simultaneous, and immediately afterwards the curtain was thrust violently out as though it was struck hard several times by a hand within. F. and B., Dec. 6/08.]

B. Same control.

C. Same control.

[In acknowledgment of this outburst of phenomena I said "Thank you! John," and a hand replied by coming out from behind the curtain and patting me on the shoulder in a friendly kind of way. B., Dec. 6/08.]

C. She squeezed my left hand while this was going on

*B. She has now placed the curtain between my hand and hers.*

*F. to B. Are you certain it is her hand?*

*B. Yes, because I can feel part of the bare hand on the table, and I am squeezing her thumb.*

*12.17 a.m. F. I have asked John if there was enough force for him to show himself. Immediately afterwards—*

C. I saw a white thing over her head clearly.

[So did I; it was just as though something showed itself obligingly in reply to my request. F., Dec. 5/08.]

[The medium squeezed my hand, and immediately afterwards F. and I saw the white thing. C., Dec. 5/08.]

B. I saw the white thing over her head and immediately after that a hand came out from behind the curtain and forcibly pulled me towards the cabinet, quite tightly on my sleeve.

[Light III. shaded.]

[The pull was so violent that it almost pulled me off my chair. B., Dec. 5/08.]

12.19 a.m. C. At that time I had hold of her left hand in my right on my corner of the table, and I could feel her arm up as far as the elbow. Both her legs were around my leg.

B. Her right hand was resting on my left hand on the table and I was holding her thumb. The curtain had been taken away from between our hands.

12.20 a.m. C. *The medium has taken her two legs from around my right leg and now has her left foot on my right foot.*

B. *And she places her right foot on my left foot and I am feeling her knee with my knee.*

C. *The medium rests her head on my right shoulder and is pressing against it. I have my arm around her neck. I have her left hand in my left hand on the table.*

C. I saw the curtain blow out in front of me.

B. Medium's right hand is in my left.

F. I saw something white appear on the furthest side of the cabinet from the medium, up by the door. The white thing I saw was about half way up the curtain and about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  feet away from medium.

B. My control the same as before.

C. I am touched on the head by a hand.

C. At this moment the medium's head is pressing against my head. Her left hand in my left on the table, and with my right hand I am holding the whole of her left arm. Her left foot on my right foot.

B. Medium's right hand resting on my left on the table. Right foot on my left foot, and she moves it backwards and forwards and I follow with my foot.

C. Her left foot was motionless.

12.23 a.m. C. I am touched plainly by a hand on the head.

C. My control the same as before.

F. I also saw it. It was a grey thing.

[Light III. shaded.]

[I saw a greyish thing shoot out from the cabinet over the medium's head towards C. and then go back again. F., Dec. 5/08.]

B. The medium's right hand was rubbing the back of my left hand continuously while that took place, our hands being on the surface of the table, her right foot being on my left foot.

12.24 a.m. *Medium said that she wanted to let go of B.'s hand; she did so and immediately afterwards put it back.*

12.25 a.m. C. She kicked up with her left foot quickly about two inches, her left foot resting across my left foot, and a loud knock sounded.

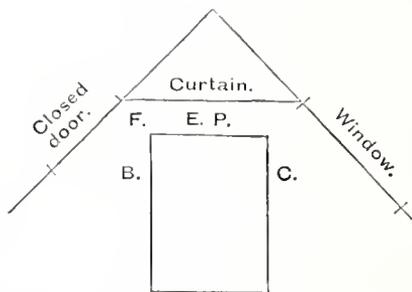
She did this a second time.

C. I had my hand across the under part of the table and know that her leg did not come up.

[After the first rap, which sounded like a kick with the boot on the under side of the table, I stooped down and stretched my left hand across under the table so that, had she kicked with her foot she must have kicked my arm, and although the second rap resulted, nothing touched my arm. C., Dec. 5/08.]

B. "John" has given me a second squeeze on my left arm.

12.26 a.m. *F. asks medium if he may go close up to the curtains. Medium says "Yes," and F. therefore goes between B. and the cabinet.*



*F. I am holding my hand just inside the cabinet, on the extreme right of the medium.*

F. I feel a cold breeze inside the cabinet around my hand. I cannot yet touch anything.

[Light III. shaded.]

C. I am touched. Oh! my hair is pulled by a complete hand through the curtains.

C. Medium's head resting against mine. Medium's left hand [control stated, but omitted in stenographic notes. C. Dec. 5/08]. The whole of her left arm controlled by my right arm, and her left foot on my right foot.

B. The medium's right hand is on my left hand on the table. I am sure it is her right hand as I can feel her thumb. Her right foot is on my left foot and I can feel the side of her leg against my leg.

F. When C. was touched I saw the curtain come right out over the medium's head.

*12.30 a.m. F. She saw me holding my hand up against the cabinet waiting to be touched. She therefore let go of B.'s hand, saying that she was going to do so, put her hand inside the curtain and took hold of mine through the curtain, saying "This is my hand," and she then resumed hold of B.'s hand.*

C. I saw a head come out from the curtains slowly and within six inches of my head, and it stayed out about two seconds, and then went back.

C. The medium's head resting against my head, left hand in my right in her lap, left foot on my right foot.

B. Her right hand on my left hand on her right lap; her right foot on my left foot.

C. I saw a distinct head come out to within a foot from me and then disappear suddenly.

F. I saw it also. I saw it come out about two feet. I only just caught sight of it and could not describe it.

*[It is not clear whether this refers to a repetition of the phenomenon or whether it is a repetition of the description only. F., Mar. 11/09.]*

C. Same control as before.

B. Her right hand on the palm of my left hand on her knee. Her right foot on my left foot.

[Light III. shaded.]

12.38 a.m. F. Something pushes out here against my hand, just on the side of my hand, from inside the curtain.

C. Same control as before.

B. My control is the same.

12.40 a.m. F. The curtain pushed out here against my hand for the second time.

[I wanted to see at how great a height I could be touched. I held my hand more than two feet above her head. I asked her if it was too high. She said "No." Various attempts were made to reach my hand by something within the cabinet, but it apparently could not get so high and struck me only on the wrist. F., Dec. 5/08.]

[While this was going on the medium raised B.'s and my hands about 18 inches off the table saying that this helped. C., Dec. 5/08.]

F. Now there is something playing around about my hand. I am holding my hand above the head of the medium against the curtain.

F. Another strong push below my hand.

C. I saw something white just inside that curtain [right], underneath.

C. A head comes right out between my head and B.'s.

[The object appeared to me to be a small black head at the end of a long neck, on a narrow, knotty body, and it appeared not to issue horizontally from the curtain but to come rather from the right shoulder of the medium. When it retired it moved as if the lower part of it were pivoted on to the shoulder of the medium. I had an extremely good view of it, and during the production of the phenomenon I was certain that the medium was holding my left hand. B., Dec. 5/08.]

C. Control the same as before, except that medium's head is removed from my head to a distance of eight inches, visibly. Her left leg is now across my right knee.

[Light III. shaded.]

B. Her right hand is on my left hand on the edge of the table. Her right foot resting on my left foot.

[I think I had resumed my place at the other end of the table when this phenomenon occurred, though the fact is omitted in the report. F., Mar. 11/09.]

C. The curtain has moved and I saw a kind of white light about an inch across and about six feet from the floor, inside the curtain.

*Medium asks for more light. Light No. 2 turned on.*

## Light II.

F. The curtain is pulled up as though by somebody inside. It is pulled inwards first and is then pushed outwards.

C. I can see the medium's head about six inches from me. Her left hand in my right. Her left leg across my knee.

B. I can see the medium quite clearly. I hold her right hand in my left hand. I cannot see it because it is under the curtain. I feel her right foot on my left foot, which I verify by feeling with my right foot. I feel with both feet, in fact.

C. The curtain blows out strongly.

B. And "John" struck my back twice.

C. My control as before.

B. So is mine, and I am squeezing her hand.

*12.55 a.m. F. asks medium if "John" will try the cork experiment. Medium says "We will try."*

*[The cork apparatus was brought and placed on the table, and the medium tried for two or three minutes to depress the cork without contact, but unsuccessfully. F., Ap. 13/09.]*

B. The curtain was blown right over my left shoulder.

B. The medium's hands were free, but joined in front of her and visible to all of us. Her right foot resting wholly on mine.

*F. I asked medium whether I could look into the cabinet and she said certainly.*

C. I see a slight bulge of the curtain.

**Light I.**

*B. She now parts the curtain altogether and gives it to me to enable us all to look into the cabinet.*

*[The séance was now thought to be ended. Further phenomena, however, still occurred. See C's note below. F., Ap. 13/09.]*

## NOTE BY H. CARRINGTON.

The sixth séance has left on my mind an indelible impression of the reality of at least some of the phenomena occurring in the presence of Eusapia. This relates more particularly to the touches of human hands, which are, in one sense, the most extraordinary and the most incredible of any of the phenomena produced through Eusapia's mediumship. That human hands—having all the peculiarities of hands, even to the presence of finger nails, should become visible and tangible during a séance—these hands not being Eusapia's nor any of the sitters'—this is so utterly at variance with common sense that one finds it next to impossible to believe it. And yet these hands are real, and by no possible means could they have been Eusapia's. During almost the whole time when the touches were taking place she was resting her head against mine, my right hand being around her shoulders, her body resting against my body. Her left hand, passive, was lying in my left hand, firmly grasped by me, while I frequently pressed the whole of her left arm against my body, lifted the hand to the light to make sure that it was really her hand, and traced its connection with her body. The hand was certainly hers, and could not possibly have been any dummy left in my care. I frequently verified that fact. This left hand rested the greater part of the time on Eusapia's left knee, and was at least two feet away from her right hand, which B. was firmly holding *upon* the table. At no time did she attempt even to approximate the hands, far less to effect any substitution. That was out of the question.

Both B. and I are absolutely certain that we continuously held one hand of the medium (which we constantly verified was hers), and during the actual moment of the touch, we frequently disregarded the phenomenon and turned our whole attention to the control of the hands. Her feet were meanwhile held securely by ours under the table. But there is no doubt whatever that the touches were made by a hand and not by a foot, nor by a

non-living thing. I frequently felt the separate fingers and the thumb during the touch, and F. on one occasion distinctly felt the finger nails, which pressed into the upper side of his outstretched finger. Whatever may be the nature and origin of these hands, I am absolutely positive that they are not produced by Eusapia's own hands and equally certain that they were not produced by her head, her feet or any part of her body. The theory of dummy hands, manipulated somehow by the medium during the trance state, is the only possible normal hypothesis, but I consider that also quite excluded for the following reasons:

(1) A careful search of the medium, after the séance, failed to reveal the presence of any such hands.

(2) The sensation of the touch was distinctly human, and quite unlike the sensation that would result from a touch by a dummy hand.

(3) Some part of the medium's body must be free in order to work such an apparatus. No part of her body, however, was free, and no suspicious movements of the kind necessary to manipulate such an instrument were ever perceived by us.

(4) It is almost impossible to conceive the elaborate apparatus that would be necessary to produce all the effects observed by us.

Several important phenomena took place at the conclusion of the sixth séance, after the stenographic record ends. The reason for this is, that the stenographer ceased taking notes when the light was turned up, owing to the lateness of the hour (it was getting on for 2.0 a.m.), but phenomena continued to take place in the light, even when we considered the séance closed. The right hand curtain blew out strongly towards B., who thereupon stated that he felt a hand, playing with his left side, under his arm, as though finger tips were gently stroking him. At this time, both the medium's feet were controlled, and her head and her two hands were clearly visible, in good light, above the table. She was just coming out of the trance state, and still somewhat bewildered.

The table then tilted several times, our hands resting upon it. Thereupon F. asked "John" to try and pick one of the strings of the small guitar, still standing in the corner of the cabinet. We all stood up, including the medium, who was about six inches in front of the cabinet curtains, her skirt not touching them, her two feet were controlled by those on either side of her, and her two hands held. The light was very bright and good—good enough for us to read small print. We stood thus for about a minute, while B. and M. exchanged remarks upon some subject bearing on the

séance. At that moment, F. and I, who were listening closely, clearly perceived a slight twanging sound of the strings of the guitar, as though fingers were playing with them lightly, but were unable to pull one of them with sufficient force to make it resound. The attempt to play these strings was, however, quite clear and audible to F. and myself, who heard it at the same instant.

After the medium had resumed her seat, we felt her head with our hands, to see if the famous "cold breeze" was again issuing from her forehead. We all clearly perceived it with our hands, placed at a distance of about 3 inches from the medium's head. F. held his hand over her mouth and nose and we all held our own noses and mouths and refrained from breathing, but the breeze was still distinctly perceptible. B. then held a small paper flag to the medium's forehead—her nose and mouth, as well as our own, still being well covered. The flag blew right out several times, and then out so forcibly that it turned completely over and wrapped itself once round the flag-staff to which it was attached. The objective nature of this breeze seems thus established, though a thermometer, held to her head, failed to record any lowering of temperature.

At the conclusion of the sixth séance, we asked the medium if we might search her. She at once consented, and proceeded to take off her bodice and skirt, and hand them to us for examination. There was certainly no slit or other contrivance in the skirt or in the bodice, and we also examined her petticoats and other under garments, and felt over her body with our hands, through the few remaining clothes. So far as we could discover, nothing was concealed about her person or her clothes.

I have already remarked that unless the medium could succeed in releasing one hand, such devices would be quite useless to her. I am quite positive, however, that, not only were no such devices concealed about her, but that her hands were not free one instant during the actual production of any phenomenon, unless it is so especially stated in the Report: and in these cases the hands were invariably visible to us. It would have been an excellent occasion for the medium, had she been dishonest, to have concealed such objects about her person, since our refusal to search her at the previous séance (owing to her extreme fatigue) might have suggested to her that we should not want to search in future, and so she would most certainly have concealed apparatus about her at this particular séance, if at all.

H. C., Dec. 7th, 1908.

## NOTE BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

During the production of the phenomena which occurred at this séance, the light in the room was at times lowered and raised, but was always sufficient to allow of the sitters' faces being seen, and their hands also when resting on the table.

Precautions against the substitution of hands or feet were taken by C. and myself. C. had control of her left hand and foot and I had control of her right hand and foot. I assured myself that no substitution of hands took place during the whole sitting by continually feeling the thumb and palm of the medium's hand that I had under control, and by this means I was certain that it was her right hand that was held in, or rested on, my left hand. I also assured myself that no substitution of feet took place by feeling the whole of her right leg against my left leg, and by touching her knee with mine, and also feeling her right foot on my left foot. As an additional precaution, I sometimes felt her two knees with my right hand which I placed under the table, and her two feet with my right foot.

No movement of objects in the cabinet took place. The phenomena consisted principally of the appearance of a hand, the touching, grasping and pulling by it of the sitters, the appearance of a head, and of objects of an indefinable nature of different colours, white, grey and black. I am of opinion that under the conditions of strict control (and of light) described above, it was not possible for Eusapia to produce these phenomena with one of her hands, as any suspicious movement of it would have been felt or seen. Neither could she have produced them with one of her feet, even assuming that by substitution she had got one of them free. She continued quietly seated in a natural position in her chair and it would have been a physical impossibility for her to raise one of her feet to the height above her head at which some of the touches were felt. It would be absurd to imagine that she had been able to transform the form of one of her feet into that of a hand. F. clearly felt the fingers and nails of this hand. C. felt the form and movements of the fingers, and I also distinctly felt the grasp of the thumb and four fingers. The phenomena followed each other rapidly. If they had been carried out by means of one of the medium's hands or feet, they would have necessitated a series of releases and replacements of her hand or foot which would have been detected at once.

The pivoting on Eusapia's shoulder of the lower part of the body belonging to the black head which appeared after 12.40 was certainly suspicious. It would suggest that one of her arms, covered with some material like black cloth, was being used by her for the production of the manifestation, but as both C. and myself were quite sure that we had her left and right hands under perfect control at the moment that the figure appeared, it is difficult to understand how she could have had one of her arms free. The figure appeared and disappeared quite noiselessly.

I noticed that the force or whatever it may be that produces the phenomena, is capable of acting only within a limited area round Eusapia's body. This fact of course suggests the suspicion that the limitation is determined by the distance from her body that she can reach to with her arms and legs after she has effected a substitution of hands or feet. The instance when F. placed his hand on the curtain above Eusapia's head (while she was under complete control of both hands and feet) in order to see how far from her his hand could be touched by the hand within the cabinet, specifically proved, however, that the limitation did not depend on the length of her arms or legs.

The phenomena were not produced by any method of conjuring known to me. I have made a study of this art from my boyhood. Just before the occurrence of a manifestation Eusapia often observed that it was about to take place, and she frequently described the nature of the anticipated phenomenon, and asked the sitters to be sure that they had, at the same time, proper control of her hands and feet. This procedure on her part is contrary to one of the fundamental rules of the conjuring art, which enjoins that the attention of the audience should not be directed to (nor their vigilance increased at) the actual moment that the necessary steps for the production of a trick are being carried out. The result on my mind of the two séances of Dec. 2nd and Dec. 4th is that I find myself being driven to adopt, as a provisional explanation of the phenomena, either that they are brought about by some mechanism which is hidden about the person of Eusapia, which she is able to make use of in some unaccountable manner, while her hands and feet are under control, or that they are produced by some supernatural means.

At the conclusion of the séance, we requested Eusapia Palladino to allow us to search her. She readily consented, divested herself of all her outer clothing and, while she stood on a chair, allowed

us to feel over her body and to examine the clothing that she had taken off. No mechanism (threads, hooks, wires) or anything of a suspicious nature, was found upon her.

The supernormal explanation appears therefore to be the only one that will meet the case, but I hesitate to accept it until I have had further experiments with this remarkable medium.

W. W. B., Dec. 6th, 1908.

NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

It is singular that the impression made upon our minds by any particular séance seems to vary inversely with the effectiveness of the shorthand notes. Certain it is that the report of the sixth séance, which we went through last night, while doubtless accurately recording what took place, gives a most inadequate account of the emotional effect of it all. We were all three completely bowled over. Eusapia had arrived very late owing to the non-arrival of her cab. When she did come she was in a very talkative mood, and button-holed me at every landing of the five flights of stairs to our rooms to give a fresh instalment in Neapolitan dialect (I do not understand Neapolitan dialect) of a burglary which she had once endured. Our journey upstairs occupied about 25 minutes; but it was not enough for the dimensions of her story, which continued long after we sat down at the table. Every device failed to distract her, and it was very late before the first symptoms of the oncoming mediumistic condition, stertorous yawns and amazing hiccoughs, gladdened our eyes and ears. Silenee at last prevailed: but nothing happened. We waited patiently. The table occasionally tilted feebly; sparse raps, or rather bangs, were heard on the table;—nothing else. “The phenomena lag much,” said Eusapia. We were almost disposed to abandon the attempt for the night, when suddenly things began.

I shall not, in this note, go through the séance in detail, but wish to record the fact that it has certainly had a very profound effect on our mental attitude. My own frame of mind, when starting on this investigation, was that, in view of the concurrent opinion of practically all the eminent men of science who have investigated Eusapia's phenomena, it was inconceivable that they could, in turn, have been deceived by the few petty tricks that have, from time to time, been detected, and that it was therefore probable that the phenomena were real. At the same time I could not believe in them. All my own experiments in physical mediumship had resulted

in the discovery of the most childish frauds. Failure had followed upon failure. While, therefore, I tended to accept the general hypothesis that the facts of so-called spiritualistic physical manifestations must, on the evidence, be regarded as probably existent, my mental habit had become so profoundly sceptical, when it came to considering any given alleged instance of them, that I had ceased to have any expectation of finding it able to bear examination. The first séance with Eusapia, accordingly, provoked chiefly a feeling of surprise; the second, of irritation—irritation at finding oneself confronted with a foolish but apparently insoluble problem. The third séance, at which a trumpery trick was detected, came as a sort of relief. At the fourth, where the control of the medium was withdrawn from ourselves, my baffled intelligence sought to evade the responsibility of meeting facts by harbouring grotesque doubts as to the competency of the eminent professors, who took our places, to observe things properly; while at the fifth, where this course was no longer possible, as I was constantly controlling the medium myself, the mental gymnastics involved in seriously facing the necessity of concluding in favour of what was manifestly absurd, produced a kind of intellectual fatigue.

After the sixth, for the first time, I find that my mind, from which the stream of events had hitherto run off like rain from a macintosh, is at last beginning to be capable of absorbing them. For the first time I have the absolute conviction that our observation is not mistaken. I realise, as an appreciable fact in life, that from an empty cabinet I have seen hands and heads come forth, that from behind the curtain of that empty cabinet I have been seized by living fingers, the existence and position of the very nails of which could be felt. I have seen this extraordinary woman sitting visible outside the curtain, held hand and foot by my colleagues, immobile, except for the occasional straining of a limb, while some entity within the curtain has over and over again pressed my hand in a position clearly beyond her reach. I refuse to entertain the possibility of a doubt that we were the victims of a hallucination. I appreciate exactly the fact that ninety-nine people out of a hundred will refuse to entertain the possibility of a doubt that it could be anything else. And, remembering my own belief of a very short time ago, I shall not be able to complain, though I shall unquestionably be annoyed, when I find that to be the case. I shall be told that this sudden declaration of conviction is absurdly hasty, highly unphilosophical and unworthy of a student

of psychical science. Perhaps it is; but the precise moment at which conviction is reached differs in individuals not, I think, according to the cogency of the facts presented to them, but according to their willingness to abandon a position which they feel to have become untenable. Now, I have no prejudices whatever in favour of a set of ideas to which my own previous experiences, limited enough, happen to have led me, and am prepared to abandon them at once as soon as fresh experiences come along to lead to a different conclusion.

Since writing the above I have read the notes of C. and B. The former has apparently submitted with the same completeness as myself to the evidence of facts. B., who is evidently passing through the same stages as I did in my earlier séances, toys with the suggestion of an apparatus, by way of easing his mind. It would be an interesting problem to set before a manufacturer of conjuring machines to devise an apparatus capable of producing alternatively a black flat profile face, a square face on a long neck, and a 'cello like face on a warty nobbly body two feet long; also, a white hand with moveable fingers, a yellowish hand, and a hand invisible altogether,—all these for use outside the curtain. Further, for use within, a hand with practicable living thumb and fingers having nails, capable of reaching high above the medium's head, of patting, pinching and pulling hair, and of so vigorously grasping B. by the coat as almost to upset him into the cabinet. Our manufacturer must so construct the apparatus that it can be actuated unseen by a somewhat stout and elderly lady clad in a tight plain gown, who sits outside the curtain held visibly by hand and foot, in such a way as to escape the observation of two practical conjurors clinging about her and on the look-out for its operation. It must further be of such dimensions as to be concealed about the lady while parading herself for inspection upon a chair, clad in her stays and a short flannel petticoat.

E. F., Dec. 6th, 1908.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE VII.

*December 7th, 1908.*

This séance proved remarkable in several respects; in the first place, for a long-continued exhibition of the curious "dress-swelling" phenomenon which has been so often described by other observers, but which, though we had on several

occasions witnessed it, we had hitherto not had any good opportunity of adequately examining. This phenomenon, which occurred in the No. 1 light (light sufficient to read small print by), continued for about a quarter of an hour, and is described in detail in the shorthand report and B.'s note.

In the second place, it was the first séance, indeed the only one, at which a hand came out from within the curtain and was both felt and clearly seen. This occurred at 12.9 a.m., when B. was grasped on the shoulder by a hand visible to himself and C. (see B.'s note). Further, at 11.20 p.m. a hand came out over the medium's head, visible to F., C. and M. from the stenographer's table, ringing a large tea-bell which had been placed on the table inside the curtain. It attached it with extraordinary rapidity to the medium's hair, leaving it there, and disappeared, to return about a quarter of a minute afterwards, detach it, ring it over the medium's head and throw it on to the séance table. Both the medium's hands were separately and adequately controlled at the time.

Again, this was the only séance at which brilliant lights were visible to all present. See shorthand report at 11.36 p.m. It will be noticed that whereas three of the lights seen were of one kind, viz. a steady though very bright blue-green light of a certain size, the fourth was wholly different, viz. an intermittent sparkling light accompanied by a cracking sound, like the spark between the poles of an electric battery.

Finally, the séance was remarkable for the exceedingly suspicious character of certain of the phenomena taken by themselves and judging by their appearance only, though not by the control which existed at the moment of their production. Among these must be included the white object like a ball of white muslin which appeared at 11.32 p.m.; and the *persona* who professed to kiss B. through the curtain at 12 o'clock and onwards, and shortly afterwards appeared twice, looking like an arm wrapped up in something black, and moving just as the medium's arm would if free, pivoted on her shoulder. A discussion of these phenomena will be found in B.'s note.

Many other phenomena of great interest occurred, *e.g.* the "white thing" with apparently a white arm attached to it, at 10.57 p.m.; the loud bang and three subsequent thumps of a different quality of sound which were made on the table at

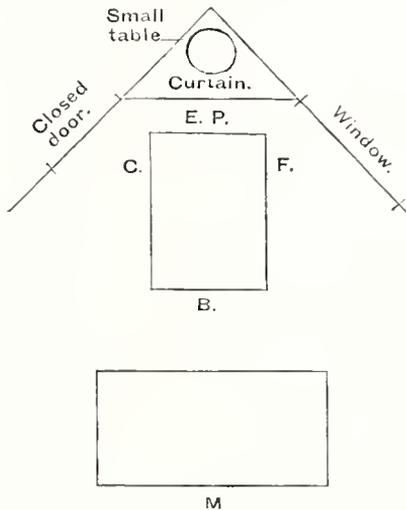
11.1 p.m. in response to four vigorous nods of the medium's head; and the stroking by fingers of F.'s hand while behind the medium's head, at 11.17 p.m., both her hands being separately held in front of her.

### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE VII.

December 7th, 1908.

Present—F., C., B., and M., shorthand writer.

The small table has been tied to staples in the cabinet to prevent "John" from pulling it out and upsetting things. In the middle of it is a board carrying a lump of wet clay. To the medium's left of the clay is a trumpet, and to the right a flageolet. Behind the flageolet is a tea bell and at the back is a toy piano on the top of which lies a guitar. Hanging to the medium's right against the wall is a photographic plate enclosed in red and black paper; above, a small tambourine. In the middle hangs another bell and to the left hangs a broken guitar. On the floor, in front of the table, and to the left, is a small stool with a tambourine upon it. The small bell hangs  $1\frac{1}{2}$  meters from the floor, the small tambourine



the same, and the broken guitar 1 m. 30 c. The lights are: No. 1 = 150 volts, 10 candles, unshaded. No. 2 = 220 volts, 10 candles, unshaded. No. 3 = 110 volts, 10 candles, ruby, shaded with one thickness of thin tissue cream coloured paper, and one thickness of a

white silk handkerchief hung over it so that the whole handkerchief is illumined with a red glow. No. 4 = 110 volts, 5 candles, ruby, unshaded. If anything, Light No. 4 is found to give a stronger light than No. 3, so shaded.

9.30 p.m. Séance begins.

### Light No. I.

9.42 p.m. Tilts begin.

9.47 p.m. F. Medium calls my attention to the swelling of her dress on the left side.

[Her dress was swelling out about half way up, going in and out like a half-filled balloon. F., Dec. 8/08.]

*I watched it and she said "Catch at it quickly with your hand." I said "No, I would rather wait until it becomes stronger." She then said, "Very well; sit between it and the lamp, so as to leave it in the shade."*

C. At the time of this blowing out, she showed us that we were holding different feet, and I put my hand down and felt her two feet, showing that she was not doing this with her feet.

[The manifestations became slightly stronger and all came near to watch. She asked us laughingly to examine for her "mæchîna." F., Dec. 8/08.]

*B. She lifts her dress and her petticoats to show us that there is nothing underneath.*

*F. There is absolutely nothing under her dress.*

[Remembering an experiment of Prof. Curie's which I had seen in Paris, when a small stool was placed about a foot from Eusapia's dress, which thereupon swelled out, touched the leg of the stool and immediately caused it to run rapidly in towards her, I asked her to try and repeat it. She said, "We can always try it, but it does not depend upon me." I took the small stool from the cabinet, ascertained that it had no attachment, and placed it on the ground, to her left. She pulled the curtain of the cabinet partly over it. F., Dec. 8/08.]

*F. She asked me to make contact between the curtain and her dress. I have felt several times between her and the stool right along the floor, especially after the last time she touched the curtain,*

**[Light I.]**

and since I have passed my hand between her and the stool she has not touched the curtain in any way. There is therefore, at the present moment, no possibility of any attachment between her leg and the leg of the stool. Her foot is quite unquestionably on the whole of mine, I can feel it, I can see it, and everything else. Her right foot is on my left foot and she keeps moving it about.

C. As we are talking, the corner of her dress keeps moving out and making towards the curtain and then moves back again.

9.58 p.m. F. Big bulge of dress.

M. notes: I went round and saw it.

F. Another big bulge.

B. I saw it also.

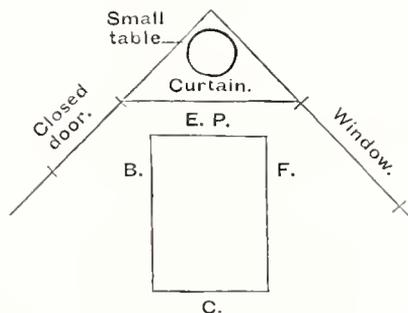
[We remained a considerable time waiting for this experiment to come off, she holding my hand towards the stool, but nothing happened except the bulging of her dress. The stool did not move. F., Dec. 8/08.]

10.0 p.m. "John" tilts five times for less light. Medium is annoyed and says "No."

10.5 p.m. The tilts continued to ask for less light and eventually she yielded.

**Light No. II.**

10.6 p.m. Medium says that C., being unwell, gives a weak "current" and asks him to change places with B.

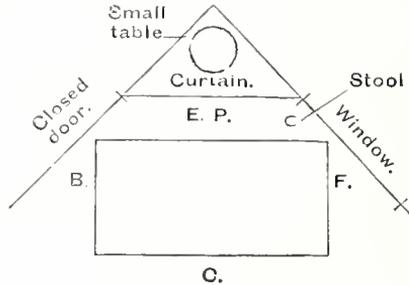


10.11 p.m. Various tilts of an interesting but non-evidential character.

## [Light II.]

10.15 p.m. Various tilts and raps of non-evidential character.

10.15 p.m. *The séance table is turned broadways at our request.*



10.20 p.m. The table tilts on the two legs towards B. Non-evidential.

10.26 p.m. Movements of the curtain.

10.30 p.m. The little stool is knocked over.

F. Her left foot was immovable on my left foot, and her left hand was on the table with mine, visible.

B. Her right hand was on the table on my corner and visible, my left hand on her two knees, and her right foot on the toes of my left foot.

F. The little stool which I had put under the curtain has gone somewhere.

[*Since I had felt that there was no attachment between her and this stool, there had been no relaxation of control, except during the moment that the séance table was being turned round, and I am certain that she had no opportunity of making any attachment. F., Dec. 8/08.*]

F. She squeezes my hand and the curtain comes out and covers my chair.

F. Her hand was about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the curtain and her foot on mine, as before.

B. Same control as before. Her back is at least a foot from the curtains.

## [Light II.]

F. Immediately after, she held my hand out away from her towards the small stool, which is somewhere (under the curtains), I do not know where, and it jumped.

*10.33 p.m. F. I cannot see the little stool because it is under the curtains.*

F. Both her hands are free but quite visible. Her left foot is on mine.

B. I also see both her hands, free, and both her knees, which are under the table, and her right foot is on my left foot.

*10.34 p.m. Medium asks for less light. Light No. 3.*

## Light III.

F. *In this light I can see across the room, I can see the bar at the head of my bedstead (about 14 feet away), and I can see B.'s face opposite me quite plainly. I can see all the separate fingers of the medium at a distance of two feet from my face.*

C. *I can see medium's face.*

B. *I can recognise F. opposite me. I can also see the crack in the table.*

10.46 p.m. Some object in the cabinet moves.

The séance table gives three violent tilts towards medium.

B. Perfect control of the medium on both sides.

[These tilts were without contact, but we had grown tired of giving elaborate control of minor phenomena. F., Dec. 8/08.]

10.53 p.m. F. The curtain comes out towards me again.

B. The control is the same as before.

F. Yes.

*10.54 p.m. Medium asked if she could touch the curtain for a moment, but she did not attach anything to it.*

10.56 p.m. Four tilts of the table without contact, meaning "Talk."

[F. proceeded to deliver an address on bimetallism, while we were all paying close attention to the curtain, as this is generally a sign of something about to happen. Dec. 8/08.]

## [Light III.]

10.57 p.m. B. A white thing comes out.

C. I saw that white thing come out of the curtain, apparently round the right-hand curtain, over the table.

F. Her left hand is motionless on her lap, in mine, and I can feel the thumb, and her left toe and heel are planted firmly on my right foot.

B. Her right hand, which I am absolutely certain is her right hand, as I feel the fingers, rests on my left hand, both resting in her right lap. Her right foot on my left foot.

B. Not only did I see the white thing, but also what appeared to be a white arm attached to it. Note the medium is dressed in black.

10.58. p.m. F. Something white appeared above the medium's shoulder about two feet away.

F. I hold the left hand absolutely, feeling the thumb.

B. Her right hand on my left hand, both on my knee. Her right foot on my left foot.

*10.59 p.m. F. Medium says, "I am going to look for something" and pinches my right hand in her left, stretched straight behind towards the cabinet.*

The small stool continues to move under her hand.

F. My right hand being *below* her hand. Her foot on mine, and I have verified the foot control.

*B. Her right hand has just left my left hand for a moment. Both hands are now on her right knee, and her right foot continues completely on my left foot.*

[*When Eusapia removes her hand in this way, she always mentions it beforehand. F., Dec. 8/08.*]

11.1 p.m. Four nods of her head are followed by four thumps on the table. She did not touch the table with her head.

[The first of these thumps was like a blow struck by a mallet. F., Dec. 8/08.]

F. Her hands were on her lap, my right hand being on her left knee and her left foot on mine.

B. Control exactly the same as before.

## [Light III.]

11.2 p.m. She says that she will try to levitate the table whereupon a partial levitation takes place.

F. Her left hand being in my right on her lap and not touching the table at all. Left foot firmly on mine.

B. During the levitation I held her right hand in my left hand resting in her lap. Her right foot on my left foot.

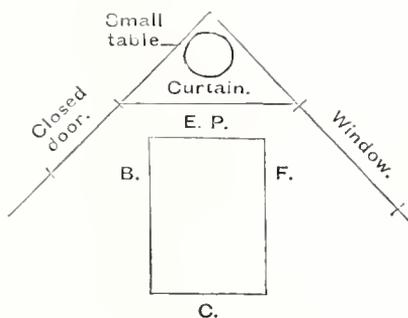
11.7 p.m. F. I asked if "John" would show himself outside the curtain, whereupon the table tilts four times, as far as I can see without any contact, meaning "talk."

[Nonsense talked as before, close attention being paid. F., Dec. 8/08.]

F. Something has shot out about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet towards B.'s head. It seemed to me an almost misty black thing this time. I could not see it thoroughly as it was not against the illuminated background of the door.

F. I have got hold of her left hand in my right on her lap.

11.10 p.m. Medium says that she did not like the séance table that way and it is again turned round to its usual position. Medium puts the right hand curtain over the table.



11.11 p.m. F. She has asked me to put my right hand on her back.

11.12 p.m. F. She says that she is going to find something with her foot. She is kicking about with her foot [i.e. under the table in front of her. F., Dec. 8/08.]

11.13 p.m. F. The small table in the cabinet was shaken and something fell from it, while she was kicking with her left foot with mine under the séance table.

## Light III.]

[*It was then explained to "John" that he need not trouble about trying to bring out the small table, as it was fastened, and he was asked to confine his attention to the objects on it. F., Dec. 8/08.*]

B. She had her right hand on my left hand always resting on her knee, and she moved her leg two or three times. I followed the movements with my leg.

11.17 p.m. F. I am touched on the back of the fingers. My hand is on the back of her neck and gentle fingers came and touched my hand with their tips.

F. Her left hand is visibly in mine on the table. Her left foot tightly on mine.

B. She has her right hand in my left hand resting on the table, under the curtain. Her right foot is still on my left foot.

[Here the obvious suggestion to a critic is that I must have been holding a dummy hand under the curtain; but I continuously verified that it was a natural hand, and a right hand, by feeling the fingers and thumb and feeling their movements. B., Dec. 8/08.]

11.20 p.m. C. A bell from the cabinet is lifted from the small table in the cabinet, through the curtains, and put upon the medium's head and remains there.

F. I heard the bell, which had been on the table in the cabinet, begin to ring, and then it suddenly appeared outside the curtain and came over the medium's head, and it hung there and went on ringing. She told me it was tied to her head. I felt with my fingers and felt something like muslin tying it to her hair. As I was looking at it, I suddenly saw a white thing which I thought was the medium's right hand, come to untie the bell, ring it hard and throw it on to the séance table. This was within one foot of my nose. I could see the medium's face perfectly.

[*See my expanded note below. F., Dec. 8/08.*]

B. I saw the bell come out and lie on the medium's head, and also saw it thrown from her head on to the table.

C. I saw the hand coming to untie the bell and heard the bell ringing above her head, also saw the hand throw it out on the table.

## [Light III.]

[I also saw this hand distinctly lift, ring and throw the bell, but thought that it was F. or medium's hand. M., Dec. 8/08.]

[B. I did not see the hand. Dec. 8/08.]

F. Her left hand was visibly in my right all the time on the table.

B. During the whole of this phenomenon her right hand was resting on my left hand on the table and her right foot on my left foot.

F. I had got the whole of her left hand on the table visibly in my right on my corner of the table, so that it is perfectly clear that there cannot be any question of substitution.

11.26 p.m. F. A white thing again came out over her head.

11.30 p.m. C. I saw a white object,—square—distinctly come out from behind the right-hand curtain at a distance of about three inches over the medium's head.

B. I also saw this white object, but I think only a side view of it. I could see irregularities on its surface.

F. It was on the other side of the curtain from me so that I did not see it. The medium's head was resting against my head, and her left hand is on the corner of the table in mine. Foot absolutely on mine.

B. My control of foot and hand is exactly the same as before.

11.32 p.m. C. A white object came out from behind the curtain. This time it issued about 18 inches in front of the curtain and stayed out about one second and then disappeared.

B. I also distinctly saw the object, as it was quite close to me.

F. I saw it this time because it came round with a swing. As far as I could see it looked to me like a bunch of white muslin, and it seemed to bring the curtain with it as it moved towards me.

[I only got a very fleeting glimpse of this object, but I confess that it had a most suspicious appearance. It was just as though the medium had put a ball of white muslin out from the further side of the right curtain with her right hand, brought it towards

## [Light III.]

me, making the curtain move with it, as would have been the case if it had really been her arm. F., Dec. 8/08.]

F. My control on this side was quite complete.

B. My control also quite complete. I confirm with my hand that her foot is really on mine.

*11.36 p.m. F. The medium puts her head behind the curtain and makes a sudden dive to the right.*

[At the same time I thought I saw a white object appear outside the curtain to the extreme right, much further than she could have reached with her head. The movement was similar to the movement she makes with her other limbs when she wishes to stimulate the production of the phenomena. F., Dec. 8/08.]

F. A light flashed out about a foot behind and above the medium's head. It was of a brilliant bluish-green colour.

[It was a steady light and lasted about two seconds. F., Dec. 8/08.]

M. I saw it also, it seemed to me to be about the size of a six-penny piece, like the eye of a cat in the dark, so strong that it made me wink.

C. and B. did not see this light.

11.37 p.m. F. Now another light has come out, this time on the medium's lap.

F. Her left hand is on the table in mine.

*[I asked if the lights might be shown to the others, who had not yet seen them owing to the position of the curtain. F., Dec. 8/08.]*

11.42 p.m. Five tilts of the séance table, apparently without contact, ask for less light.

F. My hand on her lap with hers.

B. My hand on hers, control of feet also the same.

*11.45 p.m. Light No. 4. See head note; this light is if anything stronger than Light III.*

**Light IV.**

B. Both C. and I saw a brilliant light inside the cabinet about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from medium, inside the right-hand curtain.

[The light was of a bluish-green colour, quite bright, and about three feet from the ground behind the extreme edge of the right curtain. B., Dec. 8/08.]

B. Her right hand was on my left hand, but she had lifted her foot and placed it on the bar of her chair. I have verified this fact with my hand.

F. Her hand in mine on this side of the table, and her left foot was on mine.

11.46 p.m. F. There it is again over her head. She kicked with her leg. It is a different kind of light this time, because it seemed to crack. It was not a bright steady light as before, but a small sparkling light, and appeared about four to five inches above her head.

M. I also saw this light and agree with F.'s description.

*B. Sniffs behind the curtain, and says, "There are no indications of the smell of phosphorus."*

*[I smelt no phosphorus either. F., Dec. 8/08.]*

*11.54 p.m. Table tilts four times, meaning "talk."*

B. Something has touched my jacket from behind the curtain.

*[Medium having asked particularly that the séance should close before twelve was told it was now time to stop. She refused to do so, however, and said that "Some one" was coming for B. She said that he would kiss him. Dec. 8/08.]*

B. Something pressed through the curtains against my face and made a sound.

F. All this time her left hand is in mine on her lap. I know it is the left hand. Her head is always resting on mine.

B. My control as before except that she has now taken her right foot from her chair and is now pressing my left foot with it.

11.58 p.m. B. Something has touched me twice.

*Medium says that a man is coming out towards B.*

## [Light IV.]

[Here medium was told of the clay which had been placed inside the cabinet, and an imprint of fingers was asked for. She felt F.'s hand as though feeling the clay and said that the clay is too wet. Dec. 8/08.] [In point of fact, it was very wet. She had not, to the best of my belief, had any opportunity of seeing it. F., June 25/09.]

12 p.m. B. Something pushes the curtain towards me from behind the curtain, close to me, and it makes a sound similar to that produced by the clicking of the nails.

*B. The medium had previously said that this person was going to give me a kiss.*

12.1 a.m. B. The thing has again pressed against the curtain and made the same sound as before.

B. The control the same as before of both hands and feet. Her right hand on the table during these last phenomena. Her right foot is on my left foot.

F. Control the same.

[This "something," although not stated in the notes, touched my face twice while making the clicking sound. B., Dec. 8/08.]

12.2 a.m. F. While the medium was resting her head on my shoulder, violent movements of the curtain took place from inside the cabinet.

*12.4 a.m. F. She has now put my hand across her two knees so as to show that it was not her foot that did it.*

*12.5 a.m. F. asks for the thing that kissed B. to show itself outside the cabinet; medium says it will.*

12.5½ a.m. F. I saw a thing exactly like the head of a nine-pin or a small wooden head. It stayed out about 3 seconds. [See my extended note below. F., Dec. 8/08.]

B. I saw this object come out too.

[It came from the furthest side of the right curtain, past B.'s head, rather slowly, towards F., above the level of our heads, and then went back. B. and F., Dec. 8/08.]

## [Light IV.]

F. It is certainly not the medium's left hand, which is motionless on this corner of the table.

B. And it is certainly not the right hand, because I had control of it all the time. My foot control is the same.

12.9 a.m. B. I saw a hand distinctly come out of the [extreme right of the] curtain; it grasped my left shoulder and I felt its thumb and four fingers. My control is the same as before.

[See my expanded note below. B., Dec. 8/08.]

C. I saw the white hand which seemed to me to remain out about 3 seconds.

*F. That was the first time that a visible hand has caught hold of anyone outside the curtain.*

F. I was complaining to the medium that the head which came out was not large enough to be a man's head. She said that she had not seen it. While we were talking it came out again. This time it appeared to me to be larger and it waggled about for quite a time between B. and me.

F. I had her left hand absolutely in my left hand and her left foot on my right foot and my right hand across both knees.

B. My control is the same as before.

*12.19 a.m. F. asks medium to get "John" to play the toy piano. She says, "We will try." Medium says to B., "Play the piano with your fingers [on the table]." B. imitates the playing of a piano, but nothing happens and medium says, "Non lo fa" ("He won't do it").*

12.25 a.m. Movements of the table.

F. I have my right leg between her leg and the table and it is curled round the table leg. Her left arm was motionless across my shoulder, my right hand is on her two knees and her left foot on my foot.

B. She holds my left hand with her right hand. She squeezes my hand while this levitation takes place. My hand was also on her knee, in her hand. Her right foot on my left foot.

## [Light IV.]

12.27 a.m. A similar movement has again happened.

F. Her left hand was off the table. My right hand was this time pinched by her right hand on her lap.

B. My control the same as before, except that she is squeezing both our hands.

[Her right hand held both B.'s and mine, her left hand was visible to me, but free, some distance above my corner of the table. F., Dec. 8/08.]

12.30 a.m. *Medium stands up, as also F. and B.*

*Lights Nos. 3, 2, and 1 successively, and séance is terminated.*

## NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

It is difficult to say precisely why, but last night's séance marks a certain set-back in the process of my mental absorption of these phenomena. It is not that we have the impression that our observation left any loop-hole for fraud on the part of Eusapia, for I have never been more absolutely certain of the efficiency of our control. More than this, owing to the disposition of the silk handkerchief which hung about and below the red lamp, producing a larger radiant surface, the light was somewhat better than at the preceding séance; while the manifestations themselves appeared with an unhurried deliberacy which admitted of far more detailed observation. The set-back is probably due to the preposterous character of the manifestations themselves. For example, Eusapia had announced that somebody was going to kiss B. through the curtain. Presently, the curtain did approach his face, making a clicking sound, a thoroughly bad imitation of a kiss, such as would be made by clicking the thumb nail against that of the middle finger. This happened two or three times, and I asked if it were "John." "No," said Eusapia, "it is un' altra persona." I then tried, with sweet words, to lure this "altra persona" to show his face outside the curtain. "He will do so," said Eusapia, and he did. From the extreme right of the curtain there appeared a thing like a knobbed nine-pin, or like an arm with a closed fist, wrapped up in something black. It came slowly towards me (who was sitting on Eusapia's left) as though pivoted on her right shoulder, made a kind of grotesque reverence, about a foot above the level of my head and retired with deliberation,

having been visible at least three seconds. I asked Eusapia who it was. She said she did not know the name, but that it was a man, clean shaved. I complained that it didn't look in the least like a man, that its head was too small. As an acquaintance it would be, in fact, preposterous, a face fit only for a cocoanut shy. It immediately reappeared, this time larger, but still an outrage on any kind of humanity. I am absolutely certain of the control of the hand held by me. B. is equally certain of the medium's right hand, which, if the head were any arm of hers, could alone have been in play. What then was this ridiculous "altra persona?" B. has a provisional theory. For myself I can suggest none.

The incident of the bell was remarkable. By measurement made subsequently, the bell was situated behind and slightly to the right of the medium, about 2 feet from her right shoulder. It announced itself by ringing for a moment in the cabinet; it then came out, appeared over the medium's head, ringing as it came, and remained dangling over her left ear within one foot of my face. "It's tied on," she said. I felt with my left hand, and found that something, which, in the dim light seemed like a strand of muslin, but which I afterwards ascertained was probably a loose piece of velvet ribbon she wore in her hair, was passed through the handle of the bell and attached it to her hair. I watched the bell for a moment or two, and was just about to untie and detach it, when I saw a natural-looking hand appear quietly from behind her neck, undo the bell, ring it over her head and throw it on the table in front of her. While the hand was detaching the bell, I made no doubt but that the medium had found it uncomfortable, and had freed her right hand to take it away. When, however, it was rung and thrown upon the table, it struck me as a curious action for the medium to do herself, and I asked B. whether he still held her right hand. He said he had done so all the time. That he was mistakenly holding her left hand was impossible, as this was on my corner of the table, in my right and perfectly visible. It must be noted that the light was sufficiently good for the stenographer, seated at the further side of a separate table, and distant from the medium about six feet (by subsequent measurement), to see the hand while the bell was being detached.

Of the lights sufficient description has been made in the report. The first one, visible to me and to the stenographer, about a foot or eighteen inches above Eusapia's head, and within the curtains,

as I immediately ascertained with my left hand, had the appearance of a brilliant self-luminous aquamarine; of the second, on her lap, I only caught a glimpse; the fourth, visible to the stenographer and myself, was of a wholly different character from the first, and resembled the sparks given off between the poles of a battery. That the manufacture of these luminosities is subject to volition seems shown by the readiness with which a light appeared, at request, in a different place, so as to be visible to the other members of the circle.

It will be gathered from the notes that, notwithstanding the careful description of the control, and our precautions in ascertaining that we each held separate hands, and *real* hands, were unremitting—several of the phenomena wore a most suspicious appearance. I refer especially to the Aunt Sally kind of head, to the imitation kiss bestowed upon B., and to the white muslin ball and the movement of the curtain accompanying its movement (though the glance I had of this was so fleeting that I cannot be quite sure of my observation). Eusapia took a long time coming to herself when the light was turned up, though she had never, during this séance, appeared to be in as deep a trance as during the previous one. As we walked downstairs she said that she did not feel nearly so tired, but that her mind was very confused and she feared that the séance had not been a good one. Notwithstanding the fact that the programme of phenomena had been added to by the appearance of hands outside the curtains which did things, and of so-called heads which offered themselves for more detailed observation, it cannot be said that the impression left by this séance was nearly so strong as that we received from the 6th, though we are as far away as ever from finding the slightest ground for imputing fraud to Eusapia. The singular lights, of two different kinds, and appearing under conditions which seem to preclude their having been produced by trickery, were, however, of very great interest.

E. F., Dec. 8th, 1908.

#### NOTE BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

The results obtained at this séance tend to strengthen my growing conviction of the supernormal nature of some of the phenomena produced by Eusapia. Others, however, occurred under circumstances which, although they in no way diminish our increasing assurance of the occasional exhibition of a supernormal force, suggested an element

of fraud, since they were not what Eusapia asserted them to be. Thus at 12.5½ she said that the object that presented itself from out of the curtain was a head; whereas in appearance it more resembled an arm with a closed fist, covered by some black material. Again, at 12 she remarked that the sounds like the clicking together of a thumb and finger heard by me when my cheek was touched from behind the curtain, were kisses. The reason why we did not conclude that these particular phenomena were fraudulent was that we were quite sure that the control of the hands and feet of Eusapia was perfect at the time. I will return to these special manifestations later on.

As regards the nature of my own personal control, it will not be necessary to describe it in detail, as I have already done so in my notes of the séances of the 2nd and 4th December. I will only say that I took the same precautions to assure myself that it was really Eusapia's right hand and right foot that I had under my charge, and that I did not relax my vigilance for a moment, but concentrated my attention, at the critical moment when each phenomena occurred, more on the control than on the manifestation.

It should be noted that equally remarkable results were obtained when F. and C. controlled as when F. and I, or C. and I did so. I attach great importance to the phenomenon that occurred at the very beginning of the séance, viz. the "gonfiamento" or swelling out of Eusapia's dress which took place before and after F. had placed the little stool on the floor on the left side of the medium in order to try and repeat the experiment which he had witnessed with the late M. Curie and his colleagues of the *Institut Général Psychologique* in Paris. If the stringent conditions under which these movements of Eusapia's dress took place are considered, it will be seen that this phenomenon, although not of a startling character, was of great evidential value. She had hardly sat down when she called our attention to the movement of her dress. The light had not been lowered: it was the strongest that we used at these séances—not shaded. By it I could read small print and see every object in the room clearly. The medium's hands rested quietly on the table in full view of us all, and her feet were under the strictest control of F. and C. We all watched the peculiar movement. The force under the dress made an evidently intelligent effort to reach the stool. The bulge in the garment was not a pointed one, but more like what a breeze of wind would produce. The dress did not, however, swell out *en masse*; it only did so at a certain part, as if a

small balloon under the garment were pushing it towards the stool. F. felt right down the dress at the time of the bulging and did not feel any hard object under it. Eusapia laughingly asked us to find "la macchina," and thereupon lifted her dress and petticoats. No apparatus, such as a rod, which the late Dr. Hodgson suggested could have been employed by her, or an india-rubber tube, through which a gust of wind could have been blown, or anything else, was found. After Eusapia had lowered her dress, the movement recommenced. After the swelling occurred the lower edge of the dress touching the floor slid towards the stool in a peculiar manner. This lower edge repeatedly advanced and retired slowly; at each successive advance gradually diminishing the distance between it and the stool. I compared this sliding motion in my mind, at the time, to the movement of a protuberance from the body of a unicellular organism. F. felt with his hand several times between the dress and the stool and found no attachment. Thus, the conditions of this phenomenon were:

- (1) It was carried out in good light.
- (2) It was seen by all members of the Committee at the same time. •
- (3) No hard object was felt causing the bulge.
- (4) No attachment was found between the dress and the stool.
- (5) No mechanism was discovered under the dress.
- (6) The hands of Eusapia were in full view resting on the table.
- (7) The feet were under absolute control.

The thumps on the table, which took place at 11.1 p.m., following the nods of Eusapia's head, were very remarkable. Her hands, at the time, were on her right lap, under control, and her feet under control also. I fail to see how, under the prevailing conditions, she could possibly have produced a very loud sound, as of a blow struck with a mallet, and the thuds which followed.

The light that I saw at 11.45 p.m. was a bright one of a bluish-green colour, and of an intensity greater than that produced by the head of a match when rubbed between the fingers, or by phosphorised oil. It was a steady light. Neither F. nor myself perceived any indications of the smell of phosphorus.

I had felt the touch and grasp of a hand at the previous séances. For the first time, at this one, I clearly *saw* a hand. It appeared from behind the right-hand curtain at about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the floor,

advanced towards my right shoulder and gave it a strong grip, after which it disappeared behind the curtain. The hand appeared to be a man's hand of a natural colour, larger than Eusapia's, which I subsequently examined. I cannot, however, be sure of the size of the hand, as it is difficult to judge of the size of objects in a weak light.

I will now return to the suspicious phenomena. First, before the black object appeared, viz., at 12.5½ a.m., the medium had said that a head was about to appear. When the object came out of the cabinet, it looked more like an arm covered with black material, (possibly part of the cabinet curtain wound round it), than a head. This gave rise, in my mind, to the suspicion that it might have been the arm of the medium covered in this manner, but I explain below the difficulties of this supposition. F. made the remark that the apparition was not large enough to be a head, whereupon it came out again, but was now of an enlarged size. Both F. and myself noticed the increase in its bulk.

Again, when Eusapia had said that some one was coming for me who would kiss me, I certainly, immediately after she had made this remark, felt some hard object pressing through the curtain against my cheek, but it did not feel like a face. It felt like a closed hand, and the sound that was emitted by it did not resemble that of a kiss, but was more like the clicking of the nails of a thumb and of a finger. The difference in the sound was noticed by F., C., and myself. Doubtless the above phenomena have an element of a suspicious nature attached to them, but in trying to explain them by normal means I have to ask myself how, under the kind of control described in the Report, when exchange of hands could not take place owing to the medium's hands being kept too far apart, and when the successive phenomena would require a series of releases and replacements of her hands which could not fail to be detected, it was possible for Eusapia to produce fraudulently the appearance of a black arm first of one size and then of another, and also, at the same séance, the appearance of a white arm, while she is dressed in a tight fitting black dress with tightly fastened sleeves down to her wrists. I also ask myself how it was possible for her, under the strict control above indicated, to introduce her hand, undetected, behind the curtain and produce the imitation of a sound of a kiss with her fingers. I cannot, in fact, see any way of accounting for these incidents by normal means.

W. W. B., Dec. 9th, 1908.

## REMARKS ON SÉANCE VIII.

*December 10th, 1908.*

To this séance four friends of F.'s were invited. These were: Mr. Ryan, a gentleman with a medical training whom F. judged and who proved to be a particularly painstaking and shrewd observer, Lord Sudeley and two American ladies, Signora X. and Miss Y., daughters of an eminent literary man. These ladies were asked to examine the medium prior to the séance in a more complete way than had previously been attempted. On her arrival upstairs Eusapia was invited by them to submit to an examination in their room, to which she was first taken. Their detailed report of this examination will be found appended to the shorthand report. On its conclusion, nothing of a suspicious character having been found, Eusapia was immediately brought into the séance room. The small table within the cabinet was tied down as during the previous séance, and the disposition of the objects within the cabinet was the same. The medium's feet were tied to the rungs of the controllers' chairs, but in such a way only as to prevent her reaching with them behind her own chair.

The séance began at 9.25, and after about 20 minutes various minor phenomena, movements and levitations of the séance table, began. More than an hour, however, elapsed before the manifestations became at all powerful, but once they did start, they followed one another with extreme rapidity, making adequate description and note-taking extremely difficult. At first they were of the usual character, movements of the table, sometimes without any apparent contact by the medium, movements of the curtain, often of great violence, touches on the controllers to either side, and loud noises within the curtain.

Just after 11.55 the first of a series of transportations of objects which had been placed on the small table behind the curtain took place. R. was controlling to the medium's left, and F. to her right. A violent movement of the left curtain on R.'s side occurred, ending in its being thrown over to the further end of the séance table, and the trumpet came out on to R.'s shoulder and slid down his right arm; the medium's

two hands being separately held at a distance from one another, while the light (No. III.) was sufficient to enable her head to be continuously visible. A few minutes afterwards, the toy piano followed the trumpet, striking R. gently on the head and falling violently to the ground; and again at a later period, about 12.23, the board carrying a lump of wet clay which had originally been placed on the small table in the cabinet, directly behind the medium, emerged from the extreme left of the curtain, behind R.'s right shoulder, landed upon his shoulder, slid slowly down his right arm to the table on which the medium was holding his right hand, crossed the table, a distance of about 10 to 12 inches, and stopped on the top of F.'s right hand, under which was the right hand of the medium. Of the three transportations this was the most interesting, owing to the size of the object lifted (the board was about 12 ins.  $\times$  8 ins., and the lump of clay standing on it about the size of an ordinary Genoa cake while the total weight was 1 k. 700 gr. = 3.6 lbs.), and the deliberacy of its movement, as well as to the fact that its progress was followed by at least one observer, C., from the moment that it first appeared outside the curtain. C., who was standing behind F.'s chair to the medium's right, first saw the clay at the side of the curtain near the window, and reports (see his note attached to the shorthand report) that he saw a white opaque object about 6 ins.  $\times$  3 ins. apparently carrying it. The degree of light can be judged by the distance (6 to 8 ft.) from which he was able to see the clay at its first appearance, a degree of light which makes it inconceivable that it could have been carried by either of the medium's hands, which were resting, perfectly visible, on the table.

At 12.46 a.m. the flageolet came out, unseen however, rapped three times on F.'s head, and fell on his shoulder, at a time when F. was holding the medium's right hand close to his face, and R. reported that he had thorough control of her left; and very shortly afterwards the bell began ringing inside the curtain and was deposited on the top of the medium's head from between the parting of the curtains, F. seeing it arrive there. The only distinctly new phenomenon that happened at this séance was one which took place at about 1.7 a.m. It

has already been stated that the medium's feet had been tied by cords attached to the rungs of the controllers' chairs. Just after 1.5 a.m. (though not noted at the time) the medium, evidently foreseeing the phenomenon (whether fraudulently accomplished or not), asked F. to verify the fastenings of her left foot. He stooped under the table and verified the fastenings of both feet and then resumed his place, with his hand on Eusapia's head, supporting it, as she said she was tired, and seemed to be falling into a deeper state of trance. About 2 minutes afterwards, a hand appeared between the parting of the curtains over the medium's head and dropped upon it, close to F.'s hand, a coil of rope. This proved to be the end of the cord which B. had originally fastened with four tightly drawn reef-knots round the medium's left ankle, and which F. thought he had verified just previously. See the shorthand report and F.'s note attached.

In addition to these transportations of objects, many other interesting phenomena took place in the course of the séance. See especially the appearance of a large white object at 12.14 a.m., seen from opposite by F. and C., and sideways by R., thus probably accounting for the varying descriptions given of it by the different observers. Further, many touches and grasps of hands, some of them (*e.g.* those on C. occurring at about 12.47 a.m. and 1 a.m.) at a distance of about 3 feet from the curtain, and about the same from the medium in conditions of light and control which made it inconceivable that she could have produced them fraudulently.

#### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE VIII.

*December 10th, 1908.*

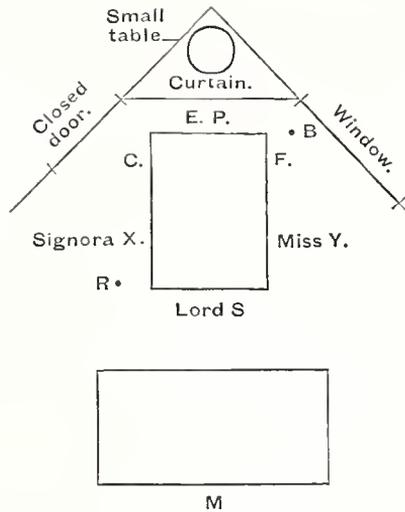
Present: F., B., C., Ryan, Lord Sudeley, Signora X., Miss Y., and M., stenographer.

*Lights as in Séance VII.*

*Medium's legs tied to the legs of the controllers' chairs, leaving feet play.* [The measurement is omitted in the shorthand report. The medium's feet were not tied closely to the chairs, but so as to prevent her reaching with them behind her own chair. F., May 18/09.]

[*Lights as in Séance VII. Small table in cabinet tied down, and disposition of objects upon it as before. F., May, 19/09.*]

9.25 p.m. Séance began.



### Light No. I.

9.42 p.m. Non-evidential tilts begin.

9.49 p.m. Raps in table follow gestures by medium, non-evidential.

Medium asks F. to rap on table. He does so, and a very poor imitation of the rhythms follow, non-evidential, owing to her right hand being on the table.

10.6 p.m. *Medium asks for less light. Light II.*

### Light II.

10.15 p.m. F. The table tilts towards medium, and then a complete levitation of it.

F. Her hands on the table, holding and above C.'s and my hands. Her left foot on mine.

C. Her right foot was just touching my left foot. My left knee pressing against her right knee.

10.18 p.m. Two complete levitations of the table closely following one upon the other.

F. She had asked all except the controllers to take their hands off the table, and they had accordingly sat back. My right hand across both her knees. Her left foot undoubtedly on mine. Both her hands on the table and visible.

## [Light II.]

C. Her right foot pressing against my left foot. My left knee pressing against her right knee. I passed my hand between her body and the table several times [showing that there was no hook or attachment. C., Dec. 11/08.]

10.21 p.m. Further non-evidential movements.

10.24 p.m. F. The table was merely balancing.

F. The medium raised both C.'s and my hands off the table, and then the table rocked to and fro [on the two legs to medium's right. F., Dec. 11/08] four or five times.

F. Her hands are not touching the table. Her foot is on my foot, and there is a clear space all the way down this table leg.

C. F. and I both had our hands on the medium's knees while the rocking was going on.

*10.31 p.m. F. The medium looks as if she is getting sleepy.*

F. After two or three minutes of complete silence, she held my hand down towards the bottom of the curtain, and something black flashed out near me. [This was very dimly seen; I do not know what it was. F., Dec. 11/08.]

B. I saw that.

F. Her foot on my toe.

*10.34 p.m. F. She asks me to hold my hand out towards the curtain, and she wants the chain made. She asks whether she can touch the curtain; does so, and then puts her hand back to the table. I can see my hand, and am moving it between her and the curtain [showing that when she touched the curtain she made no attachment. F. Dec. 11/08]. She holds her hand towards the curtain in front of me.*

*10.36 p.m. F. Still nothing happens, and the medium turns back to the table.*

*10.38 p.m. F. She holds my hand and squeezes it several times.*

*10.40 p.m. Medium asks whether she can touch the curtain to the right of her; she does so, and puts her hand back into C.'s.*

*10.43 p.m. F. C. and I close the curtains, which had become rather widely separated [the back of her chair having receded into*

## [Light II.]

the cabinet. F. Dec. 11/08]. Almost immediately afterwards she pulled the left curtain out again.

10.44 p.m. F. She holds out her left hand again towards the curtain, and I think I can see the curtain move [very slightly. F., Dec. 11/08].

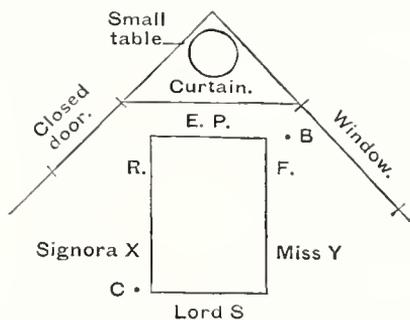
10.46 p.m. F. She held my hand out towards the curtain, and the curtain came out.

10.47 p.m. Medium says that she cannot make out why the phenomena delay so.

10.50 p.m. F. Medium says suddenly "Fa lo venire" ("make it come out") [and I held my hand towards the curtain. F., Dec. 11/08], and immediately the curtain comes out almost as far as my elbow, quite two feet.

F. Her left hand being motionless on mine on the table. Her left foot on mine under the table.

10.53 p.m. R. and C. change places, at medium's request.



10.54 p.m. F. and R. verify tying of the feet.

11.0 p.m. F. Movements of the curtain.

F. My hand being held by hers about six inches from it. Hands being absolutely visible.

11.0 p.m. Medium says to F. "Preudilo" ("take it"), pointing to window curtain. F. touches it, and a movement at the extreme left of the curtain near the window, about three feet from ground, follows.

F. Her left hand on the table.

## [Light II.]

11.1 p.m. F. Another very small movement at the extreme side of the curtain towards the window.

F. Her hand holding mine above the table.

R. I had her right hand in my right hand. My left hand being on her left thigh.

*11.3 p.m. Table tilts five times for less light. Medium will not allow it.*

11.4 p.m. Five more tilts of the table, without contact, on one leg, persist in asking for less light.

*Medium still refuses.*

*F. Five more tilts, whereupon light changed to 3.*

**Light III.**

11.5 p.m. F. Big movements of the curtain on my side.

F. Her left hand in mine on the corner of the table. Left foot on mine.

B. I saw the movement of the curtain.

R. Medium's right foot pressing against mine. Her hand grasping mine firmly on her lap. My left hand resting on her thigh.

11.6 p.m. F. Another movement of the curtain.

F. Her hand and mine being as before on the corner of the table.

R. Medium grips my hand this side.

11.8 p.m. F. Something touched me then, not in the place where she had touched me, but just above my right hip, near the back of my chair.

*[Medium had leant over and touched me on the side. Immediately after she had removed her hand, something else touched me. F., Dec. 11/08.]*

11.10 p.m. F. Medium has been holding my hand towards the curtain and squeezing it several times; sometimes there are movements of the curtain [following this. F., Dec. 11/08], but generally not.

*[Medium yawned; I remarked that that was a good sign, and all leaned forward attentively. F., Dec. 11/08.]*

## [Light III.]

11.15 p.m. F. The right curtain is suddenly and violently thrown right over as far as the other end of the table.

F. My right hand is in her lap in her left hand.

R. Her right hand completely in my left; I hold her thumb and all her fingers. Her right foot was pressing firmly on my left.

F. Her right hand was visible to me all the time.

11.18 p.m. F. She asks me to put my right hand on her back. Her left hand is held by my left hand.

11.19 p.m. F. She wants to make knocks, and she holds my left hand right across her body towards R. She pinches my fingers, and synchronous knocks are heard on the door behind R.

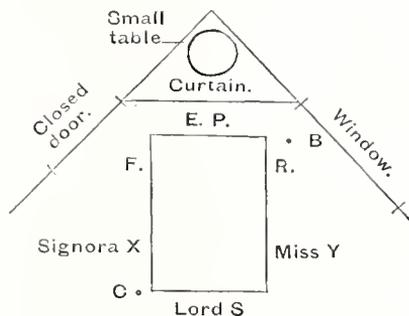
R. Her right hand completely in my left; I hold her thumb and all her fingers. Her right foot pressing firmly on my left.

11.21 p.m. F. Medium says I shall shortly be touched on the back of my hand. My hand is well on her back. I have got her left foot on mine.

R. She has her right foot firmly on mine.

[Nothing happened. F., Dec. 11/08.]

11.26 p.m. Medium asks F. and R. to change places, which is done. [It is not noted, but I distinctly remember that I retained hold of both the medium's hands while R. moved over and took my place, and that he controlled them until I had taken his. F., May 19/09.]



11.32 p.m. F. She kicks three times with her right leg on mine, and the table tilts three times away from her.

F. My left hand being on her knee and her right hand holding it at the time. I am sure it was wholly upon my hand.

## [Light III.]

R. At the same time her left foot was firmly pressed on my right foot. My right hand on her left thigh. My left hand holding her left hand also on her lap. I am sure it is the whole of her hand.

11.38 p.m. F. I am touched close under my left shoulder while I am stroking the medium's forehead with my right hand. I was touched very gently.

F. Her right hand holding my left hand on her lap. Her right foot was firmly on my left foot.

R. The same with the left foot on my right foot. I am holding the whole of her left hand on her left thigh.

11.42 p.m. F. The table tilts up and down for about 20 seconds on the two legs furthest from her.

F. During that time she was playing about with her fingers on my right hand on her lap. Her right foot was firmly planted on my left foot, and her knees were immovable.

R. My right hand was firmly grasped by her left hand; my hand between hers and the table, I can feel the table rising away from me. [She kept lifting my hand up in movement with the table, so that I could just feel but not press it. R., Dec. 11/08.] At the same time her left foot pressing on my right foot.

*11.43 p.m. General conversation about a supposed light which proves to be a reflection.*

F. There have been three different series of three shakes of something in the cabinet.

F. Her right hand has been on mine on the table near my corner all the time. Her right foot is still fixed totally on mine, heel and toe.

R. My right hand was holding hers on the corner of the table, firmly grasping mine.

R. A moment ago I was touched under the ribs.

R. Foot control well marked.

R. I am touched again, strongly.

F. And she makes gestures with her right hand well over the table at the same time as R. feels the touches, her right foot being absolutely fixed on mine.

## [Light III.]

11.52 p.m. *Table tilts four times, meaning talk.*

F. Noises in the cabinet which sometimes synchronise with thumps on my hand, which is lying on her lap, with her right hand.

[She made a long series of rhythmical thumps on my hand in her lap, which were answered by knocks in the cabinet, as if made by an electrical connection, which occasionally failed to act. F., Dec. 11/08.]

F. As I am looking at the curtain I see something push it out. The curtain keeps on moving for a long time, violently, near the window [*i.e.* behind R. F., Dec. 11/08].

F. Her right hand is continuously in mine, her head is perfectly visible and motionless.

R. Her left hand in mine lying pressed on the table; she is gripping my wrist. The foot control well marked.

F. The curtain has again moved between me and the window.

F. Control as before.

R. Same here.

11.55 p.m. F. The curtain moved two or three times strongly, then suddenly came out right over the table as far as the further end, as though thrown out.

R. The trumpet came out and crept along from my ear to my hand, and is now resting on my right arm.

F. All this time her right hand is in mine on the edge of the table near me, just under the curtain.

R. Her left hand is grasping my right and is against my chair; foot control firmly marked.

B. I have my right hand on R.'s chair and I can feel the vibration of several raps.

F. While these raps were being made she made gestures towards R. with her right hand held in mine. Her head was quite visible all the time.

R. *The trumpet has fallen to the ground.*

C. A square white patch appears just above the medium's head.

F. Her right hand continuously in mine on the table.

R. Her left hand stroking the back of my hand.

## [Light III.]

11.59 p.m. F. She holds my right hand right across the further end (? side) of the table and makes a number of rhythmical slaps against it with her fingers, and some noise in the cabinet synchronises exactly with these slaps.

R. Her left hand in my right hand lying flat on the top of the table.

R. Something has butted my head and fallen violently to the ground. [This afterwards proved to be the toy piano. R., Dec. 11/08.]

R. She was grasping my hand. Her left foot on my right foot.

F. Her right hand was held in mine on her lap. My left foot is behind the heel of her right foot so that there is no possibility of her bending it back.

*12.3 a.m. F. Medium's head has again gone right into the cabinet. Now it re-appears.*

*12.6 a.m. F. My foot is right underneath her right heel.*

Raps in the cabinet synchronise with taps made by medium's right hand on Signora X.'s left hand.

R. Her left foot firmly planted on my right, heel and toe.

*R. She is gripping my hand firmly and moving it about over the table to her side.*

*F. Her right hand on her right knee with mine. Head continuously visible.*

12.9 a.m. R. I am touched on my right shoulder.

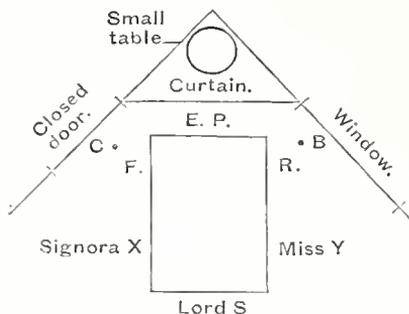
R. Her left hand pressing my right hand on her side, and foot as before.

F. During the touches and during three violent movements of the table on the legs furthest from her [which happened just as I began this sentence, F., Dec. 11/08] her right hand was immovable in mine on her lap, and my left foot is still under her right heel. She was kicking about with her foot, my foot following it. My right foot in front of her toe.

R. Same control as before.

## [Light III.]

[Some time previous to this, not noted at the time, C. had taken up a position standing behind and slightly to the left of my chair. F., May 19/09.]



12.14 a.m. F. Medium asks me to put my left hand behind her back.

R. A white object came out up by my right eye.

F. I saw it very well from where I am.

B. I saw it.

C. I also.

F. It looked to me like a boiled white cabbage.

R. It seemed to me like an ace of diamonds and about 3 inches from my right eye.

C. Movements of the curtain follow convulsive kicks of the medium. [I was standing behind F. C., Dec. 11/08.]

F. Her right hand was continuously on the corner of the table, her head visible, and my left hand behind her back.

*The medium was asked what the white thing was. She said it was the same friend of B.'s who had formerly kissed him through the curtain. She was told that his head was "very badly developed," and she replied that it would be better later.*

12.17 a.m. C. Something tried to lift up the small table, but finding, apparently, that it was tied, let it go with a bang.

F. Her right hand on the table in mine. My left foot still behind her heel.

R. My right hand lying on the table and her left hand pressed on it. Her left foot planted on mine, her leg pressed against mine, and my right foot behind her left heel.

## [Light III.]

12.22 a.m. B. A white thing appeared between the curtains over her head.

R. I saw nothing.

F. I saw it.

F. Her right hand holding mine on the edge of the table. I am sure it is the whole of it, I am feeling her thumb.

R. Something lifts the clay and puts it on to the table.

F. The medium blew three or four times while it happened. The clay came gently out from the side of the curtain near the window, between the medium and R., over her left shoulder, on to the table and on to the top of her right hand and mine.

R. The block of clay passed my eye, coming from over my shoulder, and slid down my right arm and passed over to the opposite side of the table.

R. My right hand was lying perfectly flat on the middle of the table, and her left hand was stroking my wrist; her left foot between my two feet.

F. Her right hand was continuously in mine. My left hand on her head. [See C.'s and F.'s notes regarding this phenomenon.]

12.40 a.m. R. A strong breeze of air is blowing into my face from the curtain. It has now stopped.

R. Her foot is on the top of mine.

12.41 a.m. F. While R. felt the cold breeze, she had just lifted my hand on the top of her head.

*12.43 a.m. Medium asks B. to get up on to the séance table and to hold his hand high up towards the curtain, which he does, at least three feet above the medium's head.*

B. Oh, it has touched me this side.

B. I again felt it.

[These sensations were merely the result of the convulsive movements of the medium's hand which was holding F.'s against the curtain while she pulled it; they were quite different from the sensation of touching hands, which I have often experienced on previous occasions. B., Dec. 11/08.]

R. The curtain has blown out over my right shoulder.

## [Light III.]

B. Kneeling on the top of the table, I have placed my hand about a yard over her head and I feel a push from behind the curtains. I do not feel a solid substance, it is more like wind.

R. Her left hand resting on mine in the middle of the table.

F. The medium's right hand in mine close to my face. Her head resting against mine.

B. I am touched, I am touched. Oh, can I catch hold of that hand?

R. She is squeezing my hand.

B. I feel the curtain push out.

B. *I do not know what it is that keeps pushing the curtain, underneath, but I cannot catch hold of it.*

[B. I realized at the moment that this sensation of pushing could be produced by pulling the curtain. I brought my right hand down the edge of the curtain and found that it was being held by the medium while she was holding F.'s hand, and that she was pulling it. B., Dec. 11/08.]

[The medium was holding the curtain tight with my hand in hers. Although it is probable that the sensations felt by B. were due to pulls given by her to the curtain, she appeared to give these quite openly, and without concealment from me. The movements somewhat resembled those she makes when she apparently produces phenomena at a distance and may perhaps, in this case, be interpreted as movements made unsuccessfully in the attempt to make a solid substance touch B.'s hand. Thus, though these movements were unquestionably suspicious, they are not necessarily indicative of an attempt at fraud. F., Dec. 11/08.]

*B. gets down from table.*

12.46 a.m. F. The flageolet has rapped three times on my head, and has fallen on my shoulder.

F. In the meantime I was holding her right hand up against her face and mine [holding the curtain. F., Dec. 11/08].

R. Thorough control established.

12.47 a.m. R. Somebody nudged me in the ribs on the right side.

## [Light III.]

C. A solid substance pushes against my hand.

C. I am touched on the left arm.

F. Her right hand is two feet above the table in my left hand.

[*C. was standing behind me about three feet from the part of the curtain nearest to him. F., Dec. 11/08.*]

R. Noises in the cabinet.

12.50 a.m. F. She taps with her right hand on mine, and the tambourine shakes synchronously inside the cabinet.

F. Her head close to me and visible.

F. The same thing happens again.

R. She grips my hand, both resting upon the table, her foot pressing mine firmly.

C. The bell rings and has been brought on the top of the medium's head from the cabinet and remains there.

F. I was holding her right hand on the top of the table. I saw the bell arrive on her head.

*F. I hold the bell up against the curtain and ask "John" to take it from me.*

F. I was holding my hand about a foot from her head and towards the curtain with my fingers holding it so that they projected beyond the bell towards the curtain. Three or four fingers took hold of the bell and shook it in my hand. I felt their pressure on my fingers.

[This is not a strictly accurate description. The fingers took hold of my fingers, I felt them distinctly as living fingers through the curtain. They held my fingers tight and shook my hand, and with it, the bell. F., Dec. 11/08.]

12.52 a.m. [*I asked that the bell be taken altogether from me. F., Dec. 11/08.*]

*F. Medium says put the bell near the curtain.*

F. The curtain is blowing right out towards the bell, and the small table in the cabinet moves.

12.55 a.m. Violent shakes in the cabinet.

## [Light III.]

12.56 a.m. F. I am still holding up the bell for "John" to take it.

C. The curtain is blowing out towards me.

C. Something brushed against my face.

C. Something hit me through the right-hand curtain.

C. I am pushed through the curtain.

C. I am touched by a hand on my hand and I feel the texture of the flesh touching me about two feet from the curtain.

B. It must be over a yard from the curtain [and about as far from the medium. F., July 18/09].

F. I am touched on the left cheek softly by a hand through the curtain.

F. The medium's right hand was resting quite quietly on my left, and I know it is the whole hand.

R. She was grasping firmly the forefinger of my left hand with the whole of her left hand, fingers and thumb, my right hand firmly pressed on her knee. Her left foot grinding on my right foot.

[From the bell incident to this point the phenomena were happening in all directions closely upon one another, and producing considerable commotion in so large a circle. I am absolutely certain that the control stated finally by me of the medium's right hand was that which prevailed at the time that the bell appeared on the medium's head, and continuously throughout. F., Dec. 11/08.]

[The control mentioned at the conclusion by me was a continuous one of both hand and foot. R., Dec. 11/08.]

1.5 a.m. C. Two raps are heard in the cabinet.

*Medium says she is tired.*

F. A white hand has appeared over her head. Oh, it has brought a cord.

[A small coil of cord was on top of the medium's head, the end of it descending to her left. I handed it to R. and asked him to trace it down. F., Dec. 13/08.]

F. It is fastened to something. Oh, somebody is pulling it.

## [Light III.]

[R. traced it down and found it attached to the rung of his chair. F., Dec. 12/08.]

F. Two minutes before this had happened she had asked me to feel the cord of her left leg to see whether it was fastened. I put my finger through the loop of her left leg and found that the cord was still round it. I did the same thing to the right leg. Shortly after that I put my right hand on the medium's head, and she said that she was going to rest. I continuously kept my left hand on her right. There then appeared a white hand through the curtain which dropped something on the top of her head. It proves to be the cord which had previously been fastened to the left leg.

[I had tied the medium's left leg, at the narrowest part of the ankle, with this cord. I made four reef knots. The other end of the cord I had attached to the leg and rung of the controller's chair in the same manner, with four reef knots, pulled tightly. B., Dec. 12/08.]

[It did not occur to me when the medium asked me to verify the fastening of her feet, two minutes before this incident, to do more than ascertain that the ropes were still fast round her ankles, which was the case, nor did it occur to me when the coil dropped on her head that it could possibly be the same cord. When traced by R. to the left leg of his chair, her leg was found free. The rope was of such a kind as to be difficult to untie. Similar knots on the other foot took B. about two minutes to untie, using both hands. Even supposing that the medium had freed her hand from R., unperceived and unremembered by him, it is to me inconceivable that she could have stooped down and untied the knots with her left hand between the time that I verified the fastenings and the appearance of the rope on her head, unnoticed by R. and me, the light being amply sufficient to follow any action of the kind. F., Dec. 12/08.]

[The rope used throughout for tying the medium was one I had brought with me specially for that purpose. It was very soft and pliable, and a most difficult rope to untie, as the knots, when tied, sank deeply into the cord. C., June 30/09.]

1.8 a.m. C. I am touched by a hand through the curtain at a distance of about 3 feet from the medium's chair.

## [Light III.]

R. Her left foot planted on mine. Both my hands were touching her left hand.

*F. As she nearly seems to fall off her chair, I am holding medium in my arms, my [? her] right hand in her lap.*

*[Medium appeared here to go deeply into trance and seemed about to fall. F., Dec. 12/08.]*

1.11 a.m. Partial levitation of the table.

*1.13 a.m. [The medium again somewhat came to. We wished to see if she could obtain raps under strictly evidential conditions on an object well in sight, and on which the quality of the raps made would be recognisable. She was therefore asked to try and produce raps without contact on a tambourine which we placed on the table in front of her. F., Dec. 12/08.]*

*F. The tambourine is placed on the table and she is asked to produce raps in it. She places C.'s and my hands on the tambourine and hers on both of them.*

*R. Her left hand holds my right hand on the table.*

*[She made several attempts to get raps on the tambourine by making gestures over it, but failed, and abandoned the attempt. F., Dec. 12/08.]*

*1.25 a.m. Further non-evidential movements of the table terminate the séance.*

## NOTE ON SÉANCE VIII. BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

At this séance I did not sit at the table by the side of Eusapia; I cannot therefore speak with the same assurance respecting the strictness of the control as in my notes to the previous séance. The conditions were different, owing to the introduction of other sitters than the members of the S.P.R. Committee. After F. and C. had sat for some time controlling the medium, she complained that C.'s current was feeble owing to temporary ill health, whereupon R. took his place.

I judged from the conversation that I had with R. that he was a careful observer not easily deceived. His taking a part in the séance had this advantage, that it served to confirm the opinion of each of the members of the Committee that the phenomena that took place in the cabinet were not produced by the hands or feet of Eusapia.

Signora X. and Miss Y. undressed the medium before the séance began and found no mechanism concealed about her person, so that the séance was carried out under good test conditions. I detected one suspicious circumstance, viz., the pulling of the curtains by Eusapia when I was kneeling on the table and feeling for the touch of a hand at the time I placed my hand against the curtain high above Eusapia's head. This is mentioned in the report, but I agree with F. that the pulling on the part of the medium may have been due to her anxiety that a hand should touch mine. At the time, she kept calling, in an appealing manner, apparently to some entity within the cabinet, "La mano, la mano." We have observed that motions of the medium's body are often followed by phenomena at a distance. Thus she would extend her hand or foot, while held by the controller, towards the cabinet, without touching the curtains, exclaiming at the time "Voglio toccare colla mano," or "Voglio toccare col piede" ("I want to touch with my hand," or "my foot"), and immediately some object in the cabinet would move. A notable instance of this occurred during the 7th séance, when Eusapia nodded her head, saying at the time, "Colpo colla testa" ("I am going to hit it with my head"), and, without her bringing her head in contact with the table, a very loud blow, as if struck with a hammer, was heard, followed by three thuds synchronizing with the nods of her head, her hands and feet being under control at the time.

W. W. B., Dec. 11th, 1908.

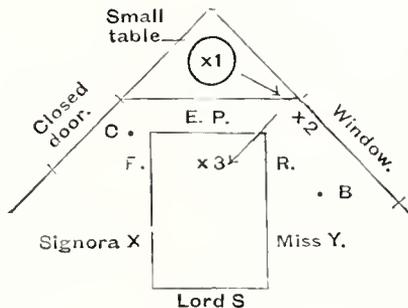
#### NOTE ON SÉANCE VIII. BY H. CARRINGTON.

Although there were a large number of persons present at this séance no confusion existed, as before under similar conditions, and silence and good control were maintained throughout. I gave up my control early in the evening to R., who retained it during the rest of the evening. An exceedingly long wait before anything took place ushered in some of the most remarkable phenomena we had as yet seen. I refer to the carrying of the board of clay on to the séance table, the carrying out of the toy piano, the trumpet, the flageolet, etc., the details of all which phenomena are fully described in the report. Not being in control on this occasion, I speak merely as an onlooker; but the latter part of the séance—after the phenomena began—appeared to me about as remarkable as anything one could well wish for or conceive.

I was in an exceptionally good position, standing behind F., for seeing the transportation of the clay from the cabinet to the séance

table, shortly after 12.22 a.m., and, as I happened to be closely watching the curtain at the time, I saw the movements of the board and clay very clearly. The clay appeared first at the opening on the extreme left, next to the white window curtains, and at a distance of at least three feet from the medium's chair. It must have been moved to that point, (2) from its former position on the small table in the cabinet, (1). [It was transported from (2) to the right shoulder of R. H. C., June 30/09] and then slid gently down on to the table, until it rested at the point (3). I saw a white, opaque substance, about two inches broad and six inches long, apparently carrying this clay, which came across the medium's left arm, her left hand being on R.'s right. The movement of the clay was peculiar. It travelled slowly as though carried through the air, and was most certainly not *thrown*. It would have been an utter impossibility for the medium (even supposing that she had her left hand free) to have placed the clay in the position in which I first saw it, (2), and then to have moved it on to the séance table. Had she done so, the left-hand curtain, behind which her left arm must have been thrust, would have been crumpled together and carried forward some considerable distance over her arm. Such, however, was not the case. I clearly saw that the left hand curtain did not move, and I am consequently quite sure that her left arm and hand did not and could not have transported the clay from the left opening of the cabinet curtain to the séance table.

H. C., Dec. 15th, 1908.



NOTE BY E. FEILDING ON THE TRANSPORTATION OF THE CLAY.

I find I wrote no contemporary note to this séance. My recollection is, however, perfectly clear as to the transportation of the clay. Eusapia's two hands were both visible, her left on R.'s right near the middle of the table, her right hand under my right about a

foot distant from her left. I did not see the board on which was the clay till it arrived on R.'s right shoulder, nor did I notice the white opaque substance referred to by C. I saw the board and clay, however, slide slowly down R.'s right arm, alight on the table by his hand, move across the table and come on to the top of my own right hand near my side of the table. I am absolutely certain that neither of Eusapia's hands carried them.

E. F., April 14th, 1909.

#### SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

I remember rising from this séance in a spirit of acute indignation. Our minds had become gradually attuned to the ordinary run of phenomena in which the séance had been specially rich, and to the idea of the non-fraudulent character of some, at all events, of which we had become convinced. But it seemed little short of offensive on the part of Eusapia's "spirits" or "fluidic force," or whatever the agency might be which produced them, to intrude into a series of respectable phenomena one of such indubitably Davenportish associations as the untying of the cord. I feel sensitive to the reproach which will certainly be levelled at us: "If you can be so easily deluded by the repetition of such a fly-blown trick, your observation in other matters cannot be worth much." The only plausible suggestion that I can offer is that when Eusapia asked me to verify the tying of her left foot, she had already contrived to release it, and crossed her feet under the table, making me believe I was verifying the fastening of her left foot, when in reality I was verifying that of her right. Yet the four reef-knots had been made by B., an expert knot-tier, in a soft cord specially brought by C. for the purpose. The knots had been verified at 10.54 when R. and C. changed places, and at the only other time when control might be considered relaxed, *i.e.* when R. changed places with me, I remember distinctly holding both Eusapia's hands till R. assumed control of them. Further, the light was at all times sufficient to detect any manœuvrings on the part of Eusapia to untie the knots, even supposing an unremembered lapse in our physical control of her. There were no knots in the coil which appeared on her head, but upon the manner of their disappearance I find it only possible to reserve judgment.

E. F., May 19th, 1909.

REPORT OF EXAMINATION OF MEDIUM BY SIGNORA X. AND  
MISS Y. PRIOR TO SÉANCE VIII.

Madame Palladino first took off a black serge bodice and skirt of the same material and colour. She then slipped over her head a white knitted cotton stay-cover. She also drew off her neck a white linen scarf a little over a foot in length and about four inches wide. Next came a long dark blue petticoat with white embroidery round the bottom. After that she took off a short white flannel one, and a pair of pink and brown stays. She then removed a long shift of coarse white linen and stood in what one might call a pair of grey, woolly, divided combinations, that is to say, body and drawers, a pair of white stockings, black elastic garters under her knees, and a pair of brownish coloured boots, with heels, which were only buttoned by the top button.

Every one of these things was thoroughly examined, including the linings of bodice and skirt, and nothing was found anywhere.

Her hair, too, was simply drawn up, tied by a narrow bit of black tape, and done into a bun.

Dec. 10/08.

## REMARKS ON SÉANCE IX.

*December 13th, 1908.*

In some ways this séance was the most remarkable of the whole series, not indeed on account of the variety of the phenomena, which was small, but of their boisterous exuberance. The light was altogether unshaded at the start, yet levitations of the table began immediately and followed one another with extreme rapidity, no less than six complete levitations taking place within five minutes (10.13 to 10.17 p.m.). The conditions under which these levitations took place were so exceptionally good as to light and control that it seemed unnecessary to go on repeating them. Eusapia was, however, asked to produce one more while F. held her feet under the table. She consented, and placed her hands on her lap, held by B. and C., and sat motionless while F. gathered her skirts about her feet and encircled them with his hands. The light, it is true, was reduced to the No. 3 ruby light, but this was sufficiently bright for us to see an absolutely

clear space between her and the table, which, as soon as she was told that we were ready, was again levitated off all four legs. See the shorthand report at 10.23 p.m.

Shortly after this commenced a series of movements of the little stool which had been placed outside the curtain to the right rear of B. and to Eusapia's left, distant from her about 3 feet. In response to gestures made towards it with her left hand holding B.'s, the stool advanced towards her several times, and was also levitated while B.'s hand was resting on its surface, her hand being on top of his. See report from 10.30 p.m. to 10.40 p.m. A series of touches on both C. and B. followed at 10.47 p.m., but the description of the control in the report is not very adequate.

It is difficult to say whether this séance, which began so auspiciously, would have added to the general programme of phenomena. A development of some kind had taken place at every séance up to now, and owing to the extreme vigour displayed by the "force" at this one, and the extreme good humour of the medium, it seems probable that some further and more startling manifestations might have followed, had it not been for the unfortunate 'misunderstanding' that took place at 11.6 p.m. and to which further reference is made in C.'s and F.'s notes. The discussion which arose in consequence lasted nearly three-quarters of an hour.

At the resumption of the séance at 11.45 p.m. further movements of the stool of a particularly interesting character took place in the No. 2 light. The medium made gestures with her hand at a distance from it of about three feet, sometimes with one hand and sometimes with the other, and gestures of attraction made the stool approach, while gestures of repulsion made it recede from her. See B.'s note. During this series of movements, the stenographer left his place and examined the stool, putting his arms right round it and feeling along the floor, several times, and found no attachment.

At 12.0 began a series of the usual curtain movements, and at 12.23 a.m. of touches on C. by something from within the curtain. The complete control at 12.25 a.m. when C., who was stroking the medium's forehead, was touched on the wrist above her head, while he held one of her hands on the table and B. held the other on her lap makes this

particular touch noteworthy. The same may be said of the grasp of a complete hand through the curtain, experienced by C. at 12.38 a.m., while both the medium's hands were visibly on the table.

At 12.43 a.m. began a series of movements of the tambourine within the cabinet. Shortly afterwards the tambourine came out of the cabinet along the floor and remained there quietly for a time while C. was pulled about and touched in various places a very large number of times. Attention may be directed to a touch occurring at 12.51, when a whole hand was felt by C. at a time when he was holding both the medium's hands. At 1.5 a.m. the tambourine began to perform a kind of tune. F., who was standing close to it, felt around it and found no attachment, and shortly afterwards it appeared to try and jump on to C.'s lap, both the medium's legs encircling C.'s left leg, while her hands were under thorough control, and also tied in such a way as to put the tambourine out of her reach. After various futile attempts on the part of the medium to procure an impress of a hand on the sculptor's clay within the cabinet, the séance closed at 1.30 a.m.

#### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE IX.

*December 13th, 1908.*

*Present: F., C., B., and M., shorthand writer, at separate table.*

*Lights same as in séance 7 except that light 3—ruby lamp, 10 candles, 110 volts—was only shaded with cream tissue paper and no silk handkerchief.*

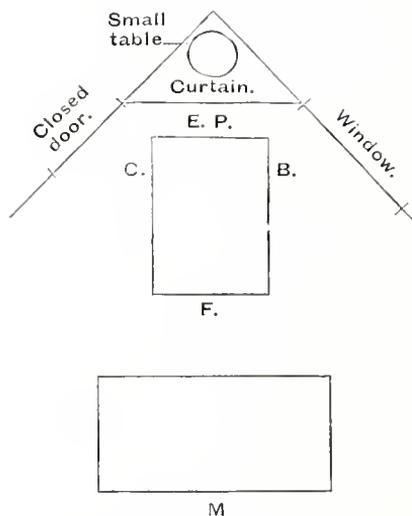
*Small bell and broken guitar hung up in same positions as in séance 8. Photographie Plate as in 8. Small table tied down in the same position. Guitar leaning up against front of table in centre. To right of medium, leaning up against cord fastening table, large tambourine. At back of table, on top, toy piano. To left side of medium on top of table, tea bell. To right side of medium, on top of table, flageolet and trumpet. In the centre, in the front of top of table, clay.*

*Medium's feet tied to rungs of chairs of controllers on each side of her, length of rope on left being 20 ins., on right 21½ ins.*

*Hands tied to one another—distance apart 22 ins., also left hand tied to B's right, distance being 16½ ins., medium's right hand tied to C's left, distance 18 ins.*

*10.12 p.m. Séance begins.*

### Light I.



Tilts begin almost immediately.

F. Table tilts on the legs away from her.

10.13 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

C. Her right hand resting on the table touching mine, my wrist being between hers and the edge of the table. Her right foot in contact with my right foot. I saw a clear space of about eight inches between her dress and the leg of the table.

B. Complete levitation of the table for a second time [during dictation of B's control. Dec. 14/08].

B. My right hand on both her knees. Her left foot touching my right foot.

10.14 p.m. Complete levitation for a third time.

B. Another complete levitation.

F. Both medium's hands completely on the top of the table touching C's and B's.

C. I can see a clear space of about 8 inches between her dress and the table leg all the way down.

## [Light I.]

B. My right hand on her two knees. My right foot against her left foot, and I can see between her left leg and the table leg.

10.16 p.m. Another complete levitation.

F. Her right hand off the table altogether, left hand on B.'s, pulling it upward and the table appeared to stick to it.

10.17 p.m. Another complete levitation of the table.

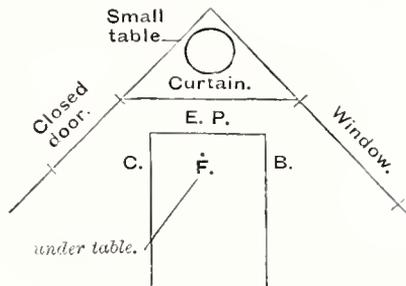
F. First of all a partial levitation, which lasted about ten seconds, then a complete levitation, off all four legs.

F. Her right hand touching the table, left hand on B.'s.—She raised her right hand from the table and the table slid sideways in the air under B.'s hand.

B. My right hand across both her knees. My right knee against her left knee and my right foot against her left foot, and I see a clear space between her leg and the table leg.

C. Her right hand clenched (at first) on the table within three inches of my eyes. My left hand across both her knees. Her right foot on my left foot. I can clearly see a space of at least six inches between her dress and the table leg, all the way down.

*[The light was sufficient to read small print by with comfort, at the further end of the room, the hands were always plainly visible and always situated so that it was clear that the table was not lifted by them. The extreme rapidity of the levitations made complete description almost impossible, and it was decided to confine the description of the control to the feet, the control of the hands being obvious to all and description rendered unnecessary. Medium was then told that enough levitations had been produced but was asked, before proceeding to further phenomena, to produce one more, with her feet actually held under the table. I thereupon went under the table. F., Dec. 14/08.]*



**[Light I.]**

10.20 p.m. *F. I have got my hands on both feet.*

C. The table tilts away from her.

C. My left hand is on both her knees. Both her hands are flat on the table in full view of us, her wrists not over the edge.

*Five tilts of table ask for less light.*

**Light II.**

*F. I have now got my hands on the floor against the table legs, and inside them. Her two feet are between my hands.*

*Five more tilts of the table ask for still less light.*

**Light III.**

10.23 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

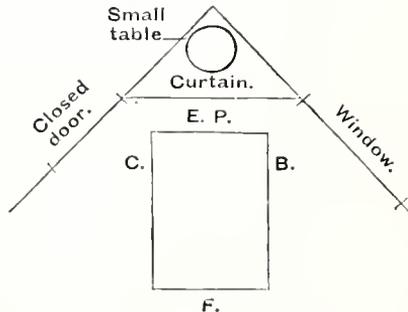
*Note by M.: Immediately before levitation took place medium asked F. if he had got her feet all right.*

F. I had my hands on the floor between her legs and the table legs. Her feet and the whole of her dress were in between my hands.

C. My left hand on her right knee, her right hand being on the top of my left hand and did not leave it.

B. My right hand was on her left knee, her left hand on the top of my right hand. My foot was away from her foot but F. had complete control of her feet.<sup>1</sup>

*[I now came out from under the table and medium was asked to stop levitating. F., Dec. 12/08.]*



<sup>1</sup> See F.'s note at end.

## [Light III.]

10.27 p.m. B. A movement of some object in the cabinet.

B. She moves her left hand within mine towards the cabinet but at a distance of about three feet from it. Her left foot on my right foot.

C. Her right foot pressing against my left foot, her right knee in contact with my left knee. Her right hand holding my left hand on her right thigh.

*F. Note that in this light I, from the opposite end of the table to the medium, can see her face, and, of course, her hands.*

10.30 p.m. B. The little stool which was placed outside the cabinet at a distance of three feet from the medium approached towards the medium while she held my right hand with her left hand, and continued to do so.

B. Her left knee is against my right knee. Her left foot against my right foot [and between her leg and the table leg. B., Dec. 14/08]. She is holding my hand towards the stool but at a distance from it. I can see her hand which is holding mine quite clearly.

C. Her right hand is visibly on the table in my left. Her right knee pressing against my left knee; her right foot pressing against my left foot.

10.33 p.m. B. She places my right hand on the surface of the little stool with her left hand on the top of my right, and the stool rises up into the air against my hand, with pressure underneath, while her left foot is resting on my right foot.

C. Her right hand is visible on the table holding my left. I can feel her right knee against my left. Her right foot is in contact with mine.

B. It went up again.

10.34 p.m. F. Four complete levitations of the table to a height of about six inches, very rapidly, presumably meaning "talk." I can see from here that her hands were not on the table.

B. My right hand is resting on the medium's left knee with her left hand upon it, and her left foot distinctly held on my right foot.

C. The fingers of the medium's right hand are now on the back of my hand resting on her right knee which is distant from her left

## [Light III.]

knee only about two inches. My left knee in contact with her right knee. Her right foot pressing against my left foot. [I was dissatisfied at the time with the sensation of the hand control. C., Dec. 14/08.]

10.37 p.m. C. The little stool moves out again towards the medium.

C. Again it moves violently.

F. I can see it (standing up).

B. She makes a jerky motion in the air above the table (towards the stool) with her hand while holding my right hand. My right knee pressing against her left knee, and my right foot under her left foot.

C. Her right hand resting entirely on my left hand on her right knee. The control of feet as before.

10.40 p.m. B. The medium places my right hand on the surface of the stool, lifts her hand away from mine, and the stool rises in the air about six inches.

B. At this time I distinctly felt her left leg against my right leg. I could see her left hand while this was taking place.

C. Control exactly the same as before.

*B. She touches the curtain with her left hand held in mine.*

10.41 p.m. C. The curtain blows out.

10.42 p.m. C. The curtain blows out about two feet. The medium says that I shall get a touch if I hold my hand up to the curtain. I did so and I feel the curtain pulled downwards (*viz.* as B. did when on table during Séance VIII).

*10.44 p.m. F. I can see the medium's left hand on B's. I can see C's hand held out against the curtain. I can see her right hand on the table.*

F. I can see from where I am a strong movement of the small stool.

F. Her head is perfectly visible to me.

B. I can feel her left foot against my right foot, and her left knee against my right knee, which she has not moved at all while the phenomenon was taking place (*viz.* the movements of the stool).

## [Light III.]

10.47 p.m. C. I am touched on the left wrist.

C. I was leaning across the medium's body, my left arm being in contact with her chest, my left knee and foot in contact with hers.

C. I am touched by a hand through the curtain.

C. Control of feet as before. Her right hand on my left knee.

B. Her left hand resting on my right hand on the table. Same control of feet.

10.48 p.m. B. I am touched on my right knee.

B. Same control of feet and hands as before; her left hand was on the table.

C. Same control here.

10.57 p.m. *Four tilts of table, meaning "talk."*

B. I feel three touches on my right knee.

B. At that moment I felt her left hand on my right hand and her left leg against my right leg. I did not feel the slightest motion of her hand which is about six inches from the point of touch.

C. Same control as before. The whole of her right hand on my left [? on C.'s left knee "as before." F., May 22/09].

F. Her face is visible to me and motionless.

*B. This is the first time we have had touches in front of the medium.*

11.0 p.m. F. Two tilts of the table on the legs nearest to her, very strong.

C. Her right foot clearly on my left foot. I am holding her right hand in my left hand, her left hand resting over my right hand.

B. Synchronizing with these tilts, she presses her left foot slightly. Owing to the position of her left leg against my right leg she was not able to touch the table leg with it. I am holding her left hand with my right hand firmly on her left knee [? on top of C.'s right hand. F., May 22/09].

11.6 p.m. *C. shows that he is dissatisfied with the foot control, and seeks to verify whether medium's feet are separate, with his hand. [Dictated later]—Medium pointed out that as her feet*

**[Light III.]**

were tied she did not think it mattered where they were, under the table. She is very angry and woke thoroughly up from a condition of semi-trance into which she had fallen. A long discussion followed. The medium, thoroughly upset, says "Better phenomena are spoilt for the evening," asks for light to be turned up and for the control of her feet to be verified.

**Light I.**

11.40 p.m. M. Examines the tying of the medium's feet and finds that it is absolutely impossible for her to do anything herself. The fastenings found as at the beginning of the séance.

11.45 p.m. Séance resumed, medium still very irritated.

**Light II.**

B. The stool by the side of the medium, in very good light, has moved. This movement was preceded by one of her left hand at a distance from the stool of about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet.

B. I was holding her left knee against my right knee, and her left foot against my right foot.

C. Her right foot on my left foot, my right hand on her right knee. Her right hand covering my left hand.

B. She moves her left hand as though pushing something away from her at a height of about a yard from the stool. The stool thereupon retires from her.

B. Control same as before.

C. Mine also the same.

[I now got up and examined the little stool, feeling right round it, and saw that there was nothing connecting it to the medium's dress. As I was about to resume my place I saw the little stool again moving, and stooped down to watch it. It moved in little jerks about a foot sideways. When it had finished, I again put my hands right round it and found no attachment. While I was doing this the stool seemed to brush up against my coat sleeves as though drawn by a magnet. I was again about to sit down when the stool began moving for a third time, and I examined it again. There was absolutely no possibility of there being any attachment. M., Dec. 15/08.]

**[Light II.]**

F. Standing up I saw the stool moving.

M. It moved about 12 inches.

B. and C. Controls same as before.

11.50 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

C. Both her hands were on the top of the table, my left hand resting on her right knee. Her right foot on my left foot firmly. I can see a clear space between her dress and the leg of the table all the way down.

B. My right hand on her left knee. My right foot feeling her left foot. There is a space between her left leg and the table leg.

11.58 p.m. F. Standing up at this end of the table, I saw her make gestures with her right hand at a distance of about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the small stool, her left hand being motionless in B.'s on his corner of the table, and the stool advanced in little jerks towards B.

C. The curtain is pushed right out on this side about three feet.

B. I am feeling her left foot on my right foot.

C. Control the same as before, the whole of medium's hands being visible.

C. The curtain is again pushed out about two feet.

C. Her right hand on my left on the table; right foot on my left foot firmly.

B. Control same as before, hand and foot.

12.1 a.m. Partial levitation of the table.

Another partial levitation of the table, almost complete.

12.2 a.m. The curtain blew out.

C. *I am holding my hand out towards the curtain.*

*12.3 a.m. Five violent tilts of the table ask for less light.*

**Light III.**

F. *Note that her face and eyes are visible to me over at the opposite end of the table.*

12.4 a.m. C. The right curtain has again blown out.

12.6 a.m. M. notes: The curtain made a large bulging movement of about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet while I was standing up.

## [Light III.]

[During these last two or three minutes I had left my place and gone round to the curtain, and approached my hand towards it to try whether I could get a touch. M., Dec. 15/08.]

12.22 a.m. Loud noises in the cabinet.

*12.23 a.m. Medium asks C. if he had been touched.*

C. I was touched through the curtain as if by a hand.

C. Her right hand holding my left.

B. Her left hand holding my right hand on her left knee.

F. Her head is visible to me; I saw the curtain come out towards the place where C. was touched.

12.25 a.m. C. I was touched again as if by a hand through the curtain on the wrist of my right hand as I was stroking the medium's forehead with it.

C. Again I am touched in the same place.

C. Meanwhile I have her right hand, of which I feel the thumb and four fingers, on the table.

B. I am holding her left hand on her left knee.

12.26 a.m. Complete levitation of the table.

12.38 a.m. Two raps.

C. I am grasped through the curtain by a complete hand.

C. At that time her right foot was strongly against mine; the fingers of her right hand pressing on the back of my left hand on the table, almost in the centre of it.

B. Her left hand holding my right hand on the table. I could see both her hands at the time. Her left foot kicking against my right foot.

12.43 a.m. Medium squeezes on C.'s hand and movements in the cabinet follow (thumps on the tambourine).

B. I was holding her left hand with my right hand on her knee.

C. Mine, holding medium's, is on the table.

B. She gives three squeezes of her left hand in my right hand, and synchronizing with these three squeezes, we hear three thumps on the tambourine.

## [Light III.]

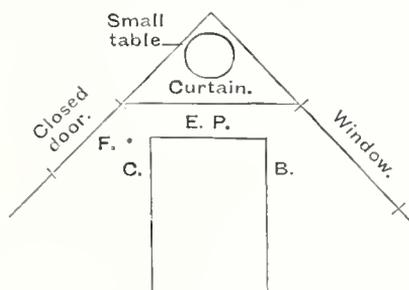
12.46 a.m. C. Corresponding with squeezes of the medium's hand, the tambourine was thumped.

B. My right hand was holding medium's left hand, and my right foot was on her left foot. My right knee pressing against her left knee.

C. I am holding her right hand by the thumb on the table. Her right foot on my left completely.

12.47 a.m. F. I ask "Carlo"<sup>1</sup> to give me the tambourine.

[Medium said he would do so and I moved round behind C. F., Dec. 14/08.]



B. She holds my right hand over the table in front of her and makes gestures with it in the air, and the tambourine slid along the ground.

C. I am touched again.

C. The same thing has happened again.

C. I was touched three times with fingers on my left hand. The tambourine then jumped up about 10 or 12 times inside the curtain, apparently trying to get to the edge of the curtain, and was then pushed outside the cabinet [near where I was standing. F., June 6/09].

C. I am grasped very firmly by a hand through the curtain on the left arm.

C. I felt the medium's right hand on my left on the table, at the same moment that the tambourine was kicking about inside the cabinet.

B. I am holding her left hand on the table. I can see it quite clearly.

<sup>1</sup> "Carlo" is another "spirit" whom Eusapia occasionally states to be present.

## [Light III.]

12.51 a.m. *Medium says she wishes to touch C., which she does.*

C. I was grasped just above the left elbow by four fingers and a thumb, which pressed very hard indeed.

C. I am touched on the left side by a hand.

C. I was holding *both* medium's hands in both of mine and she was squeezing tightly, one being clearly visible and one on the table under the curtain. Absolute control of right foot and leg; her right foot pressing strongly on my left foot in contact with my right.

B. I was holding the wrist of her left hand with my right hand on the table in full view of us all,—perfectly visible. My right knee against her left knee. My right foot under her left foot.

1.0 a.m. C. I am touched on the face by a hand through the curtain as the medium kicks to and fro.

C. I am again touched on the face by a hand.

C. Medium having both her legs round my left leg, her right hand holding my left on the table in the middle under the curtain.

B. Her left hand, which I see clearly, holding my right hand on the table.

F. Note heads are visible to me.

*F. I am standing up between C. and the curtain holding my right hand on C.'s shoulder.*

1.3 a.m. C. I was touched on the left shoulder strongly.

C. Medium had both her legs round mine, her right hand holding my left under the curtain in the middle of the table.

B. I am holding her left hand with my right hand on the table.

1.5 a.m. The tambourine jumps up about twelve times, as if trying to play a tune.

B. She squeezes my hand synchronously in tune with it.

*F. I have put my hand between the tambourine and the medium's knee.*

*[I knelt down on the ground and felt right round the tambourine which was lying near the edge of the curtain, behind and to the left of C.'s chair. There was no attachment. F., Dec. 14/08.]*

## [Light III.]

C. I am touched on the left arm above the elbow.

C. Control exactly the same as before.

B. My control the same as before.

1.6 a.m. C. The tambourine jumps and jerks as though it tried to get on to my lap.

C. Control the same as before.

B. My control absolutely the same as before.

1.13 a.m. *All stand up. F. asks "John" if he can make an impression on the clay. Three tilts of the table respond "Yes."*

1.17 a.m. *The medium is told that it is very late, and that if she is unable to do anything else she had better stop, but she replies "The phenomena are not finished yet."*

1.24 a.m. Something falls over behind the medium.

*C. ascertains that it is the medium's chair. Medium says "Do not take any notice of that as I might have done it with my feet."*

1.30 a.m. Something moved in cabinet.

*Medium says "Please note that I did not move at all then."*

*[Owing to the lateness of the hour, the medium is several times asked whether she will not finish. For some time she declines. She is asked whether she can get an impression on the clay. First of all she replied "They said 'Yes;'" but after long continued efforts, she said she felt tired and could do no more. F., Dec. 14/08.]*

## NOTE ON SÉANCE IX. BY E. FEILDING.

This séance began under the most favourable circumstances. Eusapia was in the best of humours, and submitted to having her hands and feet tied with perfectly good grace. They were tied by B. and myself. The tying of the hands, however, is not of any special importance for those who are present at the séances, and whose attention has constantly to be on the alert from the necessity of describing the control at every moment to the stenographer. At scarcely any time has the light been so poor as not to enable the controllers to see, as well as feel, the hands they were holding. And

it is especially to be remarked that it has been just those séances where the light has been the poorest that the phenomena have been the least remarkable and frequent. The tenth séance, which has taken place before I have finished this note, has been the worst of the whole series. Compared, indeed, with the performance of other mediums, the manifestations which occurred were remarkable enough; but compared with its predecessors, the tenth séance was almost blank, though darkness, more or less complete, prevailed almost throughout. The same thing may be said of a great part of the third and fourth séances. The implication appears to be that when the force, whatever it is, which produces Eusapia's phenomena, is strong, nothing will interfere with it, and phenomena, at all events of a certain class, hurry one upon another even in the brightest light. When, however, the force is weak, she seeks to improve the conditions for its development by reducing the light; but even then, though a few sparse manifestations will occur, the results, with some exceptions, are generally feeble and of small interest, and certainly far from convincing.

We tied Eusapia, then, more for the sake of being able to say that we had done so, than for our own satisfaction. The tying of her hands would not have been close enough to prevent her from fraudulently producing the many touches which C. experienced at the latter part of the séance, but she could not have touched either the tambourine or the stool, which were the only objects moved at this séance, at any time. The tying of her right foot was close enough to prevent her from reaching within about a foot from the tambourine in its original position within the cabinet, though she might possibly have done so after it came out and jumped about on the floor. Had she not been otherwise controlled, with her knees under the table, while the small stool was moving about on the floor, it is possible she might have reached it at some part of its progress. It is difficult, when a séance is over, exactly to fix the positions of chairs and other movable objects. But as a matter of fact, she did *not* use her feet. The tambourine and the stool stood free of her, a clearly visible space being between her and them while they moved.

The proceedings started in the light of an unshaded 10 candle power 150 volt lamp. The current being 110 volts, the lamp of course is less brilliant than if it had been a 110 volt one, but it was good enough for me to be able, while standing at the entrance door, ten feet from under the light and holding my book edgewise, not directly towards it, to read small print without the least discomfort.

It was thus the best light that we had yet had at any séance. Levitations began immediately. The table bounded about as if it was on springs. In some respects these levitations were less astonishing than those we had at séances 1 and 2, as there was usually some slight contact with the medium's hands, though not of such a kind as could produce the levitations by normal means. They ended by boring us, and we asked for them to stop, except for one final levitation which we wished her to produce while her feet, which, however, had been hitherto quite visible under the table to the stenographer and myself (I sat opposite Eusapia), were actually being held. I went accordingly under the table, gathered Eusapia's skirts together and enclosed them and her feet within my hands and between the table legs. It appears that the application of a special test produces a psychological effect on Eusapia, and even though she still produces the phenomenon, its performance seems made more difficult; she asked for the light to be reduced twice, *i.e.* to the ruby light, and seemed to collect herself for an effort. I requested the others to remove their legs so that I could get a clear view, as well as hold, of Eusapia's, which even in the reduced light were still perfectly visible to me. B. and C. placed their hands on her knees and she placed her hands on their hands. She asked if our control was quite satisfactory, and up went the table. We felt that there was no more to be said, and I resumed my place opposite her.

With regard to the storm which arose later on, I may make a few remarks. When Eusapia is in the deeper stage of trance which usually accompanies the production of the more advanced phenomena our experience is that she always allows her hands to be fully enclosed in those of her neighbours. When, however, she is only in a state of half-trance, she frequently seeks to keep her hands on the top of theirs, and moves them restlessly about. When her two hands are near together, it is obvious that a substitution of hands becomes easy, but when they are far apart,—and, as a rule, she keeps them at a considerable distance from one another,—no substitution is possible. I have complained to her more than once that she ought to allow her hands to be fully enclosed. She said that during a séance she became very hyper-aesthetic and nervous, and that the touch of certain people's hands, especially if these are at all moist or hot, is so acutely unpleasant to her that she cannot endure her hands being held inside them. She said that this sensation had no connection with her liking for

people otherwise, and that there were certain persons to whom she was greatly attached in her normal condition who were profoundly antipathetic to her as neighbours during a séance, and *vice versa*. As regards her feet, especially her left foot, she said she was still more sensitive. Her left foot, she told me, had once been run over by the wheel of a cab, and she cannot stand pressure on the instep, while both her feet have a tendency to go to sleep, so that she gets a sensation of pins and needles in them, and has to press violently every now and then with them so as to restore sensation. This certainly accords with our experiences, and we have all of us arisen from séances with mangled feet, the result of the vigorous application of her exceedingly sharp heels. It is, in any case, not unnatural that during a long séance she should be restless with both hands and feet, and although her knees are almost always pressing against ours, and well under the table, which is very narrow, thus making it impossible for any ordinary person, as we have found by trial, to get the foot outside the table leg in such a way as to perform tricks without the movement immediately being perceived, we have always been extremely suspicious of a substitution of feet being performed. Nevertheless, though the actual sensation on our feet was frequently that of only part of one of hers, heel or toe, leading us to verify, with the free hand, the fact that we were really controlling the foot which we ought, none of us has ever once, excepting at this séance, detected the slightest attempt at foot substitution.

During this séance, however, C. did notice a change, and forgetting that, owing to the fastening, she had only a certain range of action, he stooped down to feel, and found that Eusapia had crossed her feet. He told me in English that the foot control was not good. Eusapia, who detests English, and is always annoyed when she does not know what is being said, yet has a *flair* for the meaning of things so remarkable as to amount almost to the dignity of telepathic perception, was furious. She worked herself up into a passion and covered us with rich Neapolitan reproaches for our suspicion and inexperience of her phenomena. The storm raged for about an hour, and when at length calm was, to a certain extent, restored, and we all expressed unfeigned astonishment at the activity of the stool, which performed a *pas seul* outside the cabinet, she said sarcastically: "You have spoiled all the better phenomena, and now you are amazed at a straw (*paglia*) like that."

E. F., Dec. 17th, 1908.

## NOTE ON SÉANCE IX. BY H. CARRINGTON.

This séance started most propitiously, and it was possibly owing to what was perhaps a blunder on my part that we did not get many more startling phenomena than we did. The medium arrived in very high spirits, and consented to have her hands as well as her feet tied with rope, which she had refused at the previous sitting. B.—who is an expert at knots and tying generally—undertook to tie the medium's feet and hands, which he did. I then controlled the right side of the medium, B. the left.

The table began to move almost at once, as at our first séances. Several complete levitations followed one another in good light, and under excellent conditions of control. The little stool was then moved and levitated, and moved again under absolute test conditions, as the record will show. Several important and evidential touches through the curtain followed this, also other phenomena.

It was shortly after this that I began to feel dissatisfied with my foot control, and later with the hand control also. I forgot, for the time being, the limitations put upon the medium's movements by the tying of the hands and feet, and felt I should have the same amount of control as formerly for two reasons: (1) touches on my side would be non-evidential if the hand control were not good; and movements of objects on her right side, on the floor, would also be non-evidential, for the same reason. (2) We had agreed to tell the medium at once as soon as any laxness of the control became apparent. Further, the light had now been lowered very considerably, and the right-hand curtain was covering part of her body. I accordingly manifested some signs of unrest, as soon as the control became markedly poor, and finally sought to verify, with my hands, the exact position of her feet. It was at this that she became angry, and a long intermission resulted, in which she explained that, owing to the tying, she did not consider that such strict conditions of control were necessary, and she wished to be more free to move about, etc. We consented to this at once, with the result that, although the control of hands and feet throughout the rest of the séance was not so good as formerly, still I could usually follow her movements quite clearly, and am assured that some of the phenomena at least could not have been produced by her, even had she effected a substitution of one hand *and* one foot, as I think the account will show.

H. C., Dec. 15th, 1908.

## NOTE ON SÉANCE IX. BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

The numerous complete levitations of the table at this séance afforded further evidence of the existence of a telekinetic force exercised by Eusapia. The light was sufficiently good to enable us to see her hands and legs at the moment that some of the levitations took place, and no suspicious movement on her part was detected. Her feet were also under control, and could not have been inserted under the table legs, and the hand of one of the controllers was on both her knees. The complete levitations, the swelling out of the medium's dress already referred to, and the bulging of the curtains of the cabinet, afforded me the strongest evidence so far obtained by us for the existence of this force, owing to the excellent test conditions under which I observed them.

During the production of these phenomena, and when the objects were outside the cabinet, the movement could be watched from the moment of its initiation. If this movement were due to a supernatural force, as the test conditions under which it was produced suggest, it is not impossible that this same force is also at work when objects are brought out of the cabinet,—although their initial motion is not then perceptible,—if the test conditions in this latter case are equally severe. This supposed force appears to be able to attract matter, as when the medium held her hands above the table (her feet being under control), the table was completely levitated with all four feet from the ground. It appears also able to repel it, as when she placed her hands below the table, though not touching it (her feet being under control), the table rose in the same manner.

The movements of the little stool which was placed on the ground outside the cabinet, on her left, at a distance of three feet from her left hand and two and a-half feet from her left foot, illustrated the double action of this force. When she made a motion of her hand high above the stool, as if pushing it away from her, it retired; and when she made the motion, also high above the stool, as if drawing it towards her, it advanced in her direction.

At the time these motions were taking place I was sure I had a good control of her left leg. My right foot was not only against her left, but the whole length of my right leg was between hers and the stool. The light was sufficient to enable us to see the little stool as it moved in different directions.

W. W. B., Dec. 14th, 1908.

APPARENTLY SPONTANEOUS RINGING OF A BELL IN THE SÉANCE  
CABINET, DEC. 15TH, 1908.

It is difficult to know whether to include the following peculiar occurrence in this report or not. Whereas in the case of phenomena taking place in Eusapia's presence the problem, reduced to its simplest form is "conjuring or spooks?" in the case about to be described the problem appears to be "spooks, or a practical joke?" It is impossible to say which of the alternatives appears the more blankly improbable.

E. F.

BELL INCIDENT.

8.45 by C.'s watch.

15th December, 1908.

At a certain moment when B. was working up our clay at the small table in the centre of the room, C. being in the next room, with the door open, the small bell hanging from the string in the cabinet rang violently. It struck against the wood of the doorway—a good  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the bell. The ringing continued for several seconds, with violence, and then stopped. B. was at least nine feet from the bell, at the time of ringing, and C. could see he did not approach it. Nobody else was in the room at the time. As soon as the bell ceased ringing, we called in Mr. Ryan from the next room, who opened the curtains and saw (as did we all) that the bell was still swinging on its suspending string. The cabinet was empty save for a chair, standing inside it. We all three heard and saw this remarkable bell phenomenon.

(Signed) W. W. BAGGALLY.

HEREWARD CARRINGTON.

I was adding my final note to my previous evidence when I heard the bell in the next room ring. I attached no importance to this (thinking that B. and C. were testing the apparatus). Mr. Baggally just then rushed in, made me come round and open the curtain. I then saw that the bell was still swinging on its string. Mr. Baggally's hands were covered with clay, which he was puddling.

JAMES RYAN, Dec. 15th, 1908.

[Written immediately after the curtain had been opened.]

## NOTE BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

I was standing alone at 8.45 p.m., on the evening of the 15th December, by the side of a table in the séance room preparing some clay for the purpose of obtaining, if possible, impressions of "John's" fingers or hand at the sitting which Eusapia was to give us on that evening, when suddenly a bell in the cabinet gave a bang against some woodwork, and rang loudly. I was standing at the time  $2\frac{3}{4}$  metres from the closed curtains of the cabinet. I looked at C., who was just within the open doorway of his room, and said to him "Do you hear that?" He exclaimed "By Jove." I then rushed into my room where Mr. Ryan was seated writing some notes, and I told him what had occurred. He came with me into the séance room, opened the curtains, and we all saw the bell swinging violently with the string that it was suspended by. I had anticipated that this string had broken and that the bell had fallen to the ground; my surprise was great to see the bell still hanging and swinging violently. I asked C. to make a note of the occurrence at once, and also Mr. Ryan.

After the swinging of the bell had ceased it occurred to me that possibly some one had hung or balanced it on the horizontal cord to which the string (by which the bell hung) was attached, and that if this were so, a jerk might cause the bell to fall and ring. I found by experiment that I could not balance the bell on the cord, but that I could balance it on a nail in the cabinet or hang it on the cord by a small ornamental knob that was on the side of the handle. When so balanced or hung, the bell required a jerk to cause it to fall. No one was near the cabinet to give this jerk. The incident has no evidential value, but is very perplexing. It is strange that it should have occurred during the course of the séances.

W. W. B., Dec. 15th, 1908.

## NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

As to this bell incident, I can express no opinion, not having been present. I came in amid the general consternation. It is infinitely painful to me, as Hon. Sec. of that most staid body, the S.P.R., to record the state of emotion in which I found my colleagues.

As to who was responsible for it, we shall never know. If it was "John," playing poltergeist, he reveals a sense of humour on

which he deserves sincere congratulation; if a more fleshly jester, the chambermaid and the boots must divide my homage. The only way that I can imagine the bell ringing as it did (it was still swinging as I came in) was by its having fallen from a position of unstable suspense, from which it was dislodged by some concussion. It may have occurred to the chambermaid or the boots to balance it on a certain nail in the hopes that it might tumble dramatically later on. Long practice has failed to disclose any other method. The chambermaid and the boots, delicately questioned, deny blankly. The chambermaid, indeed, is terrified at our cabinet and could barely be persuaded to play "Eusapia" in some imitation photographs of phenomena we took yesterday. The boots is too stolid for such imaginative leaps. "John" himself is unquestionable. Taking it all round it is the most perplexing, indeed, annoying dilemma of this most perplexing month.

An additional plausibility would perhaps be lent to a supernatural explanation if this occurrence be taken in conjunction with an incident which took place after, I think, the fifth séance, hitherto not mentioned. I had gone to bed and to sleep. I was presently awakened by C. who came in saying that from his bed in the next room he heard rappings in my room through the open door. They still continued, and I rose and went with C. to the cabinet, whence they came. They were slow, deliberate raps apparently on the wood-work near the window. They went on for about  $\frac{1}{4}$  minute while we stood there. Unfortunately the light was then turned up and the curtain withdrawn and they immediately stopped.

Eusapia, when told of this, declared it must have been her "fluid" which sometimes stayed behind. Perhaps;—or a beetle. I do not know.

E. F., Dec 17th, 1908.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE X.

*December 15th, 1908.*

In this, which was to be last séance of the series, we had arranged for a photographer to come and take a photograph of a table levitation, Eusapia having readily consented when this was proposed to her. As among the many photographs of levitations that have already been published, there are hardly any that show adequately the control of the medium's feet, we asked

her to use the stools apparatus, which would render any kind of foot control unnecessary. We also invited Prof. Galeotti and Mr. Ryan to attend the séance. The night was wet and stormy. Eusapia arrived late and in a bad humour. She said that she had been ill all day, and had intended to send word to say she could not come, and that it was only because she had heard from F. in the afternoon that Prof. Galeotti was coming that she changed her mind.

The photographers were placed in the next room with the door closed, Eusapia saying that when she felt that a levitation was going to happen she would give notice so that they might open the door and get ready. The séance began at 9.40. It had been suggested that until the "force" worked up she should operate with the table free of the apparatus, but she presently said that it would only cause disturbance if a change were made after the manifestations had begun, and asked that the stools should be put into use at once. Beyond a few unimportant tilts nothing whatever occurred for an hour. The light was altered several times without result. Eventually, at 10.34, the stools were removed, and F. and R. lay on the floor to control the medium's feet. Still no result, and, at 10.45 p.m., the light was altogether put out. Shortly afterwards, a complete levitation took place to which, owing to the darkness, no attention was paid. Some violent eurtain movements and touches, in what appear to be complete conditions of control, except as regards the medium's head, then followed. At 11.42 the faint red light was again lit, and another complete levitation occurred under what seemed good conditions, but the light was again shortly afterwards extinguished. From 12.11 a.m. till the séance ended at 12.28 a.m. B. continued to experience a series of touches on the back (as to which see his and F.'s notes). They were noteworthy owing to the fact that both the medium's hands were held during part of their continuance by both the controllers.

This séance proved, on account of the bad conditions of light and the sparseness of the phenomena, the least interesting of the series. Two alternative explanations offer themselves. 1st. That the medium feared the test of photography, and therefore limited her activity; 2nd. that owing to her fatigue and ill-health, and possibly to the bad weather, the "force"

was weak. She seemed greatly annoyed at the failure of the séance, and afterwards offered us another one, *gratis*, to make up. She frequently asked for the light to be raised, but tilts of the table invariably insisted on its being lowered again. Her demeanour was at least consistent with her sincerity. It will be seen that no new kind of phenomenon was added to the general programme, with one possible exception, an imprint in the clay, of which no mention is made in the Shorthand Report. This was found on the clay being examined on one of the occasions in the early part of the séance when the light was turned up. Five finger marks had been made at random, *i.e.* not in the shape of a hand. A real finger mark, in the same surface, shows the papillae markings; but these did not. Eusapia's own fingers on examination showed no trace of clay. The imprints were produced under entirely non-evidential conditions, unexpectedly, and at a time when attention was concentrated on securing a photograph of a levitation, and no particular care was being exercised against the medium's gaining access to the cabinet. Except, however, that it is strange that this particular phenomenon, often unsuccessfully attempted before, should have been produced on an evening when the "force" was otherwise so weak, and that it was produced just at the period of the séance when fraud could easily have been employed, no safe conclusion can be drawn.

#### SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE X.

*December 15th, 1908.*

*Present, F., C., B., Ryan, Professor Galeotti, and M., shorthand writer. Nothing in the cabinet excepting a chair, tied down, on the seat of which lies a cake of clay.*

*[Lights not recorded, but were as in séance IX. F., June 24/09.]*

*9.40 p.m. Séance begins.*

#### **Light I.**

*9.46 p.m. Stocks are put to table.*

*9.54 p.m. Table begins tilting.*

*9.58 p.m.*

**Light II.**

9.59 p.m.

**Light III.**

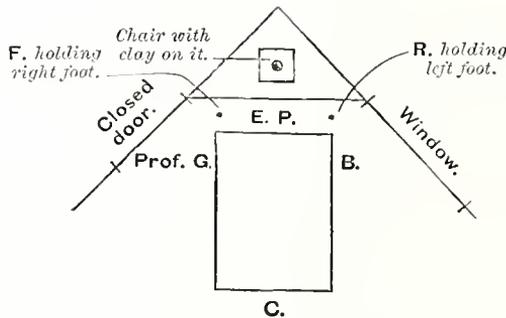
10.0 p.m.

**Light IV.**10.3 p.m. *Various tilts.*10.7 p.m. *Prof. G. "John, hurry up, as photographers are waiting."*

10.13 p.m.

**No Light.**10.27 p.m. *For convenience of photographers medium says that she will make a certain sign when she feels a levitation is coming.*

10.34 p.m.

**Light IV.**10.35 p.m. *Stocks removed.*10.45 p.m. *Door of photographer's room closed.***No Light.**

Complete levitation of the table.

10.58 p.m.

**Light IV.**

11.5 p.m.

**No Light.**

11.6 p.m. F. The curtain is pulled away from under my foot, which was on it.

F. I had hold of the medium's two feet, and my left foot was lying on the top of the curtain, which was flicked away strongly from underneath my foot.

B. Her left hand on my right hand on the left side of the table.

G. She is holding my hand. I can feel her thumb.

11.10 p.m. F. The curtain blows out.

F. I was holding both feet, and she kicked up with her right foot.

11.11 p.m. C. A blow like a mallet on the table.

F. The curtain is violently blown about.

G. I have the whole of her right hand in my left hand, feeling fingers.

B. Her left hand on the palm of my right hand resting on the surface of this end of the table.

F. At the time of the blow she kicked up with her right foot, that is to say, her knee. Her foot certainly did not touch the table. [She lifted her right knee about four inches, and brought the foot, which I was holding, down with a stamp. The blow resounded as the foot came down, not as it went up. F., Dec. 16/08.]

R. My hand is under her left foot, between her left foot and the table leg.

11.13 p.m. B. There is a hand that has caught hold of my knee and squeezes it.

B. Her left hand on my right hand. I feel distinctly that it is her left hand. I hold it by the thumb.

G. She has her right hand on the back of my hand in the middle of the table.

11.15 p.m.

**Light IV.**

F. The curtain comes right out over my head.

F. There was, at the same time, a convulsive movement of her right foot [which I was holding. F., Dec. 16/08].

## [Light IV.]

G. I felt a hand press me.

G. She holds my hand on her knee by her two fingers.

B. She is holding the whole of my right hand with her left hand on her left knee.

11.24 p.m. *F. Her left foot is kicking about.*

Complete levitation of the table.

F. I had both feet.

11.27 p.m. The curtain blows out.

G. My left hand is resting on her right knee. I can feel the whole of her hand.

B. Her left hand on my right hand on her left knee. I am certain it is her left hand because I can feel her thumb.

F. I have both feet.

11.30 p.m. The right curtain blows out.

G. Same control as before.

B. Same control as before.

F. Same control as before.

11.31 p.m. The curtain was blown over G.'s head.

G. My hand is on the table, and she holds it.

B. Her left hand was holding my right hand on her left knee.

B. Something touched me. She held my right hand in her left hand towards the curtain, and I felt a touch.

G. My hand is on the table, and she holds it.

G. I am touched on the shoulder.

G. My hand is on the surface of the table, and I can feel the whole of her hand on my hand, her thumb under and her fingers over it.

B. I am holding her left hand in my left hand on the table, my right hand on the back of her neck.

11.42 p.m. Complete levitation of the table.

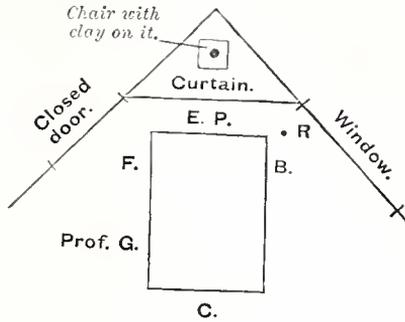
G. Control same as before.

B. Control same as before.

F. I have both feet.

## [Light IV.]

12.0 p.m. *F.* gets up from beneath the table. *R.* also abandons his position.



12.11 a.m.

**No Light.**

*B.* Something is playing about with my back.

*Long discussion between F. and B. about a supposed substitution of hands. [When B. reported the touch on his back, I noticed that the medium's right hand was only partly on my left. I felt down quickly with my right hand and found that her fingers were resting on one of B.'s hands. I said in Italian, "The control is not good." The medium at once agreed that it was not good, her hands being too close together. But she showed me the position of her left hand, which was under B.'s right. B. stated that it had been there all the time. After this B. and I together controlled both of the medium's hands, I leaning over to B.'s side of table. The touches, however, on B.'s back still continued as before. F., Dec. 16/08.]*

12.13 a.m. *B.* There is something touching my back.

*B.* She had her left hand on my right hand on the table on the left side of the table, and her left foot was resting on my right foot, and our knees are touching.

*F.* Her right hand is squeezing mine very hard on her right lap. Her right foot is squeezing very hard on my foot, and I have just verified that it is her right foot.

*B.* Something is playing with my back again.

*F.* At that time she squeezed my right hand under the table.

*B.* Same conditions and control as before.

*F.* Same control as before.

[No Light.]

B. Something is playing about with my back again.

*F. That is extremely good. There is absolutely no possibility of hand substitution.*

12.20 a.m. B. This thing keeps playing on my back.

B. Her left foot is pressing on my foot. [While I was feeling these touches on my back, I repeatedly placed my left hand on the medium's left hand, which was on my right hand, and verified that it was really her left hand by passing my left hand all up her arm to the shoulder, and I also verified that it was her left foot that was resting on my right foot by passing my left hand down from her knee to the foot which was resting on mine. B., Dec. 16/08.]

12.22 a.m. F. Rather good partial levitation.

12.23 a.m. B. Something is knocking on the back of my chair.

B. and F. Control perfect, the same as before.

12.24 a.m. B. Something is playing with my chair.

F. I have my left hand on her left wrist, and her right hand is on the top of my right hand, so that I can feel both her hands. I still hold her left hand.

B. And I verify by feeling right up to her shoulder.

F. My left foot behind her right heel, and her right leg touched by my left.

*B. She says she wants to touch my chair, which she does.*

B. Something touched me.

12.27 a.m. B. Something is playing with my hand. Again it does so, now under my arm.

*12.28 a.m. Séance terminated.*

#### NOTE ON SÉANCE X. BY E. FEILDING.

I think that the incident reported at 12.11 a.m. may be somewhat instructive, and that it may throw some light on the vexed question of the frequency of Eusapia's fraudulent substitution of hands. In view of the Cambridge report, and the reports of other observers,

it is clearly impossible to deny that she resorts, at times, to this trick.

My own experience on this occasion, however, leads me to think it is not impossible that it is often, in the darkness, thought she had resorted to it when, in fact, she has not, and that her hands have, through weariness or carelessness, got into what may be called the "substitution position," without its being taken practical advantage of. I noticed that I only had half her hand, and immediately felt for the other half, and found it on B.'s left hand. I at once jumped to the conclusion that she must have produced the touches on B.'s back with her other hand. In accordance with my promise I told her my control was not good. She agreed; but lifted my hand to feel her other hand, which I found was under B.'s right. Even then, had not the touches continued at intervals for about a quarter of an hour on B.'s back, I should still have felt dissatisfied, but our attention being called to the close position of the hands, we took especial pains to control them, and the touches continued without the least interruption.

E. F., Dec. 19th, 1908.

#### NOTE ON SÉANCE X. BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

There was a good deal of confusion at this séance owing to the repeated opening and shutting of the door between the séance room and C.'s room, where the photographic camera had been placed with which it was intended that a photograph of the séance table should be taken at the moment of its complete levitation. The accidental flash, at one time, of the magnesium powder was also a cause of disturbance.

Notwithstanding these disquieting incidents (which had a disturbing effect on the mind of Eusapia), good phenomena took place towards the end of the séance.

The repeated touches on my back between 12.11 and 12.23 were to me of great evidential value, notwithstanding the prevailing darkness at the time, as I not only assured myself that I had control of the medium's left hand and left foot, by feeling them with my right hand and my right foot, but also by repeatedly, while I was being touched, passing my left hand all up her left arm to her shoulder, thus verifying that it was really her left hand that rested on my right, and by also continually passing my left hand down her left knee to the foot which rested on mine, thus verifying that it was her left foot that rested on my right.

The touches could not, by any possibility, have been produced by her head, as when I passed my left hand up her left arm, I verified the position of her head.

The touches were not produced by the hand or foot that I had under control, nor by her head. The medium's right hand and right foot were under perfect control of F., therefore the touches on my back appeared to me evidential.

W. W. B., Dec. 16th, 1908.

#### REMARKS ON SÉANCE XI.

*December 19th, 1908.*

This was the extra séance which Eusapia had offered, to make up for the failure of the tenth. C. had been obliged to leave Naples. F. and B. decided to make another attempt to get the 'higher phenomena' of materialisation, and to discard the recording of the details of control of the less important manifestations. They also invited Signor Zingaropoli, a gentleman of high official position in the *avvocatura* of the municipality, very well known to Eusapia and thoroughly familiar with her phenomena; and also Mrs. and Miss Hutton, two English ladies, friends of his, and who had attended a few of Eusapia's séances. Although, it is true, the 'higher phenomena' did not appear, the séance proved an extremely fruitful one, and the shorthand report, not very complete in itself, but amplified by subsequent notes, should be carefully read. It will be sufficient if attention is here called to the more remarkable occurrences.

- (1) The very remarkable curtain movement at 10.11 p.m. which occurred in the bright No. 1 light, shortly after F. had carefully examined the curtain, gathered it together and placed it away from the medium.
- (2) The movements of the stool at 10.19 p.m., outside the cabinet, within a minute or two after it had been placed on the floor at a distance of two or three feet from the medium, with the express purpose of seeing whether she could cause it to move. Note that the movements were occasionally sideways, that the shorthand writer, who had placed the stool, was standing close to it while the movements were taking place,

and on several occasions felt around the stool to show that there was no attachment.

- (3) The appearance of an object like a head with large features, or a hand with the fingers crooked so as to simulate a head, wrapped up in the curtain, at 10.54 p.m. and at 11.33 and 11.34 p.m.
- (4) The repeated graspings of B., kneeling on the table from 11.02 p.m. to 11.09 p.m., by a hand through the curtain.
- (5) The white thing which appeared 3 ft. to the medium's left, *i.e.* from the corner near the window, at 11.16 p.m.
- (6) The touches that occurred simultaneously on both the controllers' laps at 11.45 p.m., when both the medium's hands were visibly on the table.
- (7) The levitation of the clay at 12.15 a.m., from the floor behind the medium's chair, inside the curtain, and its appearance between Mrs. H. and the medium at a height of about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  ft. from the ground, wrapped up in the curtain, held there as if by some one behind the curtain until taken by Mrs. H. and F.
- (8) The levitation, at 12.26 a.m., of the stool, which, on account of its extreme slowness, was perhaps the most remarkable of all the transportations of objects which we had yet witnessed. The inception of this movement was seen by the shorthand writer, who was standing close to the stool as it began its upward climb.
- (9) The long series of touches, lasting almost continuously through a period of half an hour (12.34 a.m. to 1.6 a.m.), experienced by B. as of a hand playing about on his left hand or wrist as he held it against the curtain. It will be noticed that during part of this time B. held *both* the medium's thumbs in front of her on the table, at one time in both of his hands which he kept far apart and at another time in his right hand, the medium's thumbs and hands being visible.
- (10) Finally, the series of raps produced on the door leading into B.'s room, at the side of the cabinet, at the close of the séance, which must be regarded as the only really evidential raps obtained throughout the whole series. The No. 1 light was on, and the room additionally flooded with light through the open door of the next room.

## SHORTHAND REPORT OF SÉANCE XI.

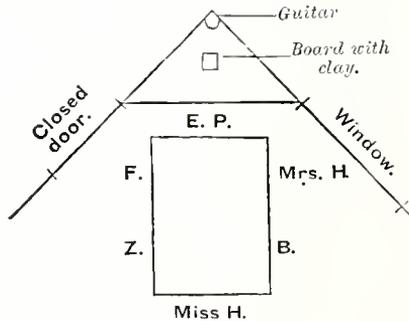
December 19th, 1908.

*Present: F., B., Mrs. and Miss Hutton, Signor Zingaropoli, and M., shorthand writer.*

*In cabinet: Photographie plate hanging to wall as before.*

*The board of clay is on the ground in the centre of the cabinet. The small guitar is upside down in the corner of the cabinet behind the clay.*

[Lights not recorded, but were as in séances IX. and X. F., June 24/09.]

**Light I.**

10.5 p.m. *Tilts, non-evidential, begin.*

*F. Partial levitation of the table is coming on.*

F. The table has been up in the air on the two legs furthest from her for the last half minute. I am holding her hand on the top of it. It is wriggling about.

10.8 p.m. *Tilts become very violent.*

*Complete levitation of the table.*

10.11 p.m. *Curtain blows out.*

10.11 p.m. *F. I am putting my hand down between her dress and the curtain, and now I have made a perfectly clear space between her foot and the curtain.*

**[Light I.]**

10.16 p.m. F. I saw her dress bulging out to the right.

F. Her foot is certainly on mine.

F. It is coming out again. It is coming out a different way this time.

10.18 p.m. *Tilts ask for less light.*

**Light II.** but immediately afterwards

**Light I.** again.

*The little stool is at her request placed outside the curtain to the left of the medium, about a yard distant from her left foot.*

F. I saw the curtain move then on to the medium. I could see a perfectly clear space between the chair of the medium and the curtain. Again while I am looking at an absolutely clear space the curtain rushes out and completely engulfs the right side of the medium.

[This was the first time I have seen the curtain blow out under such absolutely evidential conditions. I was sitting beside it; I had at 10.11 pulled it right away from the medium so that a clear space of a foot was between it and her, visible right down to the carpet, the bottom of the curtain being gathered together in a bunch away from her foot. I then asked that the curtain might again be made to blow out. I watched it closely. The medium several times held her hand out towards it, but it did not move. Her dress then made two bulging movements out towards it from below her chair, on the right, but did not reach it. At 10.18 p.m. the table tilted five times for less light. I protested and asked that the curtain might be moved in the original bright light, and the light was immediately turned up again. I watched the curtain continuously throughout, and suddenly the whole of the left edge of the right curtain, *i.e.* the edge nearest to her right shoulder, rushed out and completely enveloped her right side. F., Dec. 20/08.]

10.19 p.m. *Five tilts for less light.*

**Light II.**

M. I see the little stool move.

Mrs. H. I am squeezing the medium's left hand in my right.

M. The stool again moved while I was trying to close the window doors which had become unlatched.

10.23 p.m. Mrs. H. Three knocks on my chair.

Mrs. H. Control same as before.

Mrs. H. The little stool is moving again.

M. While I was looking at it.

[At medium's request I had fetched the stool from another part of the room and placed it as stated above. I then returned to my place shortly after, at 10.19. I saw the stool move. I walked over towards it, re-examined it by putting my hands right round it, and ascertained that there was no attachment, and it again immediately moved sideways, *i.e.* not towards the medium. There was a clear space between the stool and the medium. M., Dec. 20/08.]

10.25 p.m. *Five tilts ask for less light.*

**Light III.**

*F. In this light I can see the separate fingers of the medium.*

10.27 p.m. *F. Note that I verified the clay after the medium had entered the room and taken her seat.*

10.28 p.m. Mrs. H. The curtain is moving towards me.

F. More movements—2 or 3 times, very large.

10.30 p.m. Mrs. H. The curtain still moves.

*M. notes: The medium says she wishes to touch something, which she does, then replaeing her hand.*

*F. I can see the medium's left hand on the table; her right hand is on her lap in mine. Her left foot on Mrs. Hutton's foot, and her right foot on mine.*

*F. Substitution of hands!*

*Mrs. H. I thought that I still had hold of the medium's left hand.*

**[Light III.]**

[*The medium was now holding Mrs. H.'s and my hands on her lap close together. I was looking over the medium's lap, the hands being obscured by the table, and I saw a hand moving about towards the curtain. I asked Mrs. H. if she held the medium's left. She said "No, she has made a substitution." Her right hand was only partly on mine, and she must have given Mrs. H. the impression that she continued to hold the left by touching her with the fingers of her right hand. The movement of the hand I saw was quite deliberate and visible. Nothing followed. F., Dec. 20/08.*]

[*It seems difficult to suppose that her intent was fraudulent, as she must have known that in the light which prevailed a trick would have been detected. F., May 23/09.*]

[*I felt the thumb nail of the medium's right hand and immediately suspected she had substituted the right for the left hand, thus leaving the left free. My suspicion was confirmed when I felt the left return to its original position, clasping my right. C. H., Dec. 22/08.*]

10.34 p.m. Mrs. H. Three knocks on my chair.

10.35 p.m. Mrs. H. Three taps on my chair again.

10.43 p.m. Mrs. H. A hand is pressing my right thigh.

F. I can see the medium's left hand on the table. Her right hand in my left.

Mrs. H. Four raps on my chair.

10.47 p.m. *Light 4.*

**Light IV.**

*F. Medium has her right leg right across my knees. Her right hand is on her right lap.*

10.50 p.m. F. Something white appeared over the medium's head.

F. Her right hand is over on my corner of the table in mine.

H. Her left hand is on my right hand on the table.

## [Light IV.]

10.54 p.m. Mrs. H. A black thing came out.

F. The left curtain came right over the table, obscuring Mrs. H. [This appeared like an elongated hand with very long fingers, which were bent. The curtain was tightly stretched over the object, which waved three times. It appeared at a considerable height above the medium's head. I had firm control. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

F. Medium's right hand was in mine on the table.

Mrs. H. Her left hand in mine on my corner of the table.

10.55 p.m. F. A light appeared over the medium's head.

[This light was different from either of the two lights we had previously seen. It was more of a yellow colour, not blue-green, and it did not sparkle. F., Dec. 20/08.]

F. Her right hand immovable in mine.

Mrs. H. Medium's left hand in mine on this corner of the table.

Mrs. H. Five knocks on my chair.

10.57 p.m. Mrs. H. Something has just touched my right side.

*10.58 p.m. Light 4 is now shaded by two thicknesses of a silk handkerchief.*

**Light IV. shaded.**

*F. I can see the face and hands and position of the medium, but I can no longer see the individual fingers.*

11 p.m. F. Something touched me on the right hand, under the table.

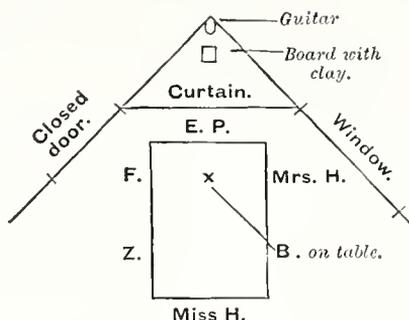
F. Medium's right hand is visible on the table.

Mrs. H. She holds my right hand in her left on the table, the two hands are separate.

11.1 p.m. Mrs. H. There is a light on the white window curtain. [A golden yellow light remained for two or three seconds on the white curtain to the right of me, then shifted its position a few inches to the right and disappeared. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

[Light IV. shaded.]

11.2 p.m. B. I get up on to the table at medium's request.



B. Oh, an arm comes and touches my elbow through the curtain. A distinct arm on my arm. It is much too high for the medium to reach.

F. Medium's hand is right in mine on my corner of the table.

B. I am touched again. It is pulling my hand. I can feel the fingers. It is coming again.

Mrs. H. She is holding my hand in hers on this corner of the table.

B. My hand is at least three feet or more above the head of the medium.

F. At the time of the last phenomenon I measured the distance between Mrs. H.'s fingers and mine; it is about 9 to 12 inches.

B. A hand caught hold of my four fingers. I distinctly felt the fingers of the hand and the thumb, which gave me a close squeeze.

F. Medium's two hands were in the extreme corners of the table, the left held in Mrs. H.'s hand and the right in the extreme right of the corner in mine.

[About this time, while B. was on the table, an incident occurred which was not caught by the stenographer. The medium's head had retired into the shadow between the curtains. Suddenly I perceived her head about a foot higher up, looking out of the curtain as though trying to appear as a 'spirit' head to B. I noticed no movement of her body, and the effect was exactly

[Light IV. shaded.]

that described in *Alice in Wonderland* of a neck becoming suddenly elongated. This must have been an illusion; I cannot account for it. The medium must have known her head was visible to me.<sup>1</sup> F., Dec. 20/08.]

11.5 p.m. Mrs. H. A hand is pressing my hip on my right side.

F. My left hand is on her left, which is holding Mrs. H.'s arm, and her right is on the top of my right hand.

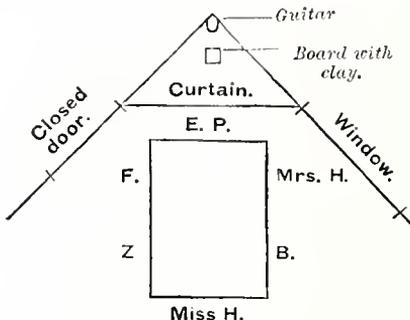
11.8 p.m. B. Something has moved inside the cabinet.

11.9 p.m. B. That hand came out and nearly pulled me off the table. It came out as I was getting down.

F. I had her right hand on the right corner of the table.

Mrs. H. I had the whole of the medium's left hand pressing on mine on the table.

[B. returned to his seat. F., June 24/09.]



11.11 p.m. Mrs. H. A hand is pressing my right shoulder.

F. I have her right hand visibly on the table in my right hand. I had my left hand over both knees. Her head was visible.

Mrs. H. And I held her left hand on the table.

11.14 p.m. Mrs. H. The curtain is being drawn.

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. H. writes, Dec. 24/08, "You may be interested to know that I have seen the elongation of the neck which you describe as a scene from *Alice in Wonderland* on other occasions, although not at this last séance. I was speaking with Prof. Lutzenberger, a well-known physician and psychist, and he told me that Eusapia had given some very successful manifestations of this elongated neck and of her apparent power to grow a third arm. These experiments took place here last year. . . ."

[Light IV. shaded.]

11.16 p.m. Mrs. H. Something white appeared.

F. From here I can see the white thing which comes out about three feet to the left of the medium's head. It looks to me from here very much like a very large handful of tow.

[This white thing came out quite deliberately; it was irregular in shape. It stayed out about a foot beyond the curtain for 2 or 3 seconds and then retired. F., Dec. 20/08.]

[The white thing which came out from the curtain quite near my right shoulder was of uncertain shape and looked like a white cloud or a quantity of cotton wool. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

F. Her right hand is on the table visible to me in the whole of my right.

Mrs. H. I have her left hand here on my corner of the table.

F. There can be absolutely no question of substitution now, her hands are far too far apart and the curtain is between them. I have my left hand on her two knees, and her head is visible.

11.18 p.m. H. Something has touched me.

F. Medium's right hand is holding mine some inches off the table. My left hand always on her two knees.

Mrs. H. Her left hand is on mine and her head is always visible.

11.21 p.m. F. I am touched gently on my left knee.

F. My left hand is across medium's two knees, and her right hand is visible to me on the table.

Mrs. H. Her left hand is over mine on the table.

11.28 p.m. M. *Medium asks for control to be verified.*

F. My left hand was on the top of her head and I felt something just touch the top of my fingers.

F. Her right hand visibly in mine on the table.

Mrs. H. Her left hand was on the back of my hand on the table.

11.30 p.m. F. A hand pressed me through the curtain on my left hand, which was behind her head.

F. Her right hand is visibly in mine on the table.

Mrs. H. Mine is on the table, her left hand on the back of it.

[Light IV. shaded.]

*F.* There can be no question of a substitution of hands here because her left hand is the other side of the curtain which is over the table.

11.33 p.m. *F.* Medium asks me to lean my head against hers and look in a particular direction [*i.e.* towards Mrs. H. *F.*, Dec. 20/08].

*F.* There comes a black thing right between me and the light, between me and B.

Mrs. H. Here it comes.

Mrs. H. There is a hand pressing me.

*F.* Her right hand was close to my face on the right side of the table holding my hand entirely.

Mrs. H. My right hand on the table with her left hand holding it.

Mrs. H. Again something has touched my right leg, and I have not lost control of her hand.

Mrs. H. My jacket is being pulled on the right side. I have not lost control.

11.34 p.m. Mrs. H. The black thing again.

*F.* This time it was a head, I saw the features. It looked to me like a head wrapped up in the curtain. It remained out I should say about 3 or 4 seconds. It went as far as between me and the light. Her right hand was holding mine firmly, right round the thumb. Her head was against mine.

Mrs. H. Control just the same as before.

[To me this appeared like a large black head with clearly marked features more than life size, as though made of stiff black muslin. It was attached to a kind of a body, it came slowly out over the medium's left shoulder past Mrs. H., well over the table towards the light. The curtain being very thin and transparent, the effect I saw might have been produced by a head inside it, the curtain being drawn closely over the features, which were distinct, and revealed themselves owing to the light being on the other side of them, or the same effect might have been produced by a head made out of stiffened black muslin or gimp without any curtain outside it. I am absolutely certain of the control

[Light IV. shaded.]

of the right hand, which was close to my own face. F., Dec. 20/08.]

[The black object was decidedly covered with the curtain (not black muslin). It [the curtain] came out on my side close to me and it was tightly stretched over the object in which I distinguished the same elongated hand seen at 10.54 p.m. The fingers seemed to imitate a profile like an *ombre chinoise*, the middle finger crooked like a Roman nose, the folded thumb forming a chin. This is a manifestation which has never failed to appear at any of Eusapia's séances at which I have been present. . . . I am perfectly certain of the control of the left hand. C. H., Dec. 22-24/08.]

11.38 p.m. Medium asks F. to pinch her.

F. Now I am pinching her.

Mrs. H. I am pinched on my right arm.

F. I am pinching again.

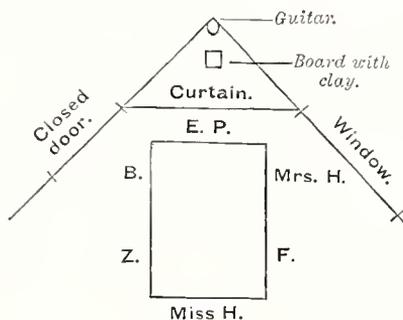
Mrs. H. Both at the same time now.

F. I pinched the medium and Mrs. H. felt a pinch simultaneously, but not always, that is to say, sometimes I pinched and she did not feel the pinch.

[The medium told me that if I pinched her Mrs. H. would feel simultaneous pinches. I did so first on her left shoulder and subsequently on her right arm, the first two or three pinches Mrs. H. was simultaneously pinched, but the last two or three she felt nothing. F., Dec. 20/08.]

[I also felt the last *two* pinches, but not simultaneously; about a second after. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

11.41 p.m. B. and F. change places.



[Light IV. shaded.]

11.45 p.m. Mrs. H. A hand is pulling my dress. The hand is pulling me in my lap.

Mrs. H. Both medium's hands are on the table.

F. (compressing a description given by B. and Mrs. H. together) A hand was playing about on both B.'s and Mrs. H.'s laps, simultaneously.

F. Each of them was holding one of the medium's hands on opposite corners of the table. I can see both hands from here.

[*I reported the control here being nearer the stenographer and both hands being visible to me. F., Dec. 20/08.*]

B. I can see the medium's hand on mine. My left knee against her right knee, my left foot against her right foot.

Mrs. H. Her left heel is on the toe of my foot.

F. Mrs. H.'s dress was twitched that time.

11.49 p.m. B. A hand touched me. It caught hold of my arm. This hand apparently came from behind the medium. It was not the medium's right hand. I am absolutely certain of this because I can see the medium's right hand, clearly, in front of me. There! it is done again, with the same control.

*F. We will not describe the control any more.*

[*After this series of touches we decided not to interrupt the proceedings by describing the control but to await developments quietly. F., Dec. 20/08.*]

11.49 p.m. ?B. or Mrs. H. A hand caught hold of my arm. The same thing has happened again.

11.51 p.m. F. Something white appeared over the medium's head.

11.56 p.m. B. Something came out two or three times.

B. Something is keeping time with the tune on my leg [Z was singing].

B. The curtain comes out and covers the medium's head altogether.

[Light IV. shaded.]

12.3 a.m. B. Fingers were playing on my hand for several minutes.

[*I here walked over to the curtain to try and get a touch. M., Dec. 20/08.*]

12.10 a.m. M. notes: While I was trying for a touch, the curtain bulged violently several times but I cannot say whether or not this was done by movements of the medium's shoulder or feet.

Mrs. H. Something came right on to the table and seized me violently and thumped on the table.

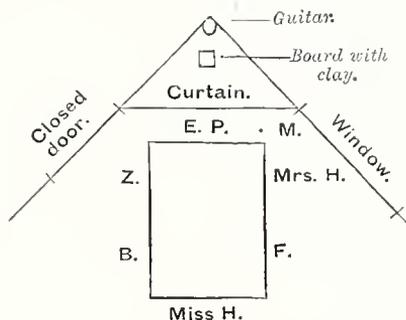
12.11 a.m. F. Mrs. H.'s left hand was seized by the wrist by a hand and dragged across the table to touch B.'s face.

[My left arm was seized suddenly above the wrist and rapidly dragged across the table and my hand was violently shaken in B.'s face, as if to strike him. I had complete control of the left hand of medium. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

[I was looking at Mrs. H.'s left hand when it suddenly made a movement across the table as though striking out at B.'s nose. I did not see any hand holding it. F., Dec. 20/08.]

B. Oh! Here's the hand again. I saw it that time.

12.13 a.m. B. and Z. change places.



12.15 a.m. F. The clay comes right out over the table in front of Mrs. H. and is apparently held there, within the curtain.

M. I touched it as it was entering Mrs. H.'s hands but felt nothing else.

## [Light IV. shaded.]

[The clay had been on the floor of the cabinet just behind medium's chair in such a position that she could not reach it with her hands without stooping in a necessarily obvious manner. It came quickly out wrapped up in the curtain between Mrs. H. and the medium. I then took it in my hands and unwrapped it. There were no finger marks on it. The clay had come alone, without the board on which it stood. F., Dec. 20/08.]

12.17 a.m. Bell (which we had placed on séance table at beginning) falls off (non evidential).

12.26 a.m. M. The little stool, which was to the left of the medium, on the ground, while I was looking at it, approached the curtain, gradually climbed up it, very slowly, to about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet above Mrs. H.'s right shoulder then approached the table, drawing curtain with it, and remained there in front of Mrs. H.

[As the control was no longer to be given in full I had stood up to try to see some of the phenomena and was standing behind and to the right of Mrs. H. I was looking down at the little stool which was on the floor about a foot from the curtain and about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet from the medium's leg and wondering whether anything would happen. Suddenly, as I was looking, I saw it approach the curtain, and the curtain go out towards it. It then climbed very very slowly indeed up the curtain, horizontally, one corner only pointing to and touching the curtain on the outside. It gave me the impression of being drawn up as if by a kind of magnet on the other side of the curtain. It slid past the curtain which remained motionless. I felt up the curtain as it was climbing up, on both sides of the stool, but not between the stool and the curtain, as I was afraid of interfering with the movements. There was nothing tangible behind it. When it had climbed up to a distance of about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  feet above Mrs. H.'s shoulder it seemed to turn and, drawing the curtain with it, went over Mrs. H.'s shoulder on to the séance table. At the moment it was turning I was curious to verify the position of the medium's left hand. I began by Mrs. H.'s shoulder, felt all down her arm, discovered she was holding the medium's left hand, which I felt right up to the medium's shoulder. On bringing my hand down again to the medium's hand, she made a

## [Light IV. shaded.]

violent movement as if to push it away and said "Somebody is breaking the current" ("fili"). M., Dec. 20/08.]

[I first saw the stool when it was about the height of Mrs. H.'s shoulder. It moved very slowly towards me and came on to the table over Eusapia's left hand which Mrs. H. said she held firmly all the time. F., Dec. 20/08.]

[M. who was standing behind Mrs. H.'s chair had suddenly said "Oh, look at the stool." I turned round and saw the stool very slowly climbing up the curtain at its extreme edge near the window curtain, by one corner, and, as M. says, as though drawn up by a magnet from within the curtain. I saw M. feel on both sides of the corner by which it was being drawn up, and he reported that he felt nothing. The stool appeared to slide along the stuff of the curtain. I also saw M. quickly slip his hand down Mrs. H.'s right arm and up Eusapia's left arm to her shoulder to make absolutely sure that her hand was firmly held on the table. When the stool reached a point above the level of Mrs. H.'s head, it slowly turned as though pivoted on the corner, came towards Eusapia and descended on to the séance table between her and Mrs. H. F., May 23/09.]

[The stool, which I had myself replaced in its original position rather more than a yard from medium at her request, suddenly struck me gently on the right side of the forehead. It then passed before me and I saw it quite clear of the curtain as it remained two or three seconds poised in front of me before settling partly on my right arm, but not supported by my arm. It just touched the sleeve of my jacket. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

12.32 a.m. Mrs. H. Something white appeared between the black and white curtains.

[The same cloud-like object as at 11.14 p.m., but somewhat smaller. C. H., Dec. 22/08.]

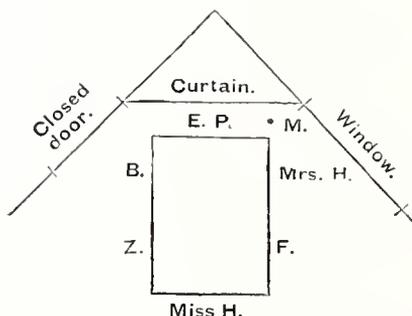
[A question was asked as to whether a spirit was present connected with any one in the circle. Tilts of the table in reply to questions requiring answers of only "Yes" or "No" indicated that B.'s father was present. B., therefore, resumed control of medium to be near the curtain, and asked for a touch from

[Light IV. shaded.]

*his father's left hand, which, owing to an accident, would disclose a mark of identity. F., Dec. 20/08.]*

*[The touch was not given, and tilts in reply to questions asked by F. about B.'s father gave wrong answers. B., Oct. 19/09.]*

*B. and Z. again change places.*



12.34 a.m. B. Something is playing with my knees now.

12.43 a.m. B. Something is playing with my sleeve.

12.43 a.m. B. holds his left hand towards the curtain to try and get a touch from his alleged father's hand.

B. My right hand on medium's right hand.

Mrs. H. I am absolutely certain I have hold of her left hand.

F. Note that B.'s sleeve is continuously being pulled while he is holding his hand down towards the curtain.

B. The curtain is jerked three times, as much as to say that I shall be touched by my father's hand.

12.45 a.m. B. The right curtain blew right out again.

*12.46 a.m. B. I have taken my hand away from the curtain.*

12.50 a.m. B. The curtain blew out and went back again.

12.50 a.m. Violent movements of the curtain.

12.51 a.m. B. My left hand is squeezed several times in response to my questions asking my alleged "Father" to come and grasp me by the left hand.

B. Now I am grasped by the arm.

B. I can see both the medium's hands on the table.

[Light IV. shaded.]

12.52 a.m. B. I am touched on the wrist of my left hand.

B. I am holding medium's right hand by the wrist.

12.54 a.m. B. I am continuously being touched.

B. I can always see medium's hands.

12.56 a.m. The curtain has violently blown over the table.

B. Something keeps touching me, several times, whilst I am holding my left hand down inside the cabinet asking "Father" to give me a grasp of his left hand so that I might recognise him.

B. I have got the right hand of the medium.

Mrs. H. I have the left hand of the medium.

1 a.m. B. This hand has again come out, and is playing with me now. [B. asked Mrs. H. to let him hold both the medium's hands. F., May 23/09.]

B. I have got both her hands now.

B. Yes. It has touched me again.

*B. It is an absolute proof to me that this hand is not the hand of the medium.*

B. I have got both her thumbs, I am holding her right hand in my left hand, my right hand is on the left side of the table holding her left.

B. This hand is still playing about me.

B. now takes hold of both thumbs of medium in his right hand.

F. B.'s left hand is lying on the corner of the table, and a hand from inside the curtain plays with it. Meanwhile B. is now holding the two thumbs of the medium in his right hand, visibly to me.

1.3 a.m. B. Oh, it is touching me again.

B. I have verified the foot control.

1.6 a.m. B. The hand is again playing about with me.

*1.15 a.m. Medium says she is tired. Lights are gradually turned up, and F. goes into C.'s room with Miss H., but medium still keeps her place, as also do B., Mrs. H. and M.*

**Light I.**

*After a time,*

B. Medium makes three gestures towards the door behind me, and three noises are heard on it.

*M. notes this is in light 1; C's room door open with full electric light on.*

Mrs. H. I heard them.

B. Several times medium made gestures, and each time raps are heard on the door. These gestures and raps were made a considerable number of times, finishing by four large gestures and four loud raps. Medium then held my right hand in her left, and scratched the back of my right hand with the nails of her right hand, and a loud rasping sound was heard on the door behind me.

[B. called me in from the other room, and I asked Eusapia to repeat the raps. It seemed, however, as though the force were expended. She made three or four gestures, and no raps followed. Then she made a final gesture, and a loud rap followed. It appeared to me distinctly to come from the door beside which I was standing, her feet at least three feet from the door, while her hand, as she made the gesture, did not approach within six inches of it. There was a clear space between the whole of the medium and the door. F., Dec. 20/08.]

[Mrs. H. writes, Dec. 24/08: "I want to draw your attention to a curious incident. When, after the séance, and after successfully producing the raps on the door, Eusapia failed to produce them again, she seized my right hand in her left and squeezed my hand with great force. At the same time, she took the curtain in her right hand and squeezed it tightly, as if she were pressing a wet sponge. She retained both my hand and the curtain (the latter between her thumb and forefinger, extending the other fingers), and then made the usual gestures towards the door, and produced the raps, though feebly. On again attempting to do so—without either my hand or the curtain—she failed. It seemed almost as if the curtain were impregnated with some fluid, and my own sensation is that of my strength being drawn out of me, leaving a feeling of great exhaustion."]

## IV.

## INDIVIDUAL CONCLUSIONS OF THE INVESTIGATORS.

## FINAL NOTE BY HERWARD CARRINGTON.

As a result of the ten sittings held by us at Naples, November 21st-December 15th, 1908,—being the ten séances attended by me,—I have to record my absolute conviction of the reality of at least some of the phenomena; and the conviction, amounting in my own mind to complete certainty, that the results witnessed by us were not due to fraud or trickery on the part of Eusapia. It would be impossible to impart this feeling of certainty to others, since that could only be obtained by a series of personal sittings; and the critic must depend for his conviction upon our record of the séances,—as we have had hitherto to depend upon the records of others. This is a very different thing from attending the séances oneself. Just as one can only gain a correct idea of a fraudulent spiritualistic séance by attending it in person, so, I think, can one only reach a definite conclusion in favour of the phenomena by attending genuine séances. The curious fact recorded by Mr. Feilding that the incidents seemed to roll off our minds and that we lapsed back into scepticism on each occasion until we had held four or five séances, was noticed by all of us; and it is only when one is controlling the medium oneself, and when one has absolute confidence in the controllers on the other side, that one reaches that state of complete conviction which it would be impossible to reach in any other manner.

One or two of the phenomena occurred under what I was forced to regard as ideal conditions of control. The touches during the latter part of Séance VI. were among these, when I was holding the medium's left hand in her lap, and controlling practically the whole of her body, while Mr. Baggally was controlling the right hand *on* the table, and these were the cases that convinced me finally and conclusively that genuine phenomena occurred, though I could see no definite reason for refusing credence to many of the phenomena of the previous séances. Still, there is a difference between intellectual and emotional conviction, and, whereas

the first of these states had been reached by the end of the second séance, the second did not result until the sixth séance, as I have said. Never were the two degrees more clearly marked than on this occasion in my own mind; and it is probable that the second of the two stages will only be reached by the majority when psychical science assumes a more definitely experimental form. Thus, on several occasions, I verified my own control and found it perfect; I also verified the control of my colleague. I then stretched my disengaged hand out towards the curtain, saying, "Now, if I am touched under *these* conditions, I shall consider the phenomenon definitely and finally proved." On several such occasions, I *did* receive touches apparently of hands, and I was consequently forced to the conclusion that these phenomena were absolutely genuine, and not the results of fraud on the part of Eusapia.

H. C., June 1909.

#### FINAL NOTE BY W. W. BAGGALLY.

On reading through the shorthand notes I find that 470 phenomena are recorded as having taken place during the course of the eleven séances.

Of these phenomena

305 took place when members of the S.P.R. Committee controlled;

144 took place when a non-member and a member of the S.P.R. Committee controlled;

21 took place when two non-members controlled;

---

470.

I have classed as phenomena in connection with the séance table, the complete levitations only, excluding the raps on it and its tilts and rockings, as, although some of these occurred under extremely good evidential conditions, the majority were non-evidential. At some of the séances the phenomena succeeded each other so rapidly that it was not possible to record them all, and consequently their number is largely understated.

The 470 phenomena divide themselves into the following classes:

CLASSIFICATION OF PHENOMENA.	Control by 2 Members of S.P.R. Committee.	Control by 1 Member of S.P.R. Committee and 1 Non- member.	Control by 2 Non- members.	TOTALS.
Complete levitations of séance table,	34	8	3	45
Bulgings and movements of curtains,	59	32	2	93
<sup>1</sup> Occasions on which bulges of medium's dress occurred, - - -	4	2	—	6
Movements of objects within the cabinet, - - - - -	28	4	2	34
Movements of objects (other than séance table) outside the cabinet,	41	3	7	51
Objects brought out of the cabinet, -	5	8	1	14
Plucking of the guitar string, - -	1	—	—	1
<sup>2</sup> Occasions on which sounds were heard in the cabinet (including sounds on tambourine, guitar, etc.), - - - - -	14	7	—	21
<sup>2</sup> Occasions on which sounds were heard outside the cabinet, such as knocks and scrapings on door, raps on backs of chairs, etc., -	6	8	—	14
Loud sounds on séance table, synchronising with movements of medium's head or foot, - -	7	—	—	7
Touches by some object (hand ?) through curtain, - - - -	20	6	2	28
Touches by some object (hand ?) outside the cabinet, - - - -	22	21	1	44
Occasions on which touches by some object (hand ?) were felt inside the cabinet, - - - - -	—	1	—	1
Grasps and touches by a tangible hand through curtain, - - - -	19	7	—	26
Grasps and touches by a tangible hand (not visible) outside the cabinet,	13	22	—	35
Hands seen which issued from and retired into the cabinet, - - -	3	2	—	5
Objects seen of an indefinable nature which issued from and retired into the cabinet, - - - -	16	9	3	28
Objects seen of an indefinable nature in the cabinet, - - - - -	1	—	—	1
Objects seen resembling heads which issued from and retired into the cabinet, - - - - -	5	1	—	6
Lights seen in the cabinet, on the curtain, and on medium's lap, -	5	2	—	7
Untying of knots, - - - - -	—	1	—	1
Occasions on which currents of air issued from medium's head, -	2	—	—	2
	305	144	21	470

<sup>1</sup> These do not give the actual number of bulges but the occasions on which they occurred. Several bulges in succession are put down as one phenomenon.

<sup>2</sup> The actual number of sounds is not given but the occasions on which they were heard. A series of thumps on the tambourine struck in succession are put down as one phenomenon, etc.

For the strict purposes of the S.P.R. investigation, perhaps only the phenomena which occurred when the members of the Committee alone controlled should be taken into account. At the time that these took place (except on the occasion when a current of air issued from Eusapia's head) the medium sat outside the cabinet with her back to the curtains, and a member of the S.P.R. Committee sat on each side of her controlling her hands and feet. These 305 phenomena may be explained by one of four hypotheses:

- (1) That they were *all* fraudulent.
- (2) That they were *all* genuine.
- (3) That some were genuine and the others fraudulent.
- (4) That some were genuine and the others not proved to be either genuine or fraudulent.

I proceed to consider these hypotheses in their order: (1) If all the phenomena were fraudulent they must have been produced either by the liberation of one of Eusapia's hands or feet, after she had carried out a substitution; or, when she was not able to resort to this method, owing to her hands or feet being too far apart, by the removal of one of her hands or feet from the hand or foot of the controller (he, after such a removal, continuing under the impression that he still felt her hand or foot in contact with his own), or by the use of her head or other part of her body, or some mechanism concealed about her person, or by the help of an accomplice.

Now it is a remarkable fact that (excluding the three occasions on which substitutions of hands took place, which were followed by no phenomena.<sup>1</sup> Eusapia was not detected resorting to any fraudulent methods during the production of any of the 305 phenomena.<sup>2</sup>

I cannot accept the theory that the members of the Committee were suffering from a collective hallucination. The fact that they were able to verify that the objects which they saw brought out of the cabinet remained outside at the termination of the sittings is sufficient to disprove it. Taking into consideration the manner of the control, that no mechanism was found on the medium's person, that no accomplice was present, and also that

<sup>1</sup>I do not include among the 470 phenomena the occasion when Eusapia made a substitution of hands and then brought the curtain forward and placed it on the table (see p. 383), because, in the view of F. and C., this incident did not purport to be supernatural.

<sup>2</sup>The non-detection of fraud also applies to all the other phenomena of the eleven séances which are not included in the above 305.

the three S.P.R. investigators were men who had been accustomed for years to the investigation of so-called physical phenomena of every variety, and who had detected fraud after fraud, I find it impossible to believe that Eusapia could have been able to practise trickery constantly during the many hours that the séances lasted and remain undetected.

(2) As regards the second hypothesis, "that *all* the phenomena were genuine," I cannot positively assert that this is correct.

The chances of occasional mal-observation on the part of the investigators should not be excluded. Eusapia was detected practising the trick of substitution on three occasions; it is therefore possible that she may have been able unobserved to liberate one of her hands or feet on other occasions, and by this means to produce fraudulently some of the phenomena; but neither my colleagues nor I had proof that she resorted to fraud in the production of any one of the phenomena.

(3) Regarding the third hypothesis, "that some of the phenomena were genuine and the others fraudulent," the second part of this is negated by the remark just made; it only then remains to consider the first part "that some of the phenomena were genuine."

On this point I feel that I can speak with assurance, though I am aware of the difficulty of imparting to a critic, by a mere description, the same conviction of the supernatural character of the particular phenomena in question as I gained from personal observation. One cannot easily accept as genuine phenomena which appear to contravene the known laws of Nature, and before doing so, one must be assured that by no possibility could they have been produced by normal means. A knowledge of the conjuring art is obviously of great use in enabling an investigator to judge whether a medium is practising fraud or not, and two members of the S.P.R. Committee possessed this knowledge. I have already mentioned the only normal methods which under the circumstances Eusapia, in my opinion, could have used for the fraudulent production of the phenomena, viz., the unobserved liberation and use of one of her hands or feet, the unobserved use of her head or other part of her body, or of some mechanism concealed about her person. The help of a confederate need not be considered, as the séances took place in our own room with locked doors.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>It has been suggested to me that possibly M., the stenographer, assisted the medium as a confederate. To this suggestion I would reply that M. is a gentleman whose services F. engaged without previously informing Eusapia that

If certain phenomena take place when both hands of the medium are distinctly seen, above, or quietly resting on, the séanee table, or both hands are clearly seen when being held by the controllers, and at the same time her body is in view down to her feet, while the controllers are assured, by tactile examination or by their sense of sight, that no mechanism is being brought into play, and when it is certain that there is no accomplice; if certain phenomena, I say, take place under the above conditions, which seem to exclude all conceivable normal means of producing the phenomena, there is then a strong presumption that they are produced supernormally, and it was the phenomena which occurred under these strictly test conditions that first convinced me of this. I will now give a few examples of such phenomena.

I have already (in my note to Séanee VII.) recounted in detail the remarkable movement of Eusapia's dress. This took place at the beginning of the seventh séanee, in the strongest light (unshaded) that we used from the time that I joined in the investigation, when the medium's hands were resting on the séanee table in full view of all the members of the S.P.R. Committee, when her whole body was seen (I stood quite close to Eusapia intently watching her), and when her two feet were securely held by F. and C., there being no possibility of a substitution of feet nor the use of any mechanism nor attachment, as the medium showed us, at the time, that her two feet were separately held and that no mechanism was concealed under her dress. F. felt with his hand several times, and found no attachment.

Another phenomenon which greatly impressed me was the bulging of the curtain after the conclusion of the sixth séanee at about 2 a.m.<sup>1</sup>

a stenographer would be present at the séances, and that he had never met the medium before. During the whole time that the séances at which I was present lasted, M.'s face was lit by the lamp which he used for the purpose of taking the notes. His face was clearly visible to the controllers, and therefore his position in the séanee room was never lost sight of. The table at which he sat was several feet away from the end of the séanee table farthest away from the medium. He never moved from his table except when he was asked to come near Eusapia the better to witness a few of the phenomena.

As regards the possibility of a confederate gaining access into the cabinet by a trap door, I may say that I examined the interior of the cabinet and found that the floor was made of tiles closely cemented together. The walls were at right angles to each other; one consisting of thick masonry gave on to the street, the other of thin masonry, brick or plaster, separated the séanee room from my bedroom. There was no trap door.

<sup>1</sup>See C.'s note to Séanee VI.

The light had been raised to No. 1 light. Eusapia released both her hands from control and placed them on the table. They were perfectly visible to all of us. Both her feet were under control. I noticed that the curtain, which was on the medium's right, but not in contact with any part of her body, made a slight movement. I immediately realised that if the curtain bulged out at that time there could be no possibility of her being able to produce the movement by normal means without detection, as owing to the good light and to my position, I could distinctly see at the same moment her head, her two hands, her body down to her feet, and the curtain which was close to me and not touching her.

A very short time after this thought crossed my mind, and while I was intently watching Eusapia, who did not move, the curtain bulged strongly out, as if pressed from within the cabinet by a balloon. The bulge was about a foot and a half from the medium's head and on a level with it. Eusapia was examined shortly afterwards, at this séance, and no mechanism was found concealed about her body.

There was a curious parallelism between the bulges of Eusapia's dress and those of the curtains. Those that I saw were all globular in form and they did not show themselves close to the ground.<sup>1</sup>

The remarkable nature of these bulges should be kept in mind. When they were felt by the hand of a sitter they offered no resistance, but gave the impression of being caused by a current of air blown from behind the curtain. They were never pointed or irregular in form, as would have been the case had they been brought about by a thread attached to the curtain or by a hand or foot pushing the curtain forward. The bulges of the curtains were sometimes on a level with Eusapia's head and sometimes higher or lower. Her head was, as I have said, visible when the bulges took place.

A notable phenomenon of a different character was one that was witnessed at 1.15 a.m. after the termination of Séance XI. when Mrs. H. had ceased to control. This lady retained her seat on the left of the medium and I retained mine on her right. The other persons who had been present at the séance (with the exception of the stenographer, who remained seated at his table) had retired into C.'s room. They had left the door wide open so that the séance room was now not only lit by Light 1 (the strongest light used at the séances), but also by

<sup>1</sup>As regards the movement of Eusapia's dress, to which I have referred, the bulges occurred before the lower edge of her dress began to creep along the floor in the manner described in my note to Séance VII.

the light from the adjoining room which was full on. Eusapia continued in a state of semi-trance, her elbows on the table, her hands raised. She tightly closed the fist of the left hand, as if by nervous tension, and made three motions with it towards the closed door which was behind my back (I was seated between the medium and the door and had a full view of her hands and the right side of her body from her head to her feet), whereupon three loud raps were heard on the door. After this she made several gestures with her hand, and each time raps were heard on the door, finishing with four large gestures followed by four loud raps. These raps were heard by Mrs. H. and myself. They distinctly came from the door behind me and not from where Eusapia sat in front of me. The medium then held my right hand in her right and scratched the back of my right hand with the finger nails of her left and, synchronously, a rasping sound was heard on the door. The distance between the medium's hand and the door when she made the gestures and scratched my hand was about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  feet, and the distance between her feet and the door about 3 feet. I was much impressed by these phenomena as they were taking place, and, without leaving my seat, called F. from the other room. His note, in the stenographic report, is as follows:

"B. called me in from the other room. I asked medium to repeat raps. It seemed as though the force were expended. She made three or four gestures and no raps followed. Then she made a final gesture and a loud rap followed. It appeared to me distinctly to come from the door beside which I was standing. Her feet were at least three feet from the door, and her hand, as she made the gesture, did not approach within six inches of it. There was a clear space between the whole of the medium and the door."

When F. came into the séance room Eusapia did not succeed in obtaining a rap until she brought her hand within a distance of six inches from the door, whereas when I first heard the raps her hand was about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  feet from it. F. placed himself between the medium and the door in a similar position to my own, and was thus able to confirm the fact, which I have stated, that Eusapia's hands could be clearly seen, in the excellent light, that the whole of her right side was in view down to her feet, and that the loud rap that he heard, like those that I heard, came distinctly from the door and not from where the medium sat.

The apparently supernormal agency was not only able to produce percussive and other sounds at a distance from Eusapia's body

and to move comparatively light objects, such as her dress or the curtains of the cabinet, but could also affect heavy objects, as was shown by many of the complete levitations of the séance table which occurred when one of my colleagues of the S.P.R. Committee and I controlled.

I would refer the reader to the complete levitations which took place during Séance IX. at 10.14, 10.16, and 10.17 p.m. The strongest Light, No. 1, was then on; the medium's hands were plainly visible in such a position that she could not make use of them for raising the table, and at the same time a space was seen by C. and myself between the table legs and the dress of the medium on either side of her. As an additional precaution I had my right hand across her two knees, which remained motionless during the levitations. All the above phenomena occurred under these stringent test conditions. I am therefore convinced that Eusapia did not (for their production) make use of her hands, or her feet, or any part of her body; neither did she resort to any mechanical means, nor was she assisted by a confederate, and I am compelled to ascribe these phenomena to some supernormal cause.

So far I have only treated of phenomena which were due to the action of some force of a telekinetic nature. My mind did not, *a priori*, reject the possibility of its existence owing to the fact of its newness to me, but that this force should be able to manifest itself as tangible matter and assume an organic form like a hand, capable of grasping, was a phenomenon of such a complex nature that I was not able to give it acceptance with equal ease. The phenomena, however, that I am about to describe, although lacking in one of the specific test conditions (inasmuch as the lower part of the medium's body was not in view at the time of their occurrence), offered me strong evidence that this force did materialise itself, to use a spiritualistic term, and did assume the form of a hand.

During the time that I controlled Eusapia, at the séances, I was certain that the hand that I had in contact with mine was her right hand (or her left hand as the case might be), as I continually assured myself of the fact by feeling the relative position of her thumb and palm, and also that it was a living hand by the responses that it gave to my pressure. The controller who sat on the other side of the medium was equally certain that the hand that he had in contact with his own was her other hand, for the same reasons. I had, therefore, the assurance that it was not

one of Eusapia's hands which issued from the cabinet and occasionally grasped me. This assurance was greatly increased at the eleventh séance at 12.51-12.54 a.m., as at the moment that I felt the squeezes and grasps I could see both the medium's hands on the séance table; and especially so at 1 a.m., when I alone controlled, and not only saw both Eusapia's hands, but held them separately by her thumbs in both my hands, which I kept apart on the séance table; and subsequently at 1.3 a.m., when I held both her thumbs in my right hand, the foot control being verified by me at the time. I cannot do better than transcribe part of the stenographer's notes in order to give a succinct account of these phenomena.

## SÉANCE XI.

- „ 12.51 a.m. B. My left hand is squeezed several times.  
 „ B. Now I am grasped by the arm.  
 „ I can see both medium's hands on the table.  
 „ 12.54 a.m. B. I am continuously being touched.  
 „ I can always see medium's hands.  
 „ 1 a.m. B. This hand has again come out, and is playing  
 „ with me now.  
 „ B. I have got both her hands now.  
 „ B. Yes, it has touched me again.  
 „ It is an absolute proof to me that this hand  
 „ is not the hand of the medium. I have got  
 „ both her thumbs. I am holding her right  
 „ hand in my left hand, my right hand is on  
 „ the left side of the table holding her left.  
 „ B. This hand is still playing about with me.  
 „ F. B.'s left hand is lying on the corner of the  
 „ table, and a hand from inside the curtain plays  
 „ with it. B. is now holding the two thumbs  
 „ of the medium in his right hand visibly  
 „ to me.  
 „ 1.3 a.m. B. Oh, it is touching me again.  
 „ B. I have verified the foot control.

It will be noted that F., as well as myself, was able to see that at 1.3 a.m. I was holding the two thumbs of Eusapia in my right hand.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>I had ceased controlling, with my left hand, in order that the alleged spirit hand of my father should be better able to grasp it. Had I received a grasp in a certain manner it would have been to me a test of identity. The grasps that I received failed to give the required test.

It is inconceivable that Eusapia should have been able to squeeze my hand and grasp my arm in this manner with one of her feet, even if she had one free, for the squeezes and grasps were clearly those of a hand. Neither could she have lifted her foot to the height of my hand and arm without a contortion of her body, which would have been immediately seen, whereas she sat quietly on her chair in a natural position. I am therefore convinced that it was neither Eusapia's hand nor her foot that squeezed and grasped me, and as I am positive that it was not the hand nor foot of any one of the sitters, I am driven to the conclusion (preposterous though it appears to me) that the supernormal force, which had given me conclusive evidence of its existence through the phenomena previously described, was able to produce the effects of tangible matter and assume the form of a hand.<sup>1</sup> It is not, however, the above phenomena of touches and grasps that I would bring forward as crucial evidence for the existence of a supernormal force, as some of the test conditions which I have specified were lacking in these cases. I would rather depend on the phenomena which took place in light when the medium's hands were distinctly seen simultaneously with her whole body down to her feet.

I refer here only to phenomena which occurred while I was personally controlling. The reader will find in the Report others of equal evidential value, during the occurrence of which the same crucial test conditions prevailed, when F. and C. controlled.

I am compelled to accept as true the first part of the third hypothesis, "that some of the phenomena were genuine" (the second part I have already dealt with); it follows that the fourth hypothesis, "that some of the phenomena were genuine and the others not proved to be either genuine or fraudulent," is that which represents my attitude.

In previous investigations with other so-called physical mediums, I had formed the opinion that, as I had detected them resorting to fraud

<sup>1</sup>The conditions under which I felt grasps and touches on other occasions at these séances than those referred to above offered me also strong evidence that the touches and grasps were independent of the physical organism of Eusapia. The numerous touches on my back between 12.11 and 12.20 in Séance X. occurred under what were to me excellent test conditions, as at the very time that I was feeling them I was constantly passing my left hand all up her left arm to her shoulder and down her left leg to her foot, thus verifying that I had undoubted control of her left hand and foot with my right hand and foot, and that the touches were not produced by her head. F. had control of her right hand and foot. See my note to that séance.

in the majority of their phenomena, the other phenomena in which I did not detect fraud were presumably also fraudulent. As regards Eusapia's phenomena at these séances, my opinion is that, as some of the phenomena appear to me to be undoubtedly genuine, others in which I did not detect fraud were (considering the manner and strictness of the control and the amount of light in the séance room) also genuine. I do not maintain this of all the phenomena, as the chances of occasional mal-observation on our part, at such rare times as when darkness prevailed or when the controllers were changing their seats, cannot be excluded. At the same time I must repeat that Eusapia was not detected in fraud in any one of the 470 phenomena that took place at the eleven séances.

My general opinion of these phenomena is that they were due to some supernormal force resident in the organism of Eusapia, though some few of them would appear to point to the action of an independent energy.

Whatever explanation is advanced can only be a theoretical one. It is not theories that are required at this stage of the investigation of this medium, (who so far has only been examined by one English and a few foreign eminent men of science), but the recognition by the scientific world at large of the occurrence of supernormal phenomena. It is greatly to be regretted, in view of the reports of the eminent scientific men just referred to, that British men of science do not take the opportunity of an investigation into Eusapia Palladino's mediumship,—an opportunity which, if not taken soon, may, in nature's course, be lost for ever.

W. W. B., 6th March, 1909.

#### FINAL NOTE BY E. FEILDING.

I have but little to add to the notes of my colleagues and to the Report, the length of which must have exhausted the attention of the most earnest student of the subject with which it deals. I propose to allow myself only a few words as to the character of the Report itself.

In preparing it for press I have speculated much as to what measure of success we have attained towards achieving the modest object we have had in view, namely, to present to readers who have never assisted at séances of the kind described

a complete record of the conditions which prevailed, and an accurate account of the occurrences, so that they might themselves come to a conclusion as to whether these occurrences were due to conjuring, or to a display of telekinetic force. Our intention at the outset was not to obtrude our own views, but to let the facts speak for themselves.

In both of these respects our intention has been largely modified in practice. There is no question but that the shorthand reports give in most cases an inadequate account of the proceedings by constantly understating the number of the phenomena and insufficiently recording the adequacy of the control which prevailed, with the result that a critical reader, loth to accept the hypothesis of a supernormal agency having been at work, will find the proportion of phenomena which he is able to dismiss as inconclusive, by reason of the omission from the report of some important detail, far larger than we ourselves, from our contemporary observation, could so dismiss.

It was perhaps because we so often found, when reading the reports through the day after the séance, that we had fallen thus far short of our ideal in the way of reporting, and had, in a sense, done the phenomena an injustice, that we were forced from our proposed colourless attitude into one of almost proselytizing affirmation. The result is that the Report is far more positive in its conclusions and dominated by a far more personal note than, for example, the admirably balanced report recently issued by the *Institut Général Psychologique* of Paris, a report which, though dealing with experiments lasting through three years and marked by more remarkable incidents than any in our own experience, is nevertheless drawn up with such a wealth of scientific caution and reserve as almost to leave a reader in doubt as to the character of its own conclusions.

It has constantly, and in my opinion most absurdly, been said that no one is so easy to deceive as a man of science. I think it would be nearer the mark to say that if in fact there be such a thing as a supernormal physical force, no one is so easily converted to a belief in it as a conjuror. The *savant*, steeped in his experience of the normal forces of nature, is constitutionally averse from the conception of an apparently *bizarre* departure from them. Aware of his own lack of know-

ledge of the possibilities of mere *legerdemain*, he naturally prefers to suspect himself of having been the sport of some undiscovered form of deception rather than to remodel his philosophy. The conjuror, on the other hand, has the experience, not only of the possibilities, but also of the limitations of his own art, and having no particular philosophy beyond that of an ordinary layman regarding the forces of nature, has no special difficulty in remodelling it, if necessary, when confronted with a series of events which he knows his art is incapable of explaining.

My colleagues, then, having come to the deliberate opinion that a large proportion of the manifestations of which we were the witnesses in Naples were clearly beyond the possibilities of any conceivable form of conjuring, entertain no difficulty in saying so in precise terms, and so far as my own position as a layman entitles me to it, I associate myself entirely with their conclusions without apology for our seeming lack of scientific caution.

I permit myself to finish with a quotation from a paper which I read before the Society when introducing to it the subject of this Report.

“While I have convinced myself of the reality of these phenomena and of the existence of some force not yet generally recognised which is able to impress itself on matter, and to simulate or create the appearance of matter, I refrain for the present from speculating upon its nature. Yet it is just in this speculation that the whole interest of the subject lies. The force, if we are driven, as I am confident we are, to presuppose one other than mere conjuring, must either reside in the medium herself and be of the nature of an extension of human faculty beyond what is generally recognised; or must be a force having its origin in something apparently intelligent and external to her, operating either directly from itself, or indirectly through or in conjunction with some special attribute of her organism. The phenomena then,—in themselves preposterous, futile, and lacking in any quality of the smallest ethical, religious, or spiritual value,—are nevertheless symptomatic of something which, put at its lowest by choosing the first hypothesis, must, as it filters gradually into our common knowledge, most profoundly modify the whole of our philosophy of human faculty; but which, if that hypothesis is found

insufficient, *may* ultimately be judged to require an interpretation involving not only that modification, but a still wider one, namely, our knowledge of the relations between mankind and an intelligent sphere external to it. Although one may approach the investigation of the phenomena themselves in a light, shall I say, even a flippant spirit,—(I sometimes think that in this way alone one can preserve one's mental balance in dealing with this kind of subject),—one must regard them as the playthings of the agency which they reveal, and the more perfect revelation of that agency, whatever it may be, through the study of them, is surely a task as worthy of the most earnest consideration as any problem with which modern science is concerned. If our report, by reason of its form and detail, is found to do something towards supplying a further evidential basis for, and therefore directing the attention of men of science in this country towards, the far more important and elaborate published investigations of many of our more eminent predecessors, and of inducing them to take a part in the research, I shall feel that it has amply served its purpose."

## SUPPLEMENT.

M. COURTIER'S REPORT ON THE EXPERIMENTS WITH EUSAPIA PALLADINO AT THE PARIS "INSTITUT GÉNÉRAL PSYCHOLOGIQUE" AND SOME COMMENTS THEREON.<sup>1</sup>

BY COUNT PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO.

THIS long expected, very interesting and copiously illustrated Report embodies the results of forty-three sittings in all: thirteen in 1905, sixteen in 1906 and fourteen in 1907-1908. Prior to the first series Messrs. Courtier ("Chef des services du Secrétariat général" of the Institute) and Youriévitich (Secretary General) had in May, 1905, attended eight séances with Eusapia Palladino in Naples, which says M. Courtier, "are among the strongest we have ever had" (p. 418). Immediately afterwards, a "General plan of research" was drawn up by the two investigators. It embraced "observation, control and registering of the phenomena," "physical researches" and "psycho-physiological researches." It was in fact a very exhaustive programme, and the investigators have honestly endeavoured to carry it out in every particular, whether with uniform success is another question.

The Parisian séances (held partly at M. Courtier's, in 1905, partly in the library of the Institute, and finally in M. Youriévitich's house) were attended by many persons of scientific eminence; some names will be given below. The general conditions of the sittings were the usual "Eusapian" conditions, which are too well known (it may be supposed) to readers of the *Proceedings* to need repetition—a special feature being, however, the use of self-registering instruments of various descriptions, these instruments being placed in an adjoining room and communicated with by means of electric leads and air-tubes passing through the wall.

<sup>1</sup> *Bulletin de l'Institut Général Psychologique*, No. 5-6 (Novembre-Décembre, 1908).

At all the sittings held in Paris a stenographer was present who noted down every word said by the sitters and by the medium. Other appliances were also used to make the record of the investigation as complete as possible.

In the course of the experiments different systems of light were employed, the most perfect being as follows: a group of six electric lamps was placed in a wooden reflector closed below; it was then raised to about thirty centimetres from the ceiling; the room was therefore lit up with reflected light, whose intensity could be modified at will. At another series of sittings a gas-burner surrounded with movable wooden shutters was in use, and at another still an oil-lamp, placed in another room.

After these preliminary details the Report proceeds (Part I.) to the phenomena themselves, every class of them being illustrated with excerpts from the original stenographic records.

It first cites instances of blows, and scratchings on or in the table, and remarks that these different sounds generally occurred in imitation of corresponding movements made by Eusapia and sometimes by the sitters. Exact localisation of sounds is admittedly very difficult; but it must be remarked that in some cases simultaneously with the noises the table was felt to vibrate under the sitter's hands (pp. 434-436).

Then come movements and tiltings of the table; then full levitations of the same. This last category is the most important. In many instances the conditions under which the levitations occurred seem to have been very good, and one need not wonder that this particular phenomenon has apparently dealt a serious blow to the scepticism of such a *savant* as M. d'Arsonval, not to mention M. Courtier himself, and others. I will give a few instances:

“(1905-IV-3.) Eusapia serre ses poings et les tend vers la table; elle remet ses mains sur la table, puis les lève. La table se soulève des quatre pieds. L'appareil enregistreur a indiqué le soulèvement de la table. M. d'Arsonval et M. Yourievitch (qui contrôlent à gauche et à droite) déclarent que les pieds et les genoux d'Eusapia n'ont pas bougé” (p. 437).

“(1905-X-4-5) 9 h. 58. La table est soulevée des quatre pieds à environ 30 centimètres du sol et elle reste en l'air sept secondes. Eusapia n'avait qu'une main sur la table; la bougie placée sous la table permettait le contrôle des genoux qui n'ont pas bougé.”

“10 h. La table est soulevée des quatre pieds à une hauteur d'environ 25 centimètres et reste en l'air quatre secondes, M. Curie

touchant seul la table, la main d'Eusapia étant sur la sienne. Eusapia a geint et a paru faire un grand effort. Le controle était excellent grâce à la bougie placée sous la table" (pp. 437-438).

"(1906-IV-3). La table se lève de deux, puis des quatre pieds; une main d'Eusapia est au-dessus de la table et son autre main sur la main de M. Curie. Les pieds d'Eusapia sont attachés aux pieds de la chaise sur laquelle elle est assise. Contrôleurs à gauche M. Curie, à droite M. Fielding [Feilding]" (p. 438).

Another time the table is levitated when an additional weight of ten kilogrammes has been placed upon it. Messrs. Ballet and d'Arsonval were controlling "absolutely" Eusapia's feet and knees (besides the hands). The table was also once levitated, no one (apparently) touching it and one of the sitters holding the medium's feet under it. Levitations were also obtained when two of the table-legs (those nearest the medium) were protected with wooden covers ("jambières") joined by a cross-bar above the medium's knees (pp. 438, 445).

These levitations were registered in a manner which left no doubt whatever as to their objective character. Each leg separately had been provided with a contact key which completed an electric circuit *when the leg was off the ground*. Each of these circuits operated a Desprez indicator writing on a revolving drum. If then any leg experienced a pressure from below—either from the floor or from the medium's foot—the corresponding index would not work. So when all four scribes worked together it was certain that the legs were really off the ground and not otherwise supported by or resting on anything else.

The investigators also tried to ascertain what became of the natural weight of the table during these "levitations." It was finally proved that in each and every case everything took place "*as if the fulcrum of the force were in the subject himself*"—and therefore in perfect accordance with orthodox mechanics (p. 441). This, says the Report, is one of the most important results arrived at during the sittings (p. 441).

Apparent decrease in Eusapia's weight was also observed and automatically registered, she being seated upon a chair placed on a "Marey balance," and under control. Alteration of weight even to a considerable extent was also proved in the case of a small table when moved and raised into the air seemingly without contact.

A small table with a movable upper surface being placed upon the séance-table and Eusapia having brought her head close to it, the

surface was twice lifted up. The second time Madame Curie held her hand between the small table and the medium's head (p. 447).

The Report next mentions briefly movements and bulgings of the curtain and of the medium's dress (the latter circumstance greatly impressed M. Curie); then various cases of movements of objects in the cabinet. A notable instance was the bringing upon the séance-table of a basin full of clay weighing seven kilogrammes. Some objects were broken, for instance, a wooden lath and an India-rubber tube (pp. 447-471).

The peregrinations of another small wooden table ("guéridon") (also graphically registered through a specially devised apparatus) deserve more attention from the evidential point of view. Here is one good instance:

"(1906-IV-10). "Le guéridon placé à la gauche d'Eusapia, à 50 centimètres environ de sa chaise, est complètement soulevé alors que les pieds d'Eusapia sont attachés aux pieds de sa chaise par des lacets et que ses poignets sont attachés aux poignets des contrôleurs. Arrivé dans son ascension à la hauteur des épaules de M. Curie il est retourné les pieds en l'air, puis posé plateau contre plateau sur la table. Le mouvement n'a pas été rapide, mais comme attentivement guidé" (pp. 472-473).

Apparent alterations of weight were also observed with this "guéridon."

With such "phenomena" as "touches" and the appearance of hands and "black limbs," "*comme des silhouettes d'ombres chinoises*" (pp. 473-475, 478, 479) the Report deals very briefly. An instance is given of a touch through the curtain at a considerable height above the medium's head and two cases of apparently simultaneous touches.

The Report then describes various luminous phenomena witnessed. Bluish and phosphorescent lights were observed to appear on Eusapia's forehead and also on the curtain. When Eusapia was lying in the cabinet upon a "chaise longue" to which she had been tied from head to foot, M. Courtier, who sat inside the cabinet, observed on two different occasions cloudy lights, "as if phosphorescent or white," wandering over the medium's body. They were also noticed at the opening of the curtain by the other sitters.

Sparks and luminous points above the medium's head are also recorded. The most interesting episode is described as follows:

"(1907-X-10-12). . . Eusapia demande qu'on aille chercher la machine électrique et que l'on en tire trois étincelles. M. Courtier

va dans la pièce voisine prendre la machine électrique et se plaçant en face d'Eusapia, environ à 2 mètres, en tire trois étincelles. On voit successivement à la hauteur de la tête d'Eusapia trois petits points lumineux imitant les étincelles électriques et l'on entend en même temps le petit bruit sec de l'étincelle électrique. A la seconde expérience ces points lumineux sont beaucoup plus faibles, et le bruit se produit quelques instants après leur apparition au lieu d'être simultané" (p. 477).

M. Branly, in the course of the discussion of M. Courtier's report, referred to this incident as "one of the most curious experiments I have seen" (p. 558).

Part II. of the Report is devoted to a very short biography of the medium and to various psycho-physiological and purely physiological researches to which she was subjected. Here are the two points most worthy of attention: though some incidents during the sittings seemed to point to another conclusion (p. 487), special experiments made on her (supposed) sensibility at a distance gave negative results (p. 482), and in the course of some experiments on her dynamometric strength it was ascertained that its fall was invariably instantaneous, thus reminding one of the fall of the table after a "levitation" (p. 483).

A few pages devoted to "Eusapia en séance" (pp. 484-490) are particularly interesting. She seems to be in a genuine "secondary state" during the sittings. The level of her hypnosis appears, however, to be most variable. The hyperaesthesia to which her hands are subject will sometimes persist long after a sitting. She seems to remember the incidents of a séance up to a certain point only and then amnesia apparently sets in.

She maintains that the phenomena are produced by "*la densità della volontà di medio*" and sometimes asks the sitters to concentrate their will on a certain phenomenon. The movements and levitations of objects are accompanied on her part by strong muscular contractions. Eusapia's own *ideation* seems to have a considerable influence on the things which happen at the sittings. A friendly attitude of the sitters is apparently a very important condition for the success of the experiments.

The Report deals next with the "investigation of the physical environment in the subject's proximity" (pp. 505-514).

The investigators tried to ascertain Eusapia's possible action on physical instruments. The experiments made dealt chiefly with mechanical force, heat, electricity and magnetism.

Eusapia having been placed in front of a lever-balance and, under control, the index marks first one kilogramme-and-a-half, then three, seven and ten. Part of her skirt was at her request placed on the edge of the base of the balance.

Different experiments were made on the movement in good light and without contact of various small weighing balances. The experiment succeeded several times without any imposture—such as the use of a hair or thread—being detected. It is, however, particularly noteworthy that after one such instrument (a balance for weighing cocoons) had been covered with lamp-black (so as to reveal the trace of *any* contact) the medium was unable to affect this “pèse-cocon” any more. (On this point see also further on.)

A glass was made to vibrate in full light, giving off “strong sonorous waves,” then fell down on the table and broke.

Observations made by three of the investigators tended to show that the medium could discharge an electroscope without contact. In other circumstances, however, electroscopes remained unaffected.

Experiments made to ascertain whether Eusapia’s muscular efforts were accompanied by abnormal thermal or magnetic phenomena led to negative results, and chemical examination of the atmosphere in the medium’s proximity during the séances revealed nothing abnormal.

I pass on to the most attractive part of the Report—that entitled “Critical Considerations” (pp. 514-546).

The attitude of men of science towards the problems in question has undergone, says M. Courtier, a serious change. They have ceased to look with contempt on those researches. On the contrary, they regard them with serious and keen curiosity. But they have banished from them the supernatural element and wish to investigate with rigorous experimental methods. The time is not far away when the same point of view will prevail in the public mind.

Before everything else—and in particular before the building up of new hypotheses—it is, however, necessary to examine how far the phenomena themselves may be considered authentic and the conditions of control and observation adequate.

From this point of view many circumstances are unsatisfactory. The light is generally poor, and is usually diminished gradually as the séance is in progress,—which gives rise to new and various sources of error. Moreover, the greater the darkness,—the more the medium as a general rule complains of cutaneous hyperaesthesia and throws difficulties in the way of controlling. On this point the Report says :

“En ce qui concerne les mains d'Eusapia le contrôle n'est pleinement satisfaisant que si l'on en serre le pouce et si la main ainsi tenue repose sur le plateau de la table en bonne lumière. Mais souvent Eusapia place ses mains sur ses cuisses et le contrôle devient déjà moins satisfaisant, puisque ses mains cessent d'être entièrement visibles. . . . Lorsqu'on ne tient plus le pouce il est difficile dans une obscurité relative de savoir nettement si l'on touche la main droite ou la main gauche. Mais que dire du contrôle quand Eusapia se plaignant d'hyperesthésie cutanée POSE SA MAIN SUR LA VÔTRE, en l'appuyant plus ou moins fortement? . . . Pis encore est le contrôle lorsque Eusapia ne fait plus que toucher légèrement la main du contrôleur qu'elle tapote” (p. 517).

Besides the hand the medium's neighbour has to look after her knee and her foot. When his foot is upon the medium's and his leg against hers the conditions of control may be considered sufficient. But it often happens that Eusapia herself insists on being allowed to put *her* foot upon the controller's:

“La surveillance est alors si précaire qu'un observateur demanda un jour à défaire sa bottine pour mieux sentir le contact du pied d'Eusapia” (p. 518).

She also objects—as a general rule at least—to certain “tests” being applied to her, which, though very effective, could not have caused her any inconvenience—and this on pretences which are obviously inadequate.

Since controlling the phenomena is one thing and observing another, it would be preferable to have during the sittings some one standing close to Eusapia without either holding her or taking part in the “chain”—merely for purposes of observation. To this, however, she decidedly objects in most cases.<sup>1</sup>

The result is that the controllers are in a perpetual state of *division of attention*. Observation is, moreover, the more difficult as the “phenomena” occur now in one place, now in another, generally in an “instantaneous and fugitive fashion.” If a phenomenon has long been expected attention becomes worn out and sometimes slackens in spite of energetic efforts.

In addition to this cause of *distraction* the sitters generally talk during the séance, and are often expressly invited by raps to start a general conversation. This naturally leads to their attention becoming divided.

<sup>1</sup>For an apparent exception, see *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, No. 10, 1907, pp. 683, 687, 691, 692, 703.

Then there is *suggestibility* to beware of;—one must be careful not to affirm more than what was really perceived (with this point S.P.R. members are of course particularly familiar). The elements of *emotion* and excitement may also come into play now and then, and vitiate observation and judgment most seriously.

“Combien on est loin des patientes expérimentations de laboratoire où les conditions des phénomènes sont réglées et calculées à l’avance, où l’on n’observe qu’un seul fait à la fois, dans un état d’attention tranquille et silencieuse!” (p. 520).

The report next deals with Eusapia’s “supercherries” (pp. 521-540). These are unfortunately very numerous. At one time, having failed with the *pèse-cocon*, after it had been covered with lamp-black (as described above) she moves the leaf of a gum-tree up and down by the aid of a hair. Another time she moves the scale of the aforesaid “*pèse-cocon*” in the same way.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>I am not aware when hairs and threads were first found to play so objectionable a part in E. P.’s performances, but similar observations appear to have been very often made. So often indeed that some six years ago an ingenious hypothesis was started according to which these supposed hairs or threads were merely harmless “fluidic filaments” (*Revue des Etudes Psychiques*, March, 1903, pp. 86-97). Quite recently such a hypothesis has been sanctioned by no less an authority than Dr. Ochorowicz himself. In *Annales des Sciences Psychiques* for the current year has appeared a series of articles by him, giving an account of some experiments with a young Polish lady called Stanislaw Tomczyk. Among other things this mediumistically gifted young person would now and then “levitate” various small objects—which “levitations” were in some cases photographed. A book-shaped calendar being thus privileged (the medium holding her hands to the right and left of it), Dr. Ochorowicz noticed at a certain moment “quite distinctly” “a black thread, not a very thick one, going from one of the medium’s hands to the other; its right end, not being stretched out, was hanging down under the medium’s right hand in the shape of an irregular spiral.” At the same moment the medium began to bring her hands down on the table, the calendar fell flat—and no thread could be detected (*Annales*, March, 1909, p. 68). Subsequently examination of a photograph showing an arrow “levitated” revealed “on the forefinger of the medium’s left hand a small line not corresponding to the natural fold of the phalanx” which might be due to a tightened hair or thread pressing against the skin; moreover, two of the fingers were suspiciously joined together as if retaining the end of the thread (*Annales*, April, p. 100). Dr. Ochorowicz thinks, however, that the thread in question was a “materialised” one (*ibid.* footnote), and he sums up his “general impressions” as follows:

“It is possible medianically to create between the medium’s hands a kind of thread presenting during a few minutes a certain consistency which decreases and disappears when his hands have been moved asunder. This thread created by the medium’s unconscious imagination seems to present a

In the course of an experiment with a manometric apparatus, invented by M. Courtier, a little nail (which might well serve its purpose) is found where no nail should have been,—that is, drops (apparently) from Eusapia's left hand.

Substitution of the medium's hands was once very clearly noticed at a sitting outside the Institute by M. Courtier. It would seem that at this same séance the medium managed to liberate herself from *both* her neighbours for a moment (p. 525).

In the course of the séances some photographs were taken. The medium, however, objected to their being taken unexpectedly, on the ground that this might injure her: and this injunction was departed from in one case only when a partial levitation of the table occurred in full darkness. The photograph this time revealed nothing particular, one way or the other. Some other photographs are, however, distinctly unfavourable to the medium's claims. They were taken when the "guéridon" was being carried out of the cabinet: they show it in an exactly similar position three times in succession, and it is obvious that it is supported by the medium's head. It is important to note that after Eusapia had seen the most significant of the photographs in question, this small table was never again moved out of the cabinet, though this had constantly occurred before.

A little strip of cloth which was found one day on the floor of the séance-room, was ascertained from details of internal construction to correspond pretty closely (though, it is true, not completely) to the "spirits' veil," whose presence in impressions of "materialised hands" on clay and putty had been often noticed before. "Nous l'enroulâmes sur nos doigts. Nous tenions un secret des empreintes" (p. 538).

case of OBJECTIVE MATERIAL IDEOPLASTY: a vivid desire to lift a small object at a distance brings by association the idea of a thread which would answer the purpose. This idea realises itself in a monoideic moment. In ordinary life the *sight* of a thread, that is certain vibrations of the ether, raise the *idea* of a thread; here by virtue of the law of reversibility the contrary happens; the *idea* of a thread leads up to the sight, the objective ghost of a thread, that is to certain vibrations of the ether. . . . Is it a thing created from nothing? Is it the etheric body of a real thread? Is it idea materialised—and with what matter? Ether particles? Atoms of the medium's body? Of her dress? It is a mystery" (*Annales*, March 1909, pp. 69-70).

It is sad to think that with such boundless horizons opening before their eyes most people will doubtless wickedly prefer the most prosaic explanation of the incident!

I pass over some other points of secondary or not decisive importance.

It is of course quite possible (says the Report) that Eusapia's powers are now on the wane. M. Courtier himself noticed from year to year a gradual weakening of her powers. Professional mediums would do wisely if they gave up their trade at a certain age, but as most of them are poor and are not used to any other, they must needs persevere.

The Report then goes on to consider whether certain occurrences do not after all present in themselves "some internal proof of authenticity or fraud" (pp. 540-544). A table weighing 7 kilogrammes by itself, and with an additional weight of 10 kilogrammes, was in 1905 twice raised off the ground for several seconds. At another sitting, in the same year, it was levitated again, when the legs nearest the medium were protected with wooden sheaths. Messrs. Courtier and Youriévitich tried to imitate this phenomenon now with one hand, now with both, now with the hands and feet, now with the feet and knees only. Some measure of success was obtained, but the conditions at the sittings were different, the stenographic record showing that when the levitation occurred, the medium's feet and knees were "absolutely under control" and there was no contact with the legs of the table; apart from this, the latter remained in the air a good many seconds. Moreover, Messrs. Courtier and Youriévitich are much stronger physically than Eusapia. Then certain levitations which took place at the end of the séances and with everybody standing up, have also to be accounted for. Some reached as much as one metre, the medium's hands and feet being "rigorously" controlled.

Some of the movements made by the "guéridon" also deserve attention. Sometimes, when placed at the medium's left, about one metre from her, it moved either towards her or away, in accordance with Eusapia's gestures. In the former case we cannot perhaps exclude altogether the possible action of a thread: but how about the other kind of movement? A rod could not have been used without detection.

At the sitting of April 6, 1906, Eusapia had—as already mentioned—allowed her feet to be attached to the legs of her chair with strings. Her wrists had also been tied to those of Messrs. Curie and Feilding. Under these conditions M. Courtier, who was seated some distance behind M. Curie, distinctly saw the "guéridon" rise from the ground and could detect no hand touching it. The

little table then went up as high as M. Curie's shoulders, was turned upside down and then gently placed in this position upon the central table. None of the four investigators (M. Youriévitich besides those mentioned) under whose eyes the "phenomenon" took place could detect any suspicious movement on the medium's part (p. 543).

"Des faits aussi nets donnent matière à réfléchir," remarks the Report *à propos* of this and similar incidents.

On the other hand, it notes the suspicious character of the touches, of the movements of various objects in the cabinet and of the appearances of hands. It thinks that the sparks may have been due to "peculiar electrification of Eusapia's body discharging itself in the proximity of the other bodies."

These are the general conclusions arrived at:

"(1) Les déplacements (avancements ou reculs) et les soulèvements (partiels ou complets) de certains objets pesants (tables, guéridons) au voisinage d'Eusapia pendant les séances sont prouvés par des enregistrements.

"(2) Certains de ces mouvements semblent se produire au simple contact des mains ou des vêtements du sujet et même sans contact.

"Pendant les soulèvements complets de la table devant laquelle il est assis ou des guéridons placés à proximité de son corps, le sujet contracte la plupart du temps puissamment ses muscles. Mais on n'a pas constaté une action directe de ses efforts sur les objets ainsi soulevés, semblable à celle qu'exerceraient en pareil cas les autres hommes, c'est à dire qu'on n'a pas vu le sujet faire levier sur ces objets.

"(3) Le point d'appui de la force qui soulève de diverses manières ces objets paraît résider sur le sujet lui-même, puisque les balances sur lesquelles on l'a placé ont marqué des augmentations ou des diminutions de pression conformes aux lois de la mécanique pendant les soulèvements.

"(4) Il semble que le sujet décharge à distance les électroscopes.

"(5) Il semble qu'il produit à distance dans les objets des vibrations moléculaires (coups frappés, vibrations sonores).

"(6) On constate dans son voisinage au cours des séances des phénomènes lumineux dont les causes restent à déterminer. Certains de ces phénomènes ont présenté l'apparence d'étincelles électriques.

"(7) Signalons aussi la vision de formes d'apparence humaine et les sensations de contact éprouvées par les assistants, en rappelant que la fraude a été constatée pour quelques manifestations de ce genre.

“(8) Eusapia au cours de certaines séances entre dans un état second à niveau variable. Elle accuse de l’hyperesthésie cutanée pendant un grande partie des séances et plus ou moins longtemps après. Elle accuse une amnésie partielle des phénomènes des séances.

“(9) L’idéation et la volonté du sujet ont une action sur la nature et la marche des phénomènes.

“(10) Les assistants sont en butte à des supercheries dont il est difficile de limiter exactement l’étendue” (pp. 544-545).

The Report winds up with an eloquent appeal to other possible subjects to come before the experimenters and submit their powers to investigation. No *à priori* conditions will be imposed upon them. “We shall seek to discover in the facts, such as they present themselves to us during the experiments, the antecedents necessary for their production.”

These conclusions were discussed by the “Section des recherches psychiques et psychologiques” of the Institute on November 30th, 1908; there being present Messrs. d’Arsonval (in the chair), Branly, Courtier, Favre, Comte A. de Gramont, Matisse, Maxwell, de Varigny, de Watteville, Vaugeois, and Youriévitich. The details of the discussion (a most interesting one) are given, pp. 547-578.

So far as one can judge, some of the investigators (among them M. d’Arsonval) undoubtedly incline to believe in the genuineness of a few phenomena, chiefly the table-levitations and the movements of the “guéridon,” whilst remaining sceptical otherwise.

I will not analyse this discussion here, one point excepted, to which I will return presently.



So much for M. Courtier’s report on a most scientific series of experiments carried out by a most eminent company.

To many it will probably appear that it might have been more affirmative. And it is certainly a matter of regret that after forty-three séances extending over three years and some 25,000 francs spent, no more categorical pronouncement has been deemed possible. As just mentioned, *some* of the phenomena have favourably impressed *some* of the experimenters; but nothing more. As stated by M. d’Arsonval himself (p. 563)—“nous n’avons pas de certitudes.”

Surely this is a pity. And in view of the importance of the effort made, more might have been expected.

But on the other hand, if we take into account the extraordinary difficulties inherent to such an investigation; the *à priori* improbability of some of the phenomena; the evasive and fugitive character of all of them; the numerous frauds discovered; the unsatisfactory character of the conditions at the sittings for adequate investigation, etc., etc., etc.—the extreme cautiousness of the conclusions of the Report becomes intelligible, and M. Courtier's remarks on the subject deserve our approval (p. 546).

If I may be allowed an innocent joke, Eusapia's "spirit-guide" is primarily responsible for such a state of things. Let him improve his methods first,—and then we shall see. It may not, however, follow that the method of the investigators themselves left nothing to be desired.

Conscious as I am of my extreme audacity when it comes to criticising the *modus procedendi* of so distinguished a body, I will still ask: What was the aim of the experiments? Was the *authenticity* or the *objectivity* of Eusapia's phenomena the subject of the investigation?

If the *objectivity*, then—at first sight at least—the aim was brilliantly attained. For the very numerous experiments made with the aid of various scientific apparatus made it absolutely certain that the movements and "levitations" of tables, great and small, and some other things were most undoubtedly objective.

This is something. But it is not all: and the main question is, I submit, not whether the "phenomena" *did* occur, but *what* produced them.

Here the question assumes a different aspect. For we are told again and again in the Report that all this scientific registering "left the question of the genuineness of the phenomena themselves entirely untouched" (p. 445; see also p. 553). This was indeed obvious already; but these repeated assertions are characteristic. To give an instance: when at the sitting of June 12th, 1905, the "guéridon" was repeatedly moved backwards and forwards, these movements were registered by an ingenious mechanism and corresponding traces obtained. This is very satisfactory, of course; but the Report is careful to point out that "ces tracés n'indiquent pas, bien entendu, de quelle manière ont été effectués les mouvements successifs du meuble" (p. 472). I confess it seems to me that, if so, the experiment loses almost all its value. For the question to be answered was: "*What* moved the 'guéridon'?" The answer is: "It really *did* move." Now this is no explanation

at all. And this sort of thing occurs again and again and to my mind is very unsatisfactory.<sup>1</sup>

On the other hand, the all-important question as to what among the phenomena observed *could* and what *could not* have been duplicated by conjuring has received on the investigators' part comparatively little attention, if we except some valuable experiments by Messrs. Courtier and Youriévitich on artificial levitations of tables (pp. 540-542). The Report says (p. 539) that application was made in 1907 to two professional conjurers, but nothing came of it, one being absent from Paris and the other too busy; and it does not seem the attempt was renewed. I should have thought it was very well worth renewing.

<sup>1</sup>Other experiments conducted with Eusapia by scientific men seem to me to be open to the same objection to a still greater extent. Take, for instance, the experiments of Prof. Bottazzi, published in *Annales des Sciences Psychiques*, 1907, No. 8-11. Here also we have most ingenious appliances for the graphic self-registering of the phenomena, both "direct" and "indirect" (see No. 8, pp. 560-568 and *passim*). So far, so good; but when it comes to ascertaining the precise *nature* of the phenomena—their authenticity or otherwise—it is altogether another matter. In the very great majority of cases no details at all are given as to the way in which the medium was controlled. So-and-so "was in contact" with her—this is an expression very often used; but as to *how* this "contact" was realised—whether E. P. allowed her hands to be *held* or not, etc.—on these all-important points, on which, as a matter of fact, the whole question has been turning for many years, the report is extraordinarily reticent. Such an attitude on the part of a man of science is not easily intelligible. Cf. also No. 11, p. 766, text and footnote, where the whole problem of the tricks played by Eusapia's hands and of their possible bearing on the nature of the phenomena is dismissed in seven lines and a half, it being asserted that "unconscious trickery consists simply (!) in the fact that as the mediumistic phenomena depend immediately on the psychical and physiological organism of the medium, sometimes it is the natural limb which, instead of the mediumistic limb, endeavours to execute the movement, to produce the phenomenon. And it seems as if this exchange were noticed by the medium herself, for she often says: 'I have touched it myself, I have moved it myself'—when speaking of the object touched or moved."

Impartiality compels me, however, to say that among the episodes of these séances there is one (occurring three times in succession) similar to those to which I have repeatedly called attention in the case of D. D. Home (*Proceedings*, Part LV., page 401, Part LVI., pp. 441, 445): that is—the gradual melting away of the "spirit hand" when grasped (No. 11., pp. 760-761). As to whether such a circumstance tends to enhance Eusapia's reputation or to detract something from Home's, opinions will probably differ. There are also other incidents which seem *prima facie* remarkable, but against these must be set not only the remarks I have made but also the general tone of this report, which strikes me as being somewhat too lyrical.

In the course of the discussion of the Report's conclusions we find M. Courtier saying :

“Nous avons causé aujourd'hui même avec des prestidigitateurs. Ils nous ont dit qu'ils faisaient soulever des tables des quatre pieds sans contact apparent. Est-ce avec l'aide de compères ou autrement ? Ils ne nous l'ont pas révélé” (p. 567).

Surely this is not a very encouraging *postscript* to all the detailed accounts of what was thought the most conclusive of Eusapia's performances. Could not and ought not much more to have been done in this direction ?

Note also that all the imposing scientific machinery used on the one hand did not prevent the learned investigators from adhering on the other to methods of control which they admit themselves (pp. 517-518) to be altogether inadequate. I refer chiefly to the method of controlling Eusapia's hands. All the history of the experiments conducted with her since 1892 abundantly shows that for scientific purposes the method at present in use is valueless. With a medium who, like the late Sambor, allowed his hands to be constantly grasped in the strict sense of the word, the conviction of two separate persons that they were holding two separate hands might have been sufficient for establishing the genuineness of the “phenomena.” With Eusapia Palladino, in view of the numberless frauds practised and of the very unsatisfactory way in which her hands are “held,” we want something else. Otherwise investigation of the phenomena becomes a mere waste of time.

I am well aware that (as stated in the Report) Eusapia will object to certain methods of control, as a general rule ; and yet this same report shows that at times she will give in (pp. 472, 518) and that positive results may yet be obtained. Why, I ask, were not such exceptions generalised ? Would Eusapia's reluctance have been really insuperable ? Could not certain inducements have been used which she would not have withstood ?

Should mediums in the future always refuse to submit to such methods of control as allowing both hands to be grasped by *one person* ; or luminous strips to be pinned to their sleeves so as to make them visible to all ; or their hands to be divided (on the table) by some kind of partition (so that one could not do duty for two)—not to mention possible tying or electrical “tests,” etc.—a presumption against the authenticity of the “manifestations” would *à la longue* be established which would finally outweigh all the positive evidence we possess.

Why, I ask, was not a decisive step made in this direction during the Paris experiments?

There are also other important omissions: for instance, it does not appear whether the medium was ever searched, whether before or after the séance. Surely this ought to have been done in most cases at least.

Then another remark. I suppose excerpts from the original stenographic records are given not only for the sake of "illustrating" such or such a "class" of phenomena, but also in order to enable the reader to appreciate the evidential character of certain occurrences. If so, I think these excerpts strangely incomplete—at least in some instances. Here is a sample. At the sitting of June 10th, 1907, Eusapia tries to lift up ("supernormally") the (movable) surface of a small table which had been placed on the séance-table. The record says: (p. 447)

"Elle approche sa tête de la petite table et le plateau de la table se soulève.

"Mme. Curie.—Elle a maintenant un souffle très net sur la tête.

"Mme. Curie debout à côté de M. Youriévitich, met sa main sur le front d'Eusapia qui approche sa tête de la petite table. Le plateau mobile est soulevé, la main de Mme. Curie se trouvant entre cette table et la tête d'Eusapia.

"(Contrôleurs: à gauche M. Youriévitich, à droite, M. Debiérne.)"

This episode may or may not have seemed conclusive to the eye-witnesses, but the reader is left in the dark as to the most essential details. Nothing is said either about the amount of light, or the position of Eusapia's hands, or about the "curtain"—whether it was partly upon the table (and perhaps covering the medium's hands) or otherwise. Many more such instances could be adduced.

I will now revert to the discussion of M. Courtier's Report by the "Section des recherches psychiques et psychologiques," and will dwell on some very instructive remarks of M. Favre's (pp. 572-574).

*A propos* of some suggestions made as to the *modus procedendi* to be adopted in future experiments with Eusapia, M. Favre insisted on the desirability of investigating "constantly or as much as possible" in full light; and formulated four hypotheses as to the reasons why light should (supposedly) interfere with the phenomena:

*First hypothesis.*—Some think that the medium objects to full light because he is a mere fraud and because the light will reveal his tricks. "If this hypothesis is the true, the only true one, one cannot hope to succeed in operating in full light."

*Second hypothesis.*—Others think that light does really hinder the production of the phenomena by acting more or less directly on the form of energy at work. Those who hold to this theory are needs bound to experiment in attenuated light.

Both suppositions are discouraging; but others may be imagined which, if true, would enable us to modify the experiments and finally to achieve success with the condition of full light realised.

*Third hypothesis.*—Light interferes neither with the medium's tricks, nor with the energy producing the phenomena, but gives inconvenience to the medium, "who during the experiment is in a state of ocular hyperalgesia or hyperaesthesia," and is prevented by suffering from displaying his special powers.

To obviate this difficulty some kind of bandage or opaque eye-glasses should be used and all the details of the protective apparatus should be made the subject of special research.

*Fourth hypothesis.*—Light interferes neither with the cheating, nor with the phenomena, nor with the medium from a physiological stand-point. The reason is a psychological one. The medium on account of his previous training is convinced that he CANNOT operate in full light. And such a suggestion (whether consciously or unconsciously made, coming from without or from the subject himself) is an obstacle to his placing himself in the conditions necessary for the experiment to succeed.

If this hypothesis be the true one, sittings might be conducted in the light, the unfavourable impression having been previously destroyed by a counter-suggestion. To achieve such a result it might be necessary to use hypnotism. In the case of Eusapia it would not be difficult to find a man in whom she would feel confidence and who would have a sufficient knowledge of hypnosis.

M. Favre added that he was inclined to believe that none of the four hypotheses represented the whole truth and that the failure of the light séances was due to all the four factors combined. Still he hoped that after the two last ones had been removed, experiments in full light would be very near succeeding "normally and constantly."

The use of hypnotism to remove the medium's objection to sitting in the light seems to me well worth trying, though I am by no means hopeful as to the results. In any case M. Favre's idea is a very ingenious one.

But is not all this insistence on "light," however natural, somewhat exaggerated? In the first place darkness *may* after all be a

necessary condition of the supposed phenomena, or at least most of them. There is nothing *à priori* improbable in this. If so, further insistence on this point becomes a mere waste of time.

Secondly, light at a sitting does not by any means afford us a guarantee that the phenomena are genuine. With Eusapia herself many things were observed to occur in the light (as stated by several of the investigators in the course of the discussion); more than this, her sésances are seldom if ever held in total darkness; and yet the controversy as to the authenticity of the "manifestations" or otherwise is still going on and I am afraid is not likely to cease soon. And how about such a "phase" of the "Physical Phenomena" as "Independent Slate-writing," which *invariably* takes place in the light, with what results the psychical researcher well knows? It is not so much light we want, as a radical change in the general conditions. I want to hold the medium, not as he or she allows me, but as I choose to; I want him or her to be searched whenever the idea enters into my mind; if an object is being "supernormally" moved, I want to ascertain exactly *how* it is moving; if levitated, I want to make a whole circuit round it with my hand, nay, a series of circuits to make sure there is nothing which supports it—not even a "ghost of a thread," anywhere; if a "materialised form" appears I want to press it tenderly to my bosom and then patiently wait until it gently fades away in that position. I want all this and much more; but if all these conditions were granted to me, or even only the most fundamental of them, I should be ready not to insist too much on light.

It should also be remembered that when insufficient, "light" is for evidential purposes as bad as—and may be worse than—total darkness. When sitting in a dark room I am able to give the whole of my attention to controlling through two senses only,—touch and hearing. And there is about a "dark" sésance a certain unpretentiousness which makes it almost sympathetic! Accounts of a "dark" sésance are not calculated to create a very favourable impression as to the medium's claims; nay, the very fact of his or her giving "dark" sésances puts people on their guard. With the "light" sittings as they are now given, the case is different. The room being *soi-disant* lighted, I am expected first to *see* what happens and then to describe what I have seen to others. In the first stage I—in most cases—merely strain my eyes and do damage to my eye-sight, broadly speaking, to no purpose; in the second I allow my imagination full play, and mislead others, if I have only

been in the slightest degree favourably impressed; and even if I have not I am likely to help in creating about the medium a favourable reputation as a "light-lover."

To return to Eusapia: a "light séance" of hers with the *curtain* is, I think, evidentially, at least, equivalent to a totally dark séance. When first introduced this curtain was supposed to serve a reasonable purpose; it would ensure for part of the room the necessary condition of darkness whilst allowing the medium to remain in full view. As a matter of fact it simply complicates matters, hampers investigation and, generally speaking, plays a part, which—with all due respect to the medium—I may be permitted to call simply disreputable!<sup>1</sup> A serious improvement is needed here also.

I note by the way that in the course of the same discussion reference was more than once made to another medium—a Pole named "Janek" (or rather Jan Guzik; *Proceedings* S.P.R., Part LII., p. 409), M. Youriévitich recommending him to the Institute's attention and remarking that his absolute "placidity" makes him very suitable for investigation (p. 577).

I therefore think it appropriate for me to state that I believe this medium to be a fraud, and this not only because he has been repeatedly exposed and because he is admitted to cheat by his most ardent admirers, but also from personal experience—not very exhaustive, it is true, but careful and sufficient. (See pp. 231-237 of my "Appendix" to my Russian translation of Mr. Podmore's *Modern Spiritualism*.) In my opinion "Janek"—unless he thoroughly amends—does not deserve the honour of a scientific investigation; and his case is instructive chiefly as showing what kind of evidence will satisfy the average Spiritualist.

<sup>1</sup>It has in particular a certain way of being thrown over the table and covering the medium's hands which may very well serve a certain purpose, only it will not be the purpose of scientific research. When its lower end is thus spread over E. P.'s hands she will still keep on moving them, at times showing one or both, at times concealing them again. And while this is going on, "phenomena" will occur now and then, and it requires a certain straining of attention to note whether *both* hands were visible simultaneously with such and such "manifestations" or not. At times a hand will also appear between the two halves of the curtain; and as the result of all this hand-moving the sitters may very easily be led to believe that they saw all the three hands at once, whilst in fact they did not. At some sittings with E. P. in St. Petersburg in the spring of 1898 I specially noticed that this was just the case; and yet at least one other sitter was found to believe and assert the contrary, until I positively assured him that he was mistaken. In the present instance, therefore, light engenders an error for which there would have been no room in the dark.

Were I now asked to sum up in one word the impression all these recent Eusapian investigations have left on me I would answer: "DISCOURAGEMENT."

The main question has *not* progressed. Results tangible and positive have, it is true, been obtained; but only in a region where there was no need for them. And even here I doubt whether there is not in the evidence a serious logical flaw. The objective reality of the occurrences has been established; but is it not open to those who will cling to the hallucination theory *quand même* to maintain that as these occurrences *may* after all have been *fraudulent*, proof of the objectivity of *genuine* phenomena is still lacking? And I confess I do not well see how such an argument could be met! So that even in this direction real progress is more doubtful than would at first sight appear. As for the *authenticity*—well, we are certainly no more advanced than, say, after the île Roubaud, nay even after the Milan experiments, which laid, seventeen years ago, the foundation-stone of Eusapia's reputation. The great bulk of the phenomena has not by any means been proved to be due to fraud unmitigated—far from it! and a few have come within measurable distance of the required standard. But *not one of them has after all been clearly shown to be authentic.*

Nor do I see good reasons for feeling very sanguine as to the final outcome of future investigations.

*P.S.*—Since writing the above I have read in the July *Journal S.P.R.* the abstract from the report by Messrs. Feilding, Baggally, and Carrington on their recent investigation at Naples. After reading it, I certainly feel in a more optimistic mood on the subject. The fact that such experts in the domain of conjuring should have been converted by what they saw to a belief in the genuineness of E.P.'s phenomena is eminently significant and satisfactory. I also heartily welcome their methods of investigation, and think the absence of imposing technical appliances more than compensated for by some of the results obtained. In view of the latter circumstance I confess I should be happy to see a similar course of action uniformly adopted in the future, even by scientific stars of the first magnitude.

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## Society for Psychical Research

INDEX TO VOL. XXIII.

(PARTS LVIII.—LIX.)

1909.

### A.

- ABBOTT, DAVID, *Behind the Scenes with Mediums*, Reference to, 310 (footnote).  
Abt Vogler. *See* Browning, Hope and Star.  
Aksakoff, Alexander, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - 312  
American Branch of the Society, Dissolution of - - - 30, 31  
Amicis, Professor de, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - 317  
Anagram, R. Hodgson's (Rats, Arts, Star), Reference to - - - 55  
d'Arsonval, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino 317, 571, 572, 581  
Australian Recollections (Piper-Hodgson Control), - - - 106-108  
Automatic Writing. *See* The Scripts of "Mrs. Forbes," "Mrs. Holland"  
and Mrs. Verrall—and the Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Piper  
and Mrs. Thompson.  
*αὐτὸς οὐρανὸς ἀκύμων*, Incident, Reference to - - - 251, 252  
*Ave Roma Immortalis*, Cross-Correspondence, Reference to - - 298, 299

### B.

- BAGGALLY, W. W., and the Hon. E. Feilding and H. Carrington,  
Report on a Series of Sittings with Eusapia  
Palladino - - - 306, 309-569  
" Individual Conclusions - - - 556  
" Notes to Séances 439, 459, 480, 501, 524, 535, 556  
" " on the Bell Incident - - - 525, 526  
" " Classification of Phenomena - - - 557

Balfour, Gerald W., on Cross-Correspondences, Reference to article by	289
Ballet, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 317
Bancroft, Miss Margaret, Piper-Hodgson references to	7, 10, 11, 13-15, 17, 56, 57
"          "          Impressions connected with Dr. Hodgson	51, 52
"          "          Sittings with Mrs. Piper, Owl's Head Series	47-61
Bayley, Dr., Piper-Hodgson references to	- - - - 50, 60, 87, 88
"          Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - - 37, 52
Bergman, Miss M., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - 99, 107
Bergson, Henri, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 317
Bottazzi, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino,	
	317, 318, 342, 399, 400, 417, 583
Branly, M., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 317, 574
Brofferio, Professor Angelo, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 312
Browning, Oscar, on a Piper-Myers Message	- - - - 240
<i>Browning, R., Hope and Star</i> , Cross-Correspondence, Reference to	252, 299, 300
Butler, Samuel, Quotation from	- - - - - 119

## C.

CARDARELLI, PROFESSOR, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino,	- - - 317
Carlo, Trance Personality of Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 517
Carrington, Hereward, and the Hon. Everard Feilding and W. W.	
Baggally,	
"          Report on Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	306, 309-569
"          Notes to Séances	358, 373, 391, 398, 416, 438, 456
	502, 523, 555
"          "          the Bell Incident	- - - - 525
Cartwright, Mrs., Trance Personality of Mrs. Thompson	- - - 258
Celery-Root, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - 41, 42
Charades, Piper-Hodgson references to	- - - - 54, 55, 87, 88
Charpentier, M., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - 317
Chiaja, Cavaliere Ercole, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - 312
Child, Professor F. J., Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - 113, 114
Cipher Records, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - 12, 109, 110
Communicators. <i>See</i> Gurney, Hodgson, Myers and Sidgwick Controls,	
and the Joseph Marble and Isaac Thompson Cases.	
Controls, Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control	- 1, 2, 30, 122, 127, 226, 248, 282
<i>See also</i> Gurney, Myers, Joseph Marble, Sidgwick and Isaac	
Thompson Controls.	
Cooper, Fenimore, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - 106, 107
Courtier, M., Report of the <i>Institut Général Psychologique</i> , on Eusapia	
Palladino	- - - - 317, 318, 331, 437, 481, 567, 570-581
Cross-Correspondences, Experiments in	- 86, 102, 137, 198, 208-210, 213-215,
	219, 239-242, 250-255, 288-303
"          Professor A. C. Pigou on,	- - - 288-303
" <i>See also</i> The Automatic Scripts of "Mrs. Forbes,"	
"          "Mrs. Holland" and Mrs. Verrall.	

Curie, Professor and Madame, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino  
317, 466, 481, 571, 572, 579, 585

## D.

*Dawn, the One-Horse.* See Verrall, Dr., Telepathic Experiments of  
Densmore. See Huldah-Episode.

Dorr, J. B., Sittings with Mrs. Piper - - 20, 21, 23, 38-47, 48, 115, 134,  
182, 187, 236, 237  
,, Old Farm Series, the, - - - - - 38-47  
du Prel, Carl, D.Ph., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - 312  
*Dwarf*, Cross-Correspondence, Reference to - - - - - 251

## E.

ELLIOTT, MISS ALICE. See Grove, Mrs. Rupert.

Ermacora, Dr., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - - - 312

## F.

FALANGA, SIGNOR, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - 399, 400, 417, 418  
Favre, M., On Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - - 585, 586  
Fechner, Theory of Memory Processes applied to the Phenomena of  
"Controls" - - - - - 119, 120  
Feilding, the Hon. Everard, and W. W. Baggally and H. Carrington.  
,, Report on a Series of Sittings with Eusapia Palladino 309-569  
,, (General)  
,, Introduction - - - - - 310-320  
,, Detailed Report - - - - - 345-554  
,, Analysis and Tables of Phenomena 328-340, 556, 557  
,, General Account of the Sittings - - - - 321-340  
,, " Conclusions- - - - - 340-344  
,, Individual Conclusions of the Investigators - 555-559  
,, Notes on Séances by E. Feilding 357, 374, 393, 395, 417,  
436, 461, 478, 503, 504, 519, 534, 566  
,, on the Bell Incident - - - - 525, 526  
,, Control, the, Question of 323, 324, 325-333, 347, 348, 357-  
361, 373, 375-377, 391-394, 396, 399-401, 416, 418-  
419, 420, 436-442, 456-460, 478-484, 486, 501, 502,  
504-507, 519-524 528, 534-537, 555, 556, 558, 566  
,, " Senses in which the word is used 324 (foot-note)  
,, Fraud, discussion of the possibility of - 306-308, 312-319,  
324, 326-328, 340, 342 (foot-note), 357, 374, 376,  
378, 383, 391, 393-399, 401, 412, 416, 437, 439-458,  
460, 461, 464, 478, 480, 481, 483, 502, 505, 521,  
522, 523, 533-535, 555, 556, 558-566, 568  
,, Hallucination, Collective, considered as an explana-  
tion of the phenomena - - - 341-344, 462, 558  
Petrovo-Solovovo, Count Perovsky, Note on the Report 589  
*See also* Levitations, Luminous Appearances and Materialisations.

Finzi, Dr., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	312
Fire-Buckets, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - -	59, 60
Flammarion, Camille, on Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	317
Fontenay, M. de, Photographs of Phenomena obtained with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	342
"Forbes, Mrs.," Automatic Script of, Reference to	- - - - -	289
,, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	125
"Forbes, Talbot," References to	- - - - -	125, 210, 289

## G.

GALEOTTI, PROFESSOR, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino		317, 399, 401, 416, 417, 418, 528, 529
Gaule, Miss Maggie, Messages from the Hodgson-Control through	-	85
Gerosa, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	312
Gibson, Mr., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	418
Gower, Dr. T. H., Piper-Hodgson reference to Experiments of	- -	84-86
"Grove, Mrs. Rupert," Sittings with Mrs. Piper	234, 238, 244, 248, 255-279	
,, Sittings with Mrs. Thompson	- - -	257-265
,, The "Joseph Marble" Series	- - -	255-279
Gurney-Control, the, Sir Oliver Lodge on,		
Through Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	138, 139, 140-162, 282
,, "Miss Rawson"	- - - - -	223-225
,, Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation		138, 140, 159, 282

## H.

HALLUCINATION, Collective, considered as an explanation of the Physical Phenomena of Eusapia Palladino	- - -	341-344, 558
Handel, S. Butler on the Influence of	- - - - -	119
Hodgson, Dr. R., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- -	314, 315, 482
,, Reports on the Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Piper, References to	19, 28, 29, 130, 131, 136, 139, 147, 148, 163-171, 233, 284	
Hodgson-Control, the (Mrs. Piper's).		
James, Professor W., Report on (1905-08)	- - -	1, 2, 30
Lodge, Sir Oliver, on,		138, 139, 148, 160, 226, 229, 236, 248-250, 282, 283
Sidgwick, Mrs. H., and Piddington, J. G., Note on the Eng- lish Series of 1906-7	- - - - -	122
Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation	4-7, 11-13, 31, 32, 33, 36-38, 48, 49, 52, 60, 61, 69, 70, 73, 76, 78-80, 100, 101, 109, 111, 115-119, 122, 123, 138-236, 237, 282, 283	
Hodgson, Miss, Information as to the Piper-Hodgson <i>Australian Recollections</i>	- - - - -	106-108
"Holland, Mrs.," Automatic Script of	- - -	137, 230-232, 235, 289
,, Cross-Correspondences with Mrs. Piper	- -	230-235
Home, D. D., References to	- - - - -	311, 320, 583 (footnote)

<i>Hope, Star and Browning</i> , Cross-Correspondence, Reference to	252, 299, 300
Huldah Densmore Episode, the (Piper-Hodgson)	- - - 20, 43, 44
Hyde Family, Piper-Hodgson references to	- - - 106, 107
Hyslop, Professor J. H., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - 18, 78, 137
Hutton, Mrs. (and Miss), Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - 536
„ Note by	- - - - - 554

## I.

“IMPERATOR” (and “Imperator” Band), Trance Personality of Mrs. Piper	3, 19, 29, 74, 78, 115, 137, 168, 175, 188, 227, 235, 248
Institut Général Psychologique (Paris), Report on Eusapia Palladino	317, 318, 437, 481, 567, 570-581

## J.

JAMES, HENRY, Jr., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - 187, 237
James, Mrs. Wm., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - 11, 21, 80, 109
James, William, Jr., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - 11
James, Professor W., <i>A Pluralistic Universe</i> , by, Reference to	- - 119
„ Report on Mrs. Piper’s Hodgson-Control	- 1, 2, 30
„ „ Discussion of points bearing on the question of Identity	4-7, 13, 16-23 25-29, 31-38, 47, 60, 61, 78-80, 97, 98, 99, 106-109, 111, 112, 113, 115-121
„ „ „ General Conclusions	- 115-121
„ „ Australian Recollections	- - 106, 107
„ „ Dramatic character of the Control	4-7, 11- 13, 31-33, 36-38, 48, 49, 52, 60, 61, 69, 70, 73, 76, 78-80, 100, 101, 109, 111, 115-119, 236, 237
„ „ Failure of attempts to obtain Tests	44, 46, 83, 86, 87, 90, 91, 92, 96, 97, 98, 107, 115, 116
„ „ Negative Value of the Hodgson- Control as a Test Case	5, 28, 29, 33, 34, 121
„ „ Realistic Nature of impression re- ceived by Sitters-	- 31-33, 37, 236
„ „ References to places, incidents, and persons known to the Control	7, 10-26, 38-114
„ „ Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- 80, 110, 111
Jan Guzik, Fraudulent Mediumship of	- - - - - 588
Jessup, Dr., Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - - 50, 54
Johnson, Miss Alice, Report on the Automatic Script of “Mrs. Holland,” References to	- - 137, 294, 298
„ „ Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - 122
„ „ The Education of the Sitter, by, Reference to	341 (footnote)
Judah, Noble, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - - 70

## K.

KENDALL, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - -	107
"King, John," Trance Personality of Eusapia Palladino	-	324 (footnote)

## L.

<i>Latin Message</i> , Mr. Piddington's, References to	- - -	251-253, 299
Leaf, Dr. Walter, Report on the Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Piper,		
Reference to	- - - - -	130
Levitations, Complete Levitations of the Table in the presence of		
Eusapia Palladino	329, 331, 332, 347, 352, 353, 356, 357, 364, 365, 384,	
	386, 388, 390, 392, 394, 395, 400, 401, 404, 407, 411,	
	412, 418, 420, 431, 432, 434, 435, 438, 439, 487, 508,	
	509-511, 515, 516, 521, 523, 524, 528, 530, 532, 557,	
	563, 571, 572, 579	
Lodge, Professor Alfred, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	149
Lodge, Miss E. C., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	155
Lodge, Lady, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - -	154, 227, 234, 238, 248, 270
,, Sittings with Mrs. Thompson	- - -	200, 205-207
Lodge, Sir Oliver, Report on Eusapia Palladino (the Roubaud Series)		
		307, 308, 314, 315, 316, 331
,, Report on some Trance Communications received		
	chiefly through Mrs. Piper	- 127-285
,, Anticipatory Reply to Critics	- - -	128
,, Explanatory and Historical	- - -	130
,, Recognition of a Photograph, Experiment		
	in - - - - -	275
,, Remarks on the Piper controls	- - -	137
,, Remarks on Relics	- - -	196
,, Supplementary Remarks	- - -	280
,,     ,, Phinuit	- - -	280
,,     ,, Concluding observations	- - -	281
,, The Controls :		
,,     The Gurney Control (Mrs. Piper)		140-162
,,     ,,     ,, ("Miss Rawson")		219-226
,,     The "Joseph Marble" Series (Mrs.		
	Thompson and Mrs. Piper)	- 255-278
,,     The Myers and Hodgson Controls		
	(Mrs. Piper)	- 226-255
,,     ,,     ,, ("Miss Rawson")		219-226
,,     ,,     ,, (Mrs. Thompson)		198-219
,,     The Isaac Thompson Case (Mrs. Piper)		162-198
Lombroso, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - -	312
Luminous Appearances seen at Séances with Eusapia Palladino		
	330, 339, 340, 442, 455, 464, 474, 475, 479, 480, 482, 557, 573, 574	
Lyman, Mrs., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	14, 15
,, On the Ring Incident,	- - - - -	17

## M.

M., Miss, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	164
M., Mrs., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	52, 110, 112-114
“Marble, Joseph,” A Series of Communications from	- - -	255-279
”          Communications through Mrs. Piper	- - -	264-279
”          ”          ”          Mrs. Thompson	- - -	255-264
”          Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation		263, 264, 275, 283
”          Experiment on recognition of a Photograph	- - -	275
Materialisations seen in the presence of Eusapia Palladino	329, 330, 337,	
	338, 361, 420, 430-438, 440-442, 445-454, 456,	
	460, 462-464, 470, 472-474, 476-483, 485, 495,	
	499, 500, 537, 557, 573, 583	
Meeson, Albert, Shorthand reports of Sittings with Eusapia Palladino		321
”          Position of, in regard to the Experiments,	- - -	559-560
Meetings of the Society, General	- - - - -	1, 305
Melbourne, <i>Latrobe Street</i> , Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - -	106
Miles, Miss Clarissa, Telepathic Experiments of, reference to		292, 293, 295
Morelli, Signor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - -	399, 400, 417, 418
Morselli, Professor Enrico, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino,		316, 317, 331
Moses, Stainton, References to the Experiences of	- - - - -	74
”          The “Imperator Band”	- - - - -	137, 235, 236
Muirhead, Professor, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	281
<i>Multum in Parvo</i> , Cross-Correspondence, Reference to	- - -	239, 241, 242
Munroe, Jack, Reference to	- - - - -	107
Myers, Ernest, Thompson-Myers reference to	- - - - -	203
Myers, F. W. H., Letter referring to the “Joseph Marble” Series	- - -	264
”          Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	314
Myers-Control, the		
Communications through “Mrs. Holland”	- - - - -	215
”          ”          Mrs. Piper	- - -	19, 138, 226-255
”          ”          “Miss Rawson”	- - -	219-226
”          ”          Mrs. Thompson	- - -	198-219
”          ”          Mrs. Verrall	-213, 214, 234, 288, 289	
Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation		138, 198, 199, 201-205, 218, 219, 226, 282, 283
Lodge, Sir Oliver, on	- - - - -	198-255

## N.

NELLY-CONTROL, the (Mrs. Thompson)	199 201, 205-208, 211-213, 217, 256-262
Newbold, Professor W., Report on the Trance Phenomena of Mrs.	
Piper, Reference to	- - - - - 137
”          ”          Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - - 23, 61
Nigger-Talk incident, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - - 18, 96

## O.

OBJECTS brought to Sittings to assist Communications	9, 82, 89, 98, 114, 143, 189, 190, 237, 257, 266
„ Remarks on Relics, by Sir Oliver Lodge	- - - - 196
Ochorowicz, Dr., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - 313, 314
„ „ Miss S. Tomczyk	- - - 577, 578
Old Farm Series, Piper-Hodgson Communications to G. B. Dorr	- 38-47
Owl's Head Series, Piper-Hodgson Communications to Miss M. Bancroft	47-61

## P.

P., T., Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - - 37
Palladino, Eusapia, Cambridge Series of Experiments with	307, 315, 316, 326, 334
„ Historical account of	- - - - 311-318
„ Report on the Naples Experiments of 1908, by the Hon. E. Feilding, W. W. Baggally and H. Carrington	- - - - 309-569
„ Report of the <i>Institut Général Psychologique</i> , Review of, by Count Perovsky-Petrovo Solovovo	570-589
„ Sidgwick, Mrs., Note on,	- - - - 306-308
<i>See also</i> Levitations, Luminous Phenomena and Materialisations, and Feilding, the Hon. Everard.	
Pausies, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - 44
Pansini, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - 317
Passwords, given as Tests (Piper-Hodgson Control)	54, 70, 86, 87, 89, 94, 115, 116, 250
Pecuniary Messages, the (Piper-Hodgson Communications)	- - 26
“Pelham, George” (G. P.), Control (Mrs. Piper), Chief references to	9, 38, 137, 164, 165
„ „ Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation	38
Petrovo-Solovovo, Count Perovsky.	
„ Review of M. Courtier's Report on the	- - 570-89
„ Paris Experiments with Eusapia Palladino	318 (footnote), 319, 570-589
„ „ Note on the S.P.R. Experiments of 1908	- 589
“Phinuit,” Trance Personality of Mrs. Piper	133, 136-140, 143, 148, 149, 150-158, 160-164, 233, 234, 280, 281
„ Sir Oliver Lodge on	- - - - 161-163, 280, 281
Photographs, Experiment in the recognition of, by a Control	- - 275
Physical Phenomena. <i>See</i> Feilding, Hon. E., Report on Sittings with Eusapia Palladino.	
„ Miscellaneous,	- - 311, 320, 577, 578, 583
<i>See also</i> Levitations, Luminous Appearances and Materialisations.	
Piddington, J. G., Report on The Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Piper	122, 137, 172, 299, 300
„ and Sidgwick, Mrs. H., Note on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control in England, 1906-7	- - 122

Pigou, Professor A. C., <i>Psychical Research and Survival after Bodily</i>	
<i>Death</i> - - - - -	286
<i>on Cross-Correspondences,</i> - - - - -	288-303
Piper, Mrs., <i>Trance Phenomena of.</i>	
<i>Cross-Correspondences (with Mrs. Verrall and others)</i>	
86, 102, 137, 198, 239, 241, 242, 250-255,	288-303
James, Prof. W., <i>Report on the Hodgson-Control</i> -	1, 2, 30
<i>Letter from,</i> - - - - -	107
Lodge, Sir Oliver, <i>Report on Some Trance Communica-</i>	
<i>tions chiefly through</i> - - - - -	127-286
Pigou, Professor A. C., <i>on</i> - - - - -	288-303
Sidgwick, Mrs. H., and J. G. Piddington, <i>Note on the</i>	
<i>Piper-Hodgson Control</i> - - - - -	122
Plotinus, <i>References to,</i> - - - - -	251
Podmore, F., <i>On Eusapia Palladino, Reference to</i> - -	313 (footnote)
<i>On the Trance Phenomena of Mrs. Piper</i> - - -	137
Pope, Miss Theodate, <i>Sittings with Mrs. Piper</i> - -	7-10, 51, 52, 110, 111
<i>Predictions. See Unfulfilled Communications.</i>	
"Prudens," <i>Trance Personality of Mrs. Piper</i> - - -	81, 235
<i>Psychical Research and Survival after Bodily Death, Professor A. C.</i>	
<i>Pigou on</i> - - - - -	286
<i>Psychometry, in connection with the Phenomena of Controls</i>	98, 120, 121, 196
<i>See also Objects brought to Sittings.</i>	
Putman, Dr. J., <i>Sittings with Mrs. Piper</i> - - - - -	99
Putnam Family, <i>Piper-Hodgson references to</i> - - -	91, 92, 97, 116
Putnam, Miss Anne, <i>Sittings with Mrs. Piper</i> - - -	98, 99, 109, 114
Q.	
"Q," <i>Piper-Hodgson references to</i> - - - - -	10, 12, 23, 106, 107, 108
R.	
RAMSDEN, MISS HERMIONE, <i>Telepathic Experiments of, Reference to</i>	292, 293, 295
"Rawson, Miss," <i>Messages through,</i>	
<i>The Gurney and Myers Controls of</i> - - -	212, 214, 219-26
"    " <i>Cross-Correspondence (with Mrs. Thompson)</i>	214, 215, 223-25
"Rector," <i>Trance Personality of Mrs. Piper</i>	3, 7-10, 31, 32, 52, 67, 81, 89,
96, 125, 129, 133, 134, 138, 139, 160, 168, 175, 189, 191, 193,	
196, 227, 232, 234, 235, 236, 238, 248, 267, 268, 270, 280, 281	
Reichmann, Dr., <i>Sittings with Eusapia Palladino</i> - - -	314, 315
<i>Review</i> - - - - -	570
Richet, Professor Ch., <i>Sittings with Eusapia Palladino</i>	307, 312, 313, 314, 315, 317
<i>Riding Accident, Piper-Hodgson reference to</i> - - -	104-106, 107
<i>Ring Incident, Piper-Hodgson references to</i> - - -	7, 13, 90

Robbins, Miss, Sitting with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	114
Roberts, Charley, Piper-Hodgson reference to	- - - - -	106, 107
Rochas, Colonel de, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	437
Ryan, James, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	484, 528, 529
„ Note on the Bell Incident	- - - - -	525

## S.

<i>St. Paul</i> , Cross-Correspondence, Reference to	- - - - -	230-232, 235
“Sandford, Mrs. Kate,” Communications from. See The “Joseph Marble” Series.		
Santi, Signor de, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	399, 400, 417, 418, 437	
Scarpa, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	317
Schiaparelli, Professor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	312
Sealed Envelopes, Hodgson-Piper references to Non-existent	86, 87, 115, 229, 230, 246	
Sidgwick, Mrs. H., Introductory Note to the Report on Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	306
„ Sittings with Eusapia	- - - - -	314
„ and Piddington, J. G., Note on Mrs. Piper’s Hodgson-Control of 1906-07	- - - - -	122
Sidgwick, Professor H., Piper-Hodgson references to past incident concerning	- - - - -	111
„ Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	314
Sidgwick-Control (Mrs. Piper’s), Negative Character of	- - - - -	126
„ (“Miss Rawson’s”)-	- - - - -	220, 221
Soule, Mrs., Messages from the Hodgson-Control through	- - - - -	86
<i>Star</i> . See Hope, Star and Browning.		
Stevens, Charles E. Communications from (Mrs. Piper)	- - - - -	191-193, 196
Sudeley, Lord, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	484
Survival after Bodily Death, Psychical Research and, by Professor A. C. Pigou	- - - - -	286

## T.

TAMBURINI, PROFESSOR, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	- - - - -	312
Tavern Club, Piper-Hodgson references to	- - - - -	46, 115
Test Questions, Failure of attempts to obtain answers to	44, 46, 68, 69, 83, 86, 87, 90-92, 96, 98, 107, 115, 116, 122-126	
	144, 145, 172, 173, 228, 229, 234, 250, 260, 268, 288	
Thaw, Mrs. Blair, Note on the Huldah-Episode	- - - - -	25
Thompson, Edwin, Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	163, 175-196
Thompson, Mr. and Mrs. Isaac C. —		
Earlier Sittings with Mrs. Piper	- - - - -	154, 155, 158
The Isaac Thompson Case (Mrs. Piper)-	- - - - -	162-198
Dramatic Characteristics of the Impersonation	170, 171, 181, 283	



## Y.

Y., Miss, Sitting with Eusapia Palladino - - - - -	484, 502
"    "    Report on the examination of the Medium - - -	505
Youriévitch, S., Sittings with Eusapia Palladino	317, 570, 579, 580, 585, 588

## Z.

ZEIVORN, Attempted Pass-word - - - - -	86, 94, 116
<i>Zend-Avesta.</i> See Fechner.	
Zingaropoli, Signor, Sittings with Eusapia Palladino - - - -	536



# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## Society for Psychical Research.

PART LVIII. VOL. XXIII.

June, 1909.

PRICE 6s. net.

### CONTENTS.

	PAGE
GENERAL MEETING,	1
I. Report on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control. By PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES.	
Part I., . . . . .	2
Part II., . . . . .	30
II. Note on Mrs. Piper's Hodgson-Control in England in 1906-7. By MRS. H. SIDGWICK and J. G. PIDDINGTON,	122
III. Report on some Trance Communications received chiefly through Mrs. Piper. By SIR OLIVER LODGE.	
Table of Contents, . . . . .	127
Introduction, . . . . .	128
Chapter I. Explanatory and Historical, . . . . .	130
" II. The Gurney Control, . . . . .	140
" III. The Isaac Thompson Case, . . . . .	162
" IV. The Myers Control, . . . . .	198
" V. Messages obtained through Miss Rawson, . . . . .	219
" VI. Messages from the Myers and Hodgson Controls of Mrs. Piper, Autumn, 1906. . . . .	226
" VII. The Myers and Hodgson Controls of Mrs. Piper, Spring, 1907, . . . . .	248
" VIII. The Joseph Marble Series, . . . . .	255
" IX. Supplementary Remarks, . . . . .	280
IV. Psychical Research and Survival after Bodily Death. By PROFESSOR A. C. PIGOU,	286

*The responsibility for both the facts and the reasonings in papers published in the Proceedings rests entirely with their authors.*

PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY BY  
ROBERT MACLEHOSE & COMPANY LIMITED,  
UNIVERSITY PRESS, GLASGOW.

*Agents for the sale of publications:*

LONDON: FRANCIS EDWARDS, 23 HIGH STREET, MARYLEBONE, W.

GLASGOW: JAMES MACLEHOSE & SONS, 61 ST. VINCENT STREET.

AMERICA: THE W. B. CLARKE CO., 26-28 TREMONT STREET, BOSTON, MASS.

*All rights reserved.*

# The Society for Psychical Research.

## OFFICERS AND COUNCIL FOR 1909.

### PRESIDENT.

MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, Litt.D.

### VICE-PRESIDENTS.

RT. HON. A. J. BALFOUR, M.P., F.R.S.	PROFESSOR J. H. HYSLOP, Ph.D.
RT. HON. G. W. BALFOUR.	PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES.
PROFESSOR W. F. BARRETT, F.R.S.	SIR OLIVER LODGE, D.Sc., LL.D., F.R.S.
SIR WILLIAM CROOKES, F.R.S.	LORD RAYLEIGH, P.R.S.
GEORGE B. DORR.	THE RT. REV. THE BISHOP OF RIPON.

### COUNCIL.

W. W. BAGGALLY.	PROFESSOR GILBERT MURRAY, LL.D.
THE RIGHT HON. GERALD W. BALFOUR.	J. G. PIDDINGTON.
PROFESSOR W. F. BARRETT, F.R.S.	ST. GEORGE LANE FOX PITT.
ERNEST N. BENNETT, M.P.	LORD RAYLEIGH, P.R.S.
J. MILNE BRAMWELL, M.B.	F. C. S. SCHILLER, D.Sc.
THE EARL OF CRAWFORD AND BALCARRES, K.T., F.R.S.	SYDNEY C. SCOTT.
G. LOWES DICKINSON.	A. F. SHAND.
THE HON. EVERARD FEILDING.	H. ARTHUR SMITH.
THE REV. A. T. FRYER.	LIEUT.-COL. G. L. LE M. TAYLOR.
SIR LAWRENCE J. JONES, Bart.	SIR J. J. THOMSON, F.R.S.
SIR OLIVER LODGE, F.R.S.	CHARLES LLOYD TUCKEY, M.D.
W. M'DOUGALL, M.Sc., M.B.	MRS. A. W. VERRALL.
	V. J. WOOLLEY.

### FORMER PRESIDENTS.

PROFESSOR HENRY SIDGWICK,	- - - - -	1882-1884.
PROFESSOR BALFOUR STEWART, F.R.S.,	- - - - -	1885-1887.
PROFESSOR HENRY SIDGWICK,	- - - - -	1888-1892.
THE RIGHT HON. A. J. BALFOUR, M.P., F.R.S.,	- - - - -	1893.
PROFESSOR WILLIAM JAMES,	- - - - -	1894-1895.
SIR WILLIAM CROOKES, F.R.S.,	- - - - -	1896-1899.
FREDERIC W. H. MYERS,	- - - - -	1900.
SIR OLIVER LODGE, F.R.S.,	- - - - -	1901-1903.
PROFESSOR W. F. BARRETT, F.R.S.,	- - - - -	1904.
PROFESSOR CHARLES RICHEL,	- - - - -	1905.
THE RIGHT HON GERALD W. BALFOUR,	- - - - -	1906-1907.
MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK,	- - - - -	1908.

## NOTICE.

ANY well-attested information, bearing on the various subjects which are being investigated by the Society, will be gratefully received, whether from Members, or persons intending to join the Society, or from others. Communications to be addressed to the Secretary, Society for Psychical Research, 20 Hanover Square, London, W.

The Rooms of the Society, at 20 Hanover Square, London, W., are open every week-day from 11 a.m. to 5 p.m., except on Saturday, when they close at 1.30 p.m.

# Proceedings of The Society for Psychological Research.

## PRINCIPAL CONTENTS OF PARTS LIII.-LVII.

[A Contents Sheet of the whole Series can be obtained on application to the Secretary, Society for Psychological Research, 20 Hanover Square, London, W.]

	PAGE
PART LIII.—February, 1907. Price 3s. net.	
I. Richard Hodgson: In Memoriam (with Portrait): By MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, J. G. PIDDINGTON, and M. A. DE WOLFE HOWE, . . .	356
II. Presidential Address. By THE RIGHT HON. GERALD W. BALFOUR, . . .	373
SUPPLEMENT.	
I. Mr. Petrovo-Solovovo on Spiritism. By WALTER LEAF, Litt.D., . . .	397
II. The Case of Sally Beauchamp. By W. M'DOUGALL, M.Sc., M.B., . . .	410
III. <i>Reviews</i> : . . .	
"Henry Sidgwick: a Memoir. By A. S. and E. M. S." By FRANK PODMORE, . . .	432
Professor J. H. Hyslop's "Borderland of Psychological Research," etc. By HERWARD CARRINGTON, . . .	451
Professor Jastrow's "The Subconscious." By FRANK PODMORE, . . .	455
APPENDIX TO PART LIII.—March, 1907. Price 1s. net.	
Officers and Council for 1907, and List of Members and Associates, . . .	461
PART LIIII. (Vol. XX.)—October, 1906. Price 10s. net.	
On a Series of Automatic Writings. By MRS. A. W. VERRALL, . . .	1
PART I. General Description of the Script.	
Chapter I. Introductory, . . . . .	6
" II. Form and Style of the Script, . . . . .	18
" III. Other General Characteristics, . . . . .	47
" IV. Varieties of Dramatic Form Assumed, . . . . .	67
" V. Comments in the Script on the Phenomena, . . . . .	84
" VI. Unverifiable Statements and Allusions, . . . . .	105
PART II. Verifiable Matter contained in the Script.	
Chapter VII. Reminiscences and Connexion with Dreams, etc., . . . . .	133
" VIII. Experiments in Conveying Information Telepathically to the Script, . . . . .	156
" IX. Spontaneous References to Living Acquaintances, . . . . .	177
" X. References to other "Sensitives;" Cross-Correspondences, . . . . .	205
" XI. Cross-Correspondences—Continued, . . . . .	219
" XII. Miscellaneous References to Past Events, . . . . .	276
" XIII. Miscellaneous References to Future Events, . . . . .	319
Illustrative Appendix, . . . . .	340
PART LIV. (Vol. XXI.)—October, 1907. Price 3s. net.	
I. The Appreciation of Time by Somnambules. By T. W. MITCHELL, M.D., . . . . .	2
II. Experiments in Thought-transference. By C. MILES and H. RAMSDEN, . . . . .	60
III. Report on some Recent Sittings for Physical Phenomena in America. By ALICE JOHNSON, . . . . .	94
SUPPLEMENT.	
I. Vis-Knut. By WALTER LEAF, Litt.D., . . . . .	136
II. <i>Reviews</i> : . . . . .	
Dr. C. Lloyd Tuckey's "Treatment by Hypnotism and Suggestion." By FRANK PODMORE, . . . . .	149
Dr. August Forel's "Hypnotism or Suggestion and Psychotherapy," and Dr. T. S. Clouston's "The Hygiene of Mind." By C. L. TUCKEY, M.D., . . . . .	156
Miss Mary Hamilton's "Incubation." By the REV. M. A. BAYFIELD, . . . . .	162

# Proceedings of the Society.—Continued.

PAGE

PART LV.—June, 1908. Price 5s. net.

On the Automatic Writing of Mrs. Holland. By ALICE JOHNSON.

	TABLE OF CONTENTS, . . . . .	166
Chapter I.	Introduction, . . . . .	170
"    II.	First Period: September, 1903, to January, 1904, . . . . .	176
"    III.	First Cross-Correspondence with Mrs. Verrall, . . . . .	219
"    IV.	January to August, 1905, . . . . .	240
"    V.	Fifth Period: October, 1905, to February, 1906, . . . . .	265
"    VI.	Sixth Period: February to April, 1906, . . . . .	290
"    VII.	The Theory of Cross-Correspondences, . . . . .	369

SUPPLEMENT.

*Review:*

Mr. Hereward Carrington's "Physical Phenomena of Spiritualism." By COUNT PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO, . . . . .	392
---	-----

PART LVI.—February, 1909. Price 3s. net.

I. The Alleged Miraculous Hailstones of Remiremont. By M. SAGE, . . . . .	405
II. The Hallucination Theory as applied to Certain Cases of Physical Phenomena. By COUNT PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO, . . . . .	436
III. The Education of the Sitter. By ALICE JOHNSON, . . . . .	483
Note on Miss Johnson's Paper. By COUNT PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO, . . . . .	512

SUPPLEMENT.

*Reviews:*

Professor Morselli's "Psicologia e 'Spiritismo': Impressioni e note critiche sui fenomeni medianici di Ensapia Paladino." By MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, . . . . .	516
Mr. F. Podmore's "Naturalisation of the Supernatural." By COUNT PEROVSKY-PETROVO-SOLOVOVO, . . . . .	525
Officers and Council for 1909, . . . . .	533
List of Members and Associates, . . . . .	534
Index to Vol. XXI, . . . . .	572

PART LVII. (Vol. XXII.)—October, 1908. Price 10s. net.

I. Presidential Address. By MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, . . . . .	1
II. A Series of Concordant Automatisms. By J. G. PIDDINGTON, . . . . .	19
III. An Incident in Mrs. Piper's Trance. By MRS. HENRY SIDGWICK, . . . . .	417

Bound Copies of Volumes I.-XXII. of the Society's *Proceedings*, or any Part separately, can be obtained through any Bookseller, from MR. FRANCIS EDWARDS, 83 High Street, Marylebone, London, W., as above.

Members and Associates can obtain bound copies of volumes, or separate Parts, at half-price, as below, on application to the Secretary, Society for Psychical Research, 20 Hanover Square, London, W. Or, in America, to THE W. B. CLARKE Co., 26-28 Tremont Street, Boston, Mass.

<table style="width: 100%; border-collapse: collapse;"> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">Vol. I. (Parts I.-IV.) pp. 336. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">Vol. XII. (Pts. xxx.-xxxI.) pp. 391. 4s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" II. ( " V.-VII.) pp. 340. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XIII. ( " ,xxxII.-xxxIII.) pp. 653. 6s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" III. ( " VIII.-IX.) pp. 500. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XIV. ( " ,xxxIV.-xxxv.) pp. 436. 5s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" IV. ( " X.-XI.) pp. 605. 4s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XV. ( " , xxxVI.-XL.) pp. 522. 6s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" V. ( " XII.-XIV.) pp. 606. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XVI. (Part XL.) pp. 650. 6s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" VI. ( " XV.-XVII.) pp. 707. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XVII. (Parts XLII.-XLV.) pp. 468. 6s. 3d.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" VII. ( " XVIII.-XX.) pp. 442. 4s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XVIII. ( " , XLVI.-XLIX.) pp. 548. 7s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" VIII. ( " XXI.-XXIII.) pp. 647. 5s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XIX. ( " L.-LII.) pp. 508. 6s. 6d.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" IX. ( " XXIV.-XXV.) pp. 407. 4s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XX. (Part LIII.) pp. 444. 6s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" X. (Part XXVI.) pp. 466. 4s.</td> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XXI. (Pts. LIV.-LVI.) pp. 584. 6s.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding-right: 1em;">" XI. (Pts. xxvII.-xxix.) pp. 637. 5s.</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>	Vol. I. (Parts I.-IV.) pp. 336. 5s.	Vol. XII. (Pts. xxx.-xxxI.) pp. 391. 4s.	" II. ( " V.-VII.) pp. 340. 5s.	" XIII. ( " ,xxxII.-xxxIII.) pp. 653. 6s.	" III. ( " VIII.-IX.) pp. 500. 5s.	" XIV. ( " ,xxxIV.-xxxv.) pp. 436. 5s.	" IV. ( " X.-XI.) pp. 605. 4s.	" XV. ( " , xxxVI.-XL.) pp. 522. 6s.	" V. ( " XII.-XIV.) pp. 606. 5s.	" XVI. (Part XL.) pp. 650. 6s.	" VI. ( " XV.-XVII.) pp. 707. 5s.	" XVII. (Parts XLII.-XLV.) pp. 468. 6s. 3d.	" VII. ( " XVIII.-XX.) pp. 442. 4s.	" XVIII. ( " , XLVI.-XLIX.) pp. 548. 7s.	" VIII. ( " XXI.-XXIII.) pp. 647. 5s.	" XIX. ( " L.-LII.) pp. 508. 6s. 6d.	" IX. ( " XXIV.-XXV.) pp. 407. 4s.	" XX. (Part LIII.) pp. 444. 6s.	" X. (Part XXVI.) pp. 466. 4s.	" XXI. (Pts. LIV.-LVI.) pp. 584. 6s.	" XI. (Pts. xxvII.-xxix.) pp. 637. 5s.		<p style="text-align: center;">Vol. XXII. (Part LVII.) pp. 445. 6s.</p>
Vol. I. (Parts I.-IV.) pp. 336. 5s.	Vol. XII. (Pts. xxx.-xxxI.) pp. 391. 4s.																						
" II. ( " V.-VII.) pp. 340. 5s.	" XIII. ( " ,xxxII.-xxxIII.) pp. 653. 6s.																						
" III. ( " VIII.-IX.) pp. 500. 5s.	" XIV. ( " ,xxxIV.-xxxv.) pp. 436. 5s.																						
" IV. ( " X.-XI.) pp. 605. 4s.	" XV. ( " , xxxVI.-XL.) pp. 522. 6s.																						
" V. ( " XII.-XIV.) pp. 606. 5s.	" XVI. (Part XL.) pp. 650. 6s.																						
" VI. ( " XV.-XVII.) pp. 707. 5s.	" XVII. (Parts XLII.-XLV.) pp. 468. 6s. 3d.																						
" VII. ( " XVIII.-XX.) pp. 442. 4s.	" XVIII. ( " , XLVI.-XLIX.) pp. 548. 7s.																						
" VIII. ( " XXI.-XXIII.) pp. 647. 5s.	" XIX. ( " L.-LII.) pp. 508. 6s. 6d.																						
" IX. ( " XXIV.-XXV.) pp. 407. 4s.	" XX. (Part LIII.) pp. 444. 6s.																						
" X. (Part XXVI.) pp. 466. 4s.	" XXI. (Pts. LIV.-LVI.) pp. 584. 6s.																						
" XI. (Pts. xxvII.-xxix.) pp. 637. 5s.																							

Cloth-lettered Covers for binding most of the Volumes, price 1s. each.

THE SOCIETY ALSO ISSUES A MONTHLY JOURNAL FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION AMONG MEMBERS AND ASSOCIATES ONLY.

20.5.09.